



火星引力

纵横中文网

Heavenly Star - Chapter 1

Chapter 1: Ye Wuchen

“Wake up, you have slept for far too long... wake up.....” An insubstantial voice drifted toward him over the boundless sea of consciousness.

“Who’s that? Who’s calling me?”

He finally opened his eyes, but all he could see was the dark, unmoving world that surrounded him.

“Night?”

Suddenly, his head split open in pain. He clutched it between his hands and shook. Then, he began to look around him.

His eyes were confused, but they recovered quickly and pierced the darkness like a sharpened blade. With his vision returned to him, he was then able to assess his surroundings. He was a slender youth with morbidly pale skin, either seventeen or eighteen years old, and dressed in snow-white clothes. His face was pale and handsome, yet very feminine. His dark black hair hung over his thin shoulders in a natural way, and even under the curtain of darkness, it occasionally gave a faint shimmer with a dark kind of luster. He had slender fingers and thin wrists that looked normal but were weak in reality. His appearance was certainly the type to be looked down upon by others and especially by those of Tianchen Continent, since they valued strength above all else.

“Where am I?”

He had no idea how long he had slept, but his body was as stiff as stone. With great effort, he managed to stand up. To the average person, his surroundings would appear to be dark. To him, this setting was as bright as day. He was in a small, thatched hut. The crisp, fresh air was filled with the flavor of straw. He

frowned slightly when the voice of an elderly man drifted into his ears, and pushed his sore body up, and left the hut with stiff steps.

It was a somber night. There was no moon, and there were no stars. An old man was sitting on the ground under the curtain of darkness, surrounded by seven or eight children. Their eyes were fixed on the old man, captivated by the fables he had told countless times before.

“The Devil Kingdom’s attack brought calamity and disaster to the entire continent, and threw its people into an abyss of abject misery. The four countries which had historically coveted each other’s lands were forced to unite and fight the Devil Kingdom’s invasion. However, how could mere humans obtain victory over such strong residents of Hell? Just as the continent was about to be driven off the edge of a cliff, humanity had no other choice but to beg the Godly Kingdom, and at the very last moment, the Godly Kingdom dispatched its saviours. They were the only two daughters of the God. One of them was snow-white from head to toe. Her hair, her clothes, her huge pair of wings were all white. She was called the [White-Winged Angel]. Her sister was all black. Black hair, black eyes. Even her black wings looked like those of a Demon, and so she was called the [Black-Winged Angel].”

“Using their strong powers, the two angels spent a month driving away the demons. Eventually they fought their final battle with the Dreadlord of the Devil Kingdoms in the northern part of the mainland. Although he was only one of the Dreadlords of the Devil Kingdom’s Empire, he was very powerful and it was he who brought his fellow countrymen from the Devil Kingdom’s lands to invade the continent. The battle lasted for three days and three nights, but no one knows who was victorious. All we know is the demons had been driven away, and the Dreadlord and two angels vanished. To this day, no one knows where they went. Some say they perished together, while others believe that the two saviors killed the Dreadlord before returning to the God Kingdom. The truth remains a mysterious riddle, but since the demons never returned, the two angels who saved the continent are now forever remembered as saviours by humans from one generation to the next.”

The old man stopped there and seemed to glance in his direction. The teenager’s heart suddenly began to throb. Even though he saw a mild, old man

telling a story, for just a moment, he could see a set of cold eyes that were like lighting in the surrounding darkness.

“Grandpa Chu, the angels from the God Kingdom, so they must have been very beautiful right?” One of the children asked with curiosity. His question perked the others’ curiosities as well, and their eyes focused on the old man.

“They might be, but no one could get a clear view of what they looked like. Humans don’t have the honor to see what angels look like.” The old man spoke with a smile.

The children showed their disappointed faces. Then, the old man smiled. “My children, I will stop here today, so you can all go now. I will let you all know when your brother Da Niu returns.”

Those kids left so quickly, they did not even bid the old man goodbye. The old man stood up and walked towards the teenager with a cane in his hand. His steps were strong and steady, without any sign of weakness at all. And so the cane seemed to be merely a prop for him.

“You woke up.” The old man exclaimed in an aged, peaceful voice, and looked him up and down.

The teenager nodded and then asked, “Where am I?”

The old man narrowed his eyes, and for a moment did not answer the teen’s question. Eventually he responded peacefully. “I saved your life when you were seven or eight years old from a ravine in the west. You remained unconscious even as I used almost every conceivable method to help you recover. You’ve been unconscious for ten whole years. You neither ate nor drank, yet there was no sign of your vitality waning away. I was surprised to see that you were even able to grow taller during that time! I’ve seen a lot during my lifetime, but I have been completely amazed by you over these past ten years. Can you tell me your name and your story?”

“ten years?!”

The teenager was shocked, but calmed down very quickly. He tried to remember everything, suppressing the waves of emotion that threatened to overwhelm him.

“What is my name? Who am I.....”

“.....born in Hua Xia... lived in Jinghua..... Jinghua is the capital city of Hua Xia..... My father is..... mother is..... I am.....”

Fragments of past memories trickled by, but he failed to remember everything. He could only recall the country he was from and everything about it. He could also remember everything he had learned, but he could not name any one related to himself.

Could it be selective amnesia? He felt his headache worsen from the surrounding chaos. In response he covered his face with his hands until he was able to come to terms with his mind.

Why did I lose my memory? What did I do before losing it?

After a long silence, he sighed and dropped his arms. His soulless eyes looked into the sky. Perhaps only god could give him an answer.

The old man looked at him pensively.

A soft breeze brushed by and brought with it a refreshing coolness. It lifted into the air a single withered leaf, which dropped slowly back towards the ground. Subconsciously, the teenager reached out, and pinched the leaf between two fingers. He looked out again into the cloudy sky with no moon or stars. The old man blinked in confusion at what he was doing.

To have no memories is to have no past. The mind is fated to wander aimlessly like falling leaves in attempt to find its way back. The teenager sighed, brushed the leaf away, and proclaimed loudly, “I am Ye Wuchen!”

The old man smiled. “Is that your real name?”

Ye Wuchen showed a slight grin. “I am Ye Wuchen... at least until I get my memories back.”

“I see. It’s a real pity. But, you are absolutely not an ordinary teenager so you should be able to retrieve your memories very soon.” The old man said.

Judging from his reactions, the old man had been able to surmise that the teenager had lost his memory. In addition there was no trace of the teenager’s past memory. Had it been twelve years ago, the old man would have spared no

expense in exploring everything about the mysterious teenager. But he was old now and had been trapped there for decades, and so he was tired.

“What should I call you?” Ye Wuchen looked at the old man.

“What should you call me? For an old man like myself, it’s almost difficult to remember my name. If you don’t mind, you can just call me grandpa Chu like the other children do, or just call me old man” he said with a smile.

Ye Wuchen thought the old man just was not willing to tell him his name, so he said, “Alright, grandpa Chu, I will certainly pay you back for saving my life.”

The old man shook his head and sat next to Ye Wuchen on the grass. He said to him, “You have only slept since I saved your life. It isn’t a big deal. If you were an ordinary teenager, you would have died many times during the past ten years.”

Ye Wuchen also sat. Even though his body was still stiff, he could at least move with some freedom.

“No matter what, I still owe you. Grandpa Chu, where are we now? How far is it from Jinghua?”

“Jinghua? Where is it?” The old man turned to him, confused.

Ye Wuchen frowned slightly and said. “Jinghua city is the capital city of Hua Xia. Isn’t this Hua Xia?”

Despite the confusion, the language they were speaking was definitely that of Hua Xia.

The old man shook his head. “I have never heard of a country named Hua Xia. I walked to almost every corner of the continent when I was younger, and I’ve never heard of the name. When someone loses his memory, some of the fragments that resurface may be imagined. So maybe everything that you’ve remembered isn’t real.”

“Really?”

Ye Wuchen closed his eyes and thought about what the old man said. He asked. “What on earth is this place called then?”

“The world is divided into five continents and five oceans. The continent we humans live on is named Tianchen. Beyond it lies Tianchen Ocean. There are four

countries on Tianchen named Dafeng, Tianlong, Kuishui, and Canglan. Each occupies their own corner of the continent. Dafeng is the most powerful of the four. Only by combining their strength can the remaining three countries hope to compete with Dafeng's strength. Their alliance struck a balance against Dafeng, and it has maintained the peace and stability that exists today."

The old man seemed to yearn for the old days after recounting this, as if it had been too long since he had seen the world of which he spoke.

Tianchen Continent?

Ye Wuchen's thoughts were chaotic. What were the Hua Xia and the earth that existed in his memories? Were they false memories or

He had traveled from his earth to some new unknown world!

He recalled one of the words from his memories—traversal.

"Does everyone here speak a common language?" Ye Wuchen asked.

"That's right."

"Where are we now?"

The old man was silent for a moment and sighed. "This is the extreme north of Tianlong, an area that was forgotten and sealed off. It has existed for a long long time. It is common knowledge in Tianlong that it is impossible to leave this place once you step into its boundaries. But fifteen years ago, I broke through the barrier sealing this place in arrogance, and I have never gone back. I even implicated my own grandson. Now, those fifteen years seem to have passed in the blink of an eye."

Noticing Ye Wuchen's surprised face, the old man continued. "Since I then, I have discovered that there are no natural disasters or monsters here, but there is a strong enchantment that only lets people in but not out. I have attempted many times to break it but every attempt has ended in failure. So, I lived my life here just like the other people that have been trapped here. They have no choice but to settle down and live out their lives."

Ye Wuchen's face stiffened in silence.

A sealed place. If there is no way to get out, then how would he recover his

memory and explore the course of his life? Perhaps he should just choose to settle here like the other people?

No!

Heavenly Star - Chapter 2

Chapter 2: The White Haired Girl

The sound of hurried steps and a man's labored breathing approached from the distance. Ye Wuchen glanced in the direction of the sound, and discovered a tall man drenched in sweat running toward him with a large bamboo basket on his back. The man seemed to be pretty young, though with a weathered face, and his physique was stout and muscular to a degree that was almost ridiculous.

Upon spotting the old man, the man in the distance abruptly quickened into a sprint and dropped the basket on the floor, exhausted. Only half conscious, he gasped. "Grandpa, I filled the basket with fruit I picked and ran thirty laps with it on my back... so today's work...."

Suddenly, he paused for a moment, focusing his eyes on Ye Wuchen. Then, he jumped as if he saw a monster. "You, you, you..... woke up?"

Ye Wuchen laughed at his surprise. "Grandpa Chu, who is he?"

"This is my grandson. He just recently had his twentieth birthday, and he took care of you while you were unconscious. Considering you've been dead for the past ten years, it's not unusual for someone to be startled to see you awake."

Ye Wuchen stood up and nodded. "I'm Ye Wuchen, thank you for taking care of me over these past ten years."

The tall man still seemed a bit bewildered. He looked Ye Wuchen up and down before realizing his reaction was somewhat impolite. Embarrassed, he rubbed his head and said with a simple, honest smile, "I'm Chu Jingtian. Eh, it isn't the best sounding name so you can just call me Da Niu like the others."

Chu Jingtian. Jingtian, a title of genius. He was definitely not an ordinary person.

Ye Wuchen smiled. "Alright then, I'll call you brother Da Niu from now on." Even though his demeanor seemed a bit indifferent to everything, he still made people feel at ease.

"Haha...."

Chu Jingtian laughed nervously, a bit shy. He was not the most talkative person.

"Uhh.... Brother Wuchen, let me hand out this fruit first. Then we can sit down and chat or something."

Chu Jingtian turned around, inhaled, and then yelled at the top of his lungs. "Everyone come here! Your brother Da Niu is back!"

Ye Wuchen jumped in surprise, startled by the sudden shout. Ears still ringing, Ye Wuchen looked towards Chu Jingtian, and noticed that his eyes had subtly changed — It was impressive that there was a person like Chu Jingtian in such a small, sealed-off region of land.

There was no doubt Chu Jingtian's voice went very far. Almost immediately, the chaotic sound of numerous footsteps approached from the distance. It belonged to the wave of children running towards them, carrying a wide variety of containers. There were baskets, boxes, stone bowls, anything that could carry something. The children lined up in front of Chu Jingtian with eager eyes and shouted together "Hello, brother Da Niu."

Chu Jingtian just stood there, an embarrassed grin on his face. "Sorry for being late. I fell into a ditch and it took a really long time to get back out. Now come here. There's some for everyone, and it's no less than usual."

The old man watched the scene in front of him with. This was one of Da Niu's daily requirements. It practiced his agility and endurance, and cultivated a sense of responsibility. The next generation did not have to be the kindest, but it could not be allowed to be evil.

Grabbing two with each hand, Chu Jingtian continued to fill each child's basket with fruit. He was obviously satisfied to see the kids leave with excited faces. Ye Wuchen watched quietly from the side. He was pondering his own life when he suddenly became aware of an acute tingling sensation that felt like he was being

watched. It came from a nearby tree, and when he turned his head to face it, his gaze met a pair of bright, glittering, and almost translucent eyes that belonged to the white shadow hiding there, which suddenly shifted a little, perhaps surprised at being discovered. The shadow seemed scared, and immediately ran. But instead of running away, it hid behind the tree as if waiting for something.

Eventually, the last kid cheerfully shouted “Bye brother Da Niu!” and disappeared. Chu Jingtian rubbed his hands together, almost as if he was sad not to have anyone left to give fruit to. He had taken this task as a sort of daily pleasure a long time ago. Brought here as a five year old by his grandfather, Chu Jingtian had not experienced the harshness of the outside world. As a result, he was very innocent and kind; almost annoyingly so.

Only then did the small white shadow emerge quietly from behind the tree and stand before Chu Jingtian with her head facing the ground. She called out shyly. “Brother Da Niu.”

The girl had attracted Ye Wuchen’s attention from the moment she emerged, his eyes sticking to her like glue. She seemed to be only ten or so, and Ye Wuchen could only describe her as small and exquisite. She wore a long, flowing white dress that was wrinkled but almost impeccably clean. What caught Ye Wuchen’s attention the most though was her long, snow-white hair and the two intersecting scars on her face.

Two scars ran from the corners of her forehead down to her earlobes across her face like a huge letter X, destroying her beauty.

Chu Jingtian hurriedly reached into his basket for more fruit, but his expression stiffened when he pulled out a large fruit that seemed to be an apple. Embarrassed, he rubbed his head and apologized. “Sorry white-haired sister, it seems that I miscounted today. This is the only one left. But, it’s the biggest.”

The girl accepted it carefully and smiled. “That’s ok. Thank you brother Da Niu.”

She nervously glanced over at Ye Wuchen because had been watching her before running out of sight.

After watching her exquisite shadow disappear into the darkness, Ye Wuchen was left thoughtless for a moment.

“Who was she?” He asked.

The old man looked at him and said, “She showed up a week ago. I guess she just broke in by chance and couldn’t get back out. But.... ah. you saw for yourself, her face is too scary, and her hair is just like that of the cruelest race of back then, the Snow Wolves. So, everyone here rejects her, and drives her away whenever they see her. But, she doesn’t seem to be evil at all. She seems young, she can’t survive on her own. It could be that the fruit she gets here every night is her only form of nourishment.”

Ye Wuchen remained silent and walked in the direction the girl disappeared in. Chu Jingtian called out to him, confused. “Brother Wuchen, where are you going? I still want to hear your stories.”

Pretending not to have heard him, Ye Wuchen disappeared from sight. Chu Jingtian scratched his head and muttered “Did he go pee?”

The white haired girl was squatting next to a creek, quietly washing the fruit she got earlier with clean water. The sound of water babbling over the rocks in the creek filled the air. Amidst the cool breeze, the silhouette of her small frame looked lonely and pitiful.

When she finished, the girl stood up and dried the fruit with her clothes. Suddenly, she sensed something and turned around subconsciously. At a loss of what to do, she just watched as Ye Wuchen approached her. She knew he was the one watching her earlier.

Ye Wuchen slowly walked up to her and gazed gently into her eyes. It was her starry eyes that conquered him completely. Loneliness. Panic. Confusion. Helplessness. All were hidden in her starry eyes.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 3

Chapter 3: Ye Ning Xue

The girl stepped back subconsciously but didn't escaped like what she did just now. She sees his face even his eyes clearly under faint light. He is good-looking, she can't help thinking of this. His eyes that are full of sadness and vicissitudes seemed not to match with his age, but wouldn't cause hatred at all, on the contrary, even were filled with breathtaking evil charm as if people would be addicted to it when they had a look at his eyes.

They looked at each other for a long time, the girl stared at him as if her soul were taken out, looked at him and then timidly looked at the fruit in her hand, swallowing. She then slowly held her fruit and timidly said to Ye Wu Chen timidly. "Elder brother, would you like to eat this?"

Ye Wu Chen couldn't help to laugh, then squatted himself down and shook his head with a smile. He then reached his hands to slowly get closer to her face and gently touched the two terrible scars on her face. At this time, weak colorless light shined from his fingertips. The girl was completely shocked, widening her eyes and mouth. She even forgot to dodge, standing still as if she was immovable.

Several seconds later, Ye Wu Chen took his hands back and frowned. He asked, "What is your name, little sister?"

The girl was still shocked till several seconds later, she said in a weak voice, "I..... I don't have a name."

"No name? Where is your family? Why would you show up here?"

"I don't have a family.....I have been here since I woke up, so I have no idea of what happened to me." The girl shook her head. His gentle voice slowly made

her beating heart calm down.

“You can’t remember what happened, right?”

The girl got shocked again then nodded with helpless eyes. She has no family, no past memories, she even forgets her name. Almost every person here hates her, hitting her with sticks or stones when they meet her. But she can only try very hard to escape and hide then cry in an empty corner. She just instinctively tries to survive, even if no companions, and no goals.

“I see” Ye Wu Chen smiled to her again, they shared similar experience. both showed up inexplicably, both lost their memories. This might be called doomed destiny. Some tender affection came out of his bottom of heart, so he said, “Do you want to have a brother who won’t make you starve or even be bullied.”

The girl looked at him in surprise with her vacant face, at this moment, she had no idea on how to answer this.

“Let me be your brother okay? I won’t allow you to starve or be bullied.”

The girl widened her eyes, and totally felt all at sea holding the fruit which is even bigger than her palms. She felt bitterness from her heart and eyes, even something from her heart was rising. She cowardly said, “May..... May I? They all hate me, hit me, because I....”

Ye Wu Chen stood up and took her small hands. “Follow me, from now on, you are my sister. No one can bully you without my consent.”

The girl stared at him and felt the warm from the strange hand which was holding her left hand. Unknowingly she found her eyes were all tears.

He took her hands and promised to protect her when she felt vacant in head, when she was hated, when she thought she was discarded by the world. From that moment, his image was branded deeply into her heart, permanently. She could not stop her emotional attachment to him just like how people got addicted to the most poisonous of opium in the world.

Just from this moment, Two courses of life which are impossible to cross finally crossed together.

Ye Wu Chen had no explanation to the old man and Chu Jing Tian why he took

her back. But they didn't ask more or object to it. At that night, the bed that he has slept for 10 years becomes the girl's first bed. Ye Wu Chen stood outside the room looking at the boundless sky silently as if thinking of something.

In the silence, he stretched out his left arm and used the fingers on his right hand to slightly swept over it. All at once, a short cut showed up on his arm and began bleeding. He then used the fingers on his right hand to touch the cut, but the cut surprisingly disappeared and did not even left a trace.

He put down his hands then frowned with confusion. In his memories, he knew that he has such kind of magic, but why he could not remove her scars just now?

Was that really a scar?

"Brother."

Hearing a sweet voice, Ye Wu Chen turned his back and looked at the girl who only revealed her half face then said to her, "It's late, why are you still awake?"

After a short hesitation, the girl said with an eager face. "May I sleep on the same bed with you, brother?"

"Alright." Ye Wu Chen promised and smiled. He would never like to see any disappointment on her face, or to see her inferiority because of her hair color and scars. At least, he has to let her know that he will never hate her or reject her.

"Really?" The girl said loudly with excitement. She was then picked up by Ye Wu Chen and put on the shabby wooden bed.

"Fine, little girl, now get ready to sleep." Ye Wu Chen hugged her in his chest and said this in a gentle voice like doting on a cute baby.

"OK!" She replied happily and moved her body closer into his warm chest. And finally, she found a comfortable position and lazily closed her eyes. However, tears stains were continually showing up on her smiling face, she just felt so happy that she could not help shedding tears.

"What name should I call you?" Ye Wu Chen talked to himself while touching her long white hair. The girl looked up on him with a confused look. She has extraordinary white skin and releases her snow-white skin luster in the dark

night. Ye Wu Chen frowned his eyebrows and whispered, "Your skin and hair are all snow-white like frozen snow, how about calling you Ye Ning Xue? Do you like it?"

"Ye Ning Xue....." She repeated it in a low voice and nodded heavily, "I like it so much because it is my brother who gives me this name."

She has never slept so peacefully like tonight, no misery, no coldness, no fear, because she has someone who can protect her—her brother.

Ye Wu Chen dared not move his body until she fell asleep. He finally sighed and looked into the sky with fascinated eyes till he slowly fell asleep.

Who am I...

The next morning When Ye Wu Chen opened his eyes, he saw Ye Ning Xue curling up in his chest like a lazy kitty and sleeping well. Ye Wu Chen can't help but smile, lying in bed, he kept motionless and listened to outside voice in order not to wake her up. It is really more noisy in the daytime than at night. And it may be breakfast time so it sounds slightly restless. By chatting with Chu Jing Tian yesterday, Ye Wu Chen knew that there are hundreds of people here during the years' of reproduction. They scattered in several areas and nearly had no communication. There are around 30 people (kids and adults) in the place which Chu Jing Tian lives. Usually, the 30 people sit and have meals together.

Being woke up by the noise, Ning Xue Slowly opened her hazy eyes, then began to look for Ye Wu Chen in panic while she happened to see Ye Wu Chen look at her with a funny look. She also smiled gently then curled up into his chest again and finally closed her eyes comfortably.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 4

Chapter 4: Light Punishment

“Alright, get up now otherwise we won’t have any breakfast to eat.” Holding her, Ye Wu Chen sat up then patted her small face gently. She had delicate white skin like snow, and, at first glance, her small face looked cute like a doll. However, the two long scars completely disrupted her beauty. They looked like someone had compulsively dug out two dirt-colored ravine on a flawless white snowfield. (Editor’s note: Harsh much?!?)

“Breakfast?” Ning Xue opened her eyes and looked at him at a loss. “We have something to eat in the morning?”

Ye Wu Chen’s heart suddenly hurt a bit, but he smiled. “Ning Xue doesn’t eat food in the morning?”

“Yea.” She nodded with her sleepy eyes, “Because... I couldn’t find anything to eat. Except at night..... brother Da Niu would give away fruits.”

Ye Wu Chen delicately used his hands to arrange her hair and clothes. All the while, Ye Ning Xue was watching him carefully, as if she was enjoying the very sense of his touch. Wu Chen put her onto the ground then took her hands. “Let’s go. I told you that I would not let you starve any more.”

The ground, which was empty last night, is now filled with people of all kinds including the elderly, full-grown adults, and children. Their coming, however, immediately attracted most people’s attention immediately. Right away, their eyes showed unfriendliness, several kids even made exaggerated sharp sound.....

“It is... It is that ugly girl!”

“She is coming again... Dad, I don’t want to see her, she looks so scary!”

“Come, let’s hit her, hit her!”

Not only the children, even those adults, who wore shabby clothes, showed obvious disgust. Ye Ning Xue's face became pale, and she hid her weak body behind Ye Wu Chen. She then tightened her hands around his clothes, and while her eyes were sparkling with tears.

Noticing several small stones were thrown at them, Ye Wu Chen frowned his eyebrows, then proceeded to catch all the coming stones. He followed by throwing those very stones back to the children who threw them. The children were stunned for a moment, then simultaneously cried out loudly. His manner was like stirring a beehive and inevitably caused some people to shout at him, soon an irritable middle-aged man shouted loudly. "What are you doing?!" Then the man immediately threw the bowl in his hand down towards Ye Wu Chen.

Chu Jing Tian was about to step forward but was stopped by grandpa Chu who shook his head solemnly. Chu Jing Tian felt very confused, but he never felt the need to go against grandpa, so he had to sit there and kept his silence.

Grandpa Chu narrowed his old eyes, carefully watching Ye Wu Chen's every move. Others didn't look carefully enough, but he clearly saw that those stones were flying to the lower part of his body. Ye Wu Chen had just casually waved his hands, but those stones seemed to act like magnets and flew into his hands, rather than actually being caught.

Grandpa Chu clearly knew that he could deal with the problem easily by himself, but Ye Wu Chen didn't reveal any power from start to end which he found odd.

The middle-aged man's hands were tightly holding Ye Wu Chen. Suddenly, Ye Wu Chen's eyes became cold, and he bend his wrist. Hearing a crunching sound, the middle-aged man's right hand broke, and he screamed like a dying pig. The group quietly started to mess before them. Then, several people came at Ye Wu Chen all together, while the rest threw the things in their hands at Wu Chen and Ning Xue.

Ye Wu Chen gave a contemptuous laugh, gently let go of Ning Xue's small hands, then stepped forward. His right hand grabbed someone's right arm, while his left hand grabbed that person's left hand, then incredibly used his slim body to throw out that person till he heard two crunchy sound of bones breaking.

Another person was tripped by him, as Ye Wu Chen took a casual step forward and stepped onto that person's ankle. It was as if he was using some uncanny power to break his left foot bones.

The things that were being thrown, returned at high speeds back to where they came from, directly at their throwers face. He didn't use his full strength. In the end this much strength wouldn't really hurt them, but they would be in agony for quite a few days.

Instantly, several adults and middle-aged men all fell into the ground, covering their wrists and ankles, and showing painful faces. Those aggressive children, who had gotten purple bruises on their face, now cried out even more loudly after seeing their fathers got beaten up. Only those trembling old men and several frightened women were not hurt at all.

"You..... Why did you hurt us?" The middle-aged old man who first attacked asked with pain.

"Because you offended me," Ye Wu Chen answered coldly.

"We just wanted to drive the ugly girl away." The middle-aged man pointed at Ning Xue.

"Oh? I am her brother, drive us away if you want." Ye Wu Chen said.

The middle-aged man widened his mouth but couldn't say anything.

"What's wrong? You dare to not do it now?" Ye Wu Chen laughed and stepped onto that man's chest, looking down to him. "Exactly. She is weak and not able to resist. You are stronger than her, and this is the reason why you gave yourselves the right to drive her away and bully her? Ok, now I am stronger than you, does this mean that I can bully you like you do to her? I can even kill you easily. If you treat her like this, then how can you complain that I treat you this way?"

He kicked that middle-aged man away then lifted up a child who looks 7 or 8 years old, shouting. "Stop crying!"

The child was so frightened that he stopped crying immediately and looked, looking at him with two eyes that are filled with tears.

"Who is your father?" Ye Wu Chen asked coldly.

"It is him..... him." The child wanted to cry but dared not cry, he sniffled softly

with his nose and pointed to the man who had his ankles broken just now.

“Did he ever teach you not to bully?”

“He, he taught me.”

“Then why did you still bully her?” Ye Wu Chen pointed to Ning Xue.

“Because, because she looks too ugly and others bully her, so.....”

“Oh? I will make you look like an ugly monster and let you feel how bad when others bully you, will it be okay?” Ye Wu Chen stretched out his fingers and moved slowly on his face. The child was so scared and burst into tears, “No, I won’t, I won’t bully her any more.....”

Gently putting him onto the ground, Ye Wu Chen walked to his father without any emotion. “Since you taught him not to bully, and he bullied Ning Xue for such a reason, why didn’t you stop him? He is a naive child, but you as an adult also bullied her., Or are you a naive child as well? Now that you treated a 10 years old child like this, then you shouldn’t blame others for treating you this way too. What, you want to banish me now? Would you like it if, if I beat you everytime I see you!”

The middle-aged man moved his lip for a while but could say nothing. This was, because he clearly knew that Ye Wu Chen was definitely not joking., This sense of terror spawned from just judging by Ye Wu Chen’s cruel expression.

“Let it go.”

The old man finally stood up and said in an mild way, “Young man, they are really wrong, but they are not bad people. They did it out of instinct. I guess they won’t do it again. I will ask them to apologize to Ning Xue, and you can let it go this time just to do a favor for me, is it okay?”

Ye Wu Chen turned his back, and the anger on his face vanished at once. He, then he smiled. “Grandpa Chu saved my life, I won’t go against your will. But it is unnecessary to apologize. If it happens next time, I will hit them again, hehe.”

He used his foot to stretch a stone bowl then held in hand while, flatly saying. “This time it was just a small lesson. I will crush his bones if I ever come to know someone who bullies Ning Xue from now on!” He tightened his right hand, and that hard stone bowl was crushed into powder. Finely powdered stone flowed from his fingertips, which frightened their faces with pale face. The rest who still

tried to rebel, were directly scared silly, so they finally had to keep quiet.

“You can go now.” The old man waved his hands. This place was a complete mess, so he guessed that no one would continue eating.

People leaved in a hurry. Ye Wu Chen took Ning Xue’s hands and walked towards the old man, “Grandpa Chu, I am sorry for bringing you trouble.”

The old man didn’t nod or shake. Instead, he sighed. “It is human beings’ instinct to reject ugly things. They are wrong, but we can not blame them for everything.”

Ye Wu Chen nodded. “Yeah, I know, so I just gave them a light punishment. It is useless to reason with those isolated people, so I guess violence may be a better way to make them remember it.”

The old man smiled, but made no comment.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 5

Chapter 5: Legend of the Woman of the Divine Wrath

Chu Jing Tian finally couldn't restrain himself from being quiet, and he suddenly jumped towards him with glittering eyes then said with an eager face. "Brother Wu Chen, I never thought you are so powerful, how about exchanging pointers between us?"

Wu Chen smiled then shakes his head.

Chu Jing Tian rubbed his hands with an itchy heart. He inherits Chu family's natural instinct of obsession with fighting, but in this sealed space the only opponent is his grandpa and without a doubt he is defeated every time. Now another strong man comes, how can he give up such a good chance?

He just wanted to continue to pester but hearing a light cough from grandpa. "Da Niu, you should not force him to fight with you."

Chu Jing Tian had to stop pestering and revealed unhappiness on his face. But soon he rolled his eyes and said, "Brother Wu Chen, now that you are this strong, how about hunting with me together in the future? There are many kinds of beasts in that forest, and a flame lion which is a Rank 10 monster, even such a strong man as I, can't win over it. But with your company, I guess we can have the honor to eat its meat."

Rank 10?

On second thought, Ye Wu Chen smiled. "Okay, let's go now."

"Now?" Chu Jing Tian felt surprised but then nodded excitedly. "Alright, let's go now." After saying this, he immediately took the bamboo basket that he takes every day on his back, because he was very worried that Ye Wu Chen would go back on his words, and then picked up a rusty sword to put into the basket.

Grandpa Chu said nothing but looked at them with a smile.

Ye Wu Chen bent down to Ning Xue. “Did I scare you just now?”

Ning Xue heavily shook her head, “Not at all. Brother did that to protect me..... Brother, they all hate me but why are you still so nice to me?”

Ye Wu Chen gave a gentle smile to her. “Because you are my sister.”

He straightened up. “Come and hunt with us.”

Ning Xue answered innocently then walked behind them. Chu Jing Tian scratched his head as if he wanted to advise not to take this little girl in case she gets in danger, but finally said nothing since he was afraid Wu Chen wouldn't go with him.

On their way the two men talked with each other at times but it was just some boring topics. Ning Xue walked just behind Wu Chen, her crystal-like eyes were observing the surroundings with curiosity. When they reached the edge of the forest, Ye Wu Chen eventually said: “Da Niu, the Rank 10 you mentioned was divided by martial arts ranking?”

“Martial arts? What is that?” Chu Jing Tian widened his big eyes but immediately understood, “Yes, it exactly explains the power ranking in Tian Chen Continent.”

No martial arts here? Ye Wu Chen frowned his eyebrows and asked. “Then what does the people usually practice in here?”

Chu Jing Tian scratched his head, “Too many. They study sword, bow and arrow and high speed assassination..... Oh, some people even study magic, in a word, too many. But generally speaking, most people study swords, anyway, sword is the king of all weapons.”

“What about the rankings?” Ye Wu Chen asked while thinking about it.

“Hmm, judging by power, we ranked from Rank 1, Rank 2, Rank 3....till Rank 10. You are already very strong if you can reach Rank 8. But over Rank 10, those people are taken as super strong, according to the realm, they are Spirit Realm, Heaven Realm and God Realm. You are the king of the heroes if you reach Spirit Realm, a Grandmaster if you reach Heaven Realm, the King of the World if you

reach God Realm. According to grandpa, there are only four deity level experts who reached God Realm in the whole Tian Chen Continent, they are without exception, living a godlike existence.” Chu Jing Tian said with admiration.

Ye Wu Chen nodded. “The four should be the supreme power of the whole Tian Chen Continent.”

“No!” Chu Jing Tian shook his head, “There is still another one. She is the most powerful in the whole continent. No one knows her name because she never talks and her weapon is called [Divine Wrath], so people call her [Woman of the Divine Wrath]. Grandpa told me that she has the nature to massacre and to kill lots of people. The four deity level experts joined hands and finally caught her through demon lock magic. And she was finally stuck in Devil’s Tower and locked with indestructible demon chains , even god couldn’t destroy the demon chains. Even if she was stuck in the tower, nothing could hurt her, not even a sword, gun, fire and water.”

“[Woman of the Divine Wrath]? She is a woman?” Wu Chen was surprised by it.

“Yes. But things didn’t stop there, some evils who were kept here died in a night since she was locked in, even the trees and flowers around the Devil’s Tower dried up and died. What is more, since then no matter who entered into the Devil’s Tower, they either never went back or return with bloody face and bite people like a madman then died no more than half an hour. No one knows what they saw inside, since then no one dares to go inside. Later, there is a saying in Tian Chen continent, ‘We would rather go into a prison than be lock in the Devil’s Tower’”

Chu Jing Tian took a long breath and continued, “So the [Woman of the Divine Wrath] is the most terrible person. I could imagine even with my toes that the devil woman must have eyes like bells, a big mouth full of blood, wide face and big ears, in a word, too scary, even though I never saw her.”

Ye Wu Chen nodded, the [Woman of the Divine Wrath] and Devil’s Tower, he kept the two names in mind.

“Da Niu, what rank did you reach according to your power?”

“I..... Barely reach rank 10.” Chu Jing Tian scratched his head with some dissatisfaction as if he was very unsatisfied with his power, because his grandpa set a high standard for him, which made him think his progress was always slow. But at such a young age and already reached rank 10, comparing him with the people outside he could be taken as a genius.

“How about my power? What rank did I reach?” Ye Wu Chen asked.

Chu Jing Tian widened his eyes and looked all over him then shook his head, “I can’t judge. Generally speaking, it can be easily judged by certain level’s features when you reach certain level. You can crumb stones into powder, at least reach level 6, but I couldn’t feel any feature of you..... hmm, it is just like you don’t have any power and you look more like a scholar.”

Chu Jing Tian feels more confused when he looks at him, but finally he can just sigh, maybe it’s because he is not that powerful to get insight into this.

Ye Wu Chen gave a faint smile and moved his mouth. “Your prey is coming.”

“Prey? Where?” Chu Jing Tian asked with confusion then realized the sound behind him and turned his body back immediately, held on his iron sword, whispered, “It’s strange that brother Wu Chen’s ears are more alert than mine.”

Judging by its steps, it must be a big beast. Chu Jing Tian screamed with excitement loudly and ran to the beast according to its sound, then left a word, “It must be a big one, it’s dangerous for you to go, so I will go instead. I will be back soon.”

Chu Jing Tian subconsciously took the effeminate Ye Wu Chen as a scholar that grandpa often said.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 6

Chapter 6: Wu Chen Spell

Another commotion in the forest just after Chu Jing Tian left. All of a sudden, a snow-white creature came towards Ning Xue, Ning Xue got scared and quickly hid behind Wu Chen. Ye Wu Chen looked at one side and moving his feet, a 10 cm long twig got kick and shot through the creature's throat like a sharp arrow. It stumble while running and it roll a few circles on the ground then it stopped moving.

Ning Xue popped her small head from the back of Ye Wu Chen, looking at the motionless creature with curiosity, then asked. "Brother, what is this?"

Ye Wu Chen pick it up and observed for a moment then said. "This looks like a rabbit, but it's much bigger than the rabbit I have seen."

In this world he now lives, this creature might be a different kind of rabbit.

"Ning Xue, are you hungry?" Ye Wu Chen suddenly ask with a smile. He and this little girl didn't even have their breakfast yet, which is one of the reason why he went out to hunt. Ning Xue looks skinny and weak, even a gust of wind is enough to put her down.

Ye Ning Xue first shook her head, then finally with a pitiful face nodded.

Ye Wu Chen smiled, "Turn around."

Ye Ning Xue turned around timidly. Ye Wu Chen found a clean branch and stringing through the strange rabbit, extending his right index finger, then his fingertip surprisingly burning with red flames. Devilish flames instantly burnt over the rabbit's whole body when the flames touch the rabbit, the rabbit's fur burns away. Ye Wu Chen slightly moved his fingertip, flames slowly turned from red to dark red and burnt all over its body, then delicious smell of meat came

out. Ning Xue couldn't hold back her hunger, she use her nose to smell the delicious smell and sneakingly swallowed her saliva.

More than 10 seconds, the rabbit meat was cooked. Ye Wu Chen took back the flames and waved his palm in the air. Suddenly, blue icy air flew over and lowered the temperature of the rabbit meat. If Chu Jing Tian was here he would be amazed at this. It is already very rare to meet a person who owns two elements, but now it is unbelievable to see Ye Wu Chen owning both water and fire elements. Water and fire are incompatible with each other, which is a common sense known by the whole Tian Chen Continent.

Ye Wu Chen smiled with satisfaction, tore down a rabbit leg and passed it to Ning Xue, "Ning Xue, have a taste."

Ning Xue was almost drooling, she has been eating little fruits but no meat at all. She can not help drool just because of the smell. She instantly took it in her hand and smelled, but she didn't instantly taste it, she just gave a sweet smile to Ye Wu Chen. "Brother thank you."

Seeing her biting the meat slowly as if she doesn't want to eat up too fast, Ye Wu Chen revealed a smile on his face. Without any doubt Ning Xue is the only adornment of his empty world.

It tastes really good with delicious smell by taking a bite. Ye Wu Chen felt a bit amazed at the rabbit meat's delicacy for it is far more delicious than any other rabbit meat in his memory. Just then, there came a sound of heavy steps and stuff rubbing on the ground.

All of a sudden, the footsteps stopped then sped up at once, Jing Tian Chu approaching whispered, "I smell Lightning Rabbit's meat? So odd... Was it...?"

Chu Jing Tian was dragging a strange-shaped wild boar that was even bigger than his body and walks quickly towards them, then followed the smell and his eyes fell on Ye Wu Chen's hands. He quickly stepped closer and widened his big eyes. "It really is... Lightning Rabbit, I actually never want to forget its smell."

"Was Lightning Rabbit very powerful?" Ye Wu Chen passed the rest to Chu Jing Tian, Chu Jing Tian didn't pretend to kindly refuse but threw away the wild boar then took the rabbit with two hands and smelled it greedily with enjoyable face. "Lightning Rabbit runs very fast even though it doesn't have attack ability. It

looks like white lightning while running, under this condition, it is hard to catch it. Even I just caught them 3 times over the past decade. Even though its hard to catch, when it comes to its meat delicacy, nothing can be compared with it. You really have great skills, Ye Wu Chen!” Chu Jing Tian thumbs up then crudely gobbled.

He was careless, he simply never thought how it was cooked when it was just caught.

“It was just a coincidence.” Ye Wu Chen said then casually asked, “What level can this rabbit reach?”

“It is a Rank 3 Demon Beast and counted on powerful monster, comparing it to other low rank monster. From rank 4 to 7, they are called middle-ranking Demon Beast, while Rank 8 to 10, they are high-ranking Demon Beast. They are graded the same way as human, different rank represents different power.” He spoke with his indistinct voice as he was biting the rabbit meat, then gave a kick at the big wild boar on the ground. “This is a Rank 5 Demon Beast, whose power was equal to a Rank 5 Strong Man. It is unlucky to come across it if it is ordinary people.” (TL note: any better name for this

Ye Wu Chen nodded and didn’t ask more.

“Oh, Ye Wu Chen,” Chu Jing Tian wiped his mouth, “What skill have you practice? I couldn’t feel anything of you, I guess it must be because of the skill you practice.”

“What I practice?” Ye Wu Chen whispered, was absent-minded for a moment, then shook his head. “I don’t know either.”

Chu Jing Tian gazed blankly then smiled to him. “I almost forgot that you couldn’t remember anything.”

Ye Wu Chen silently felt his flowing breath in his body and said. “Now that I have my new name, my skill should have a new name too. I prefer to call it Wu Chen spell before knowing its real name.”

Mysterious power, shouldn’t belong to the world he lives now, so there will never be a second Wu Chen spell.

“Wu Chen spell? Alright, alright...” Chu Jing Tian answered casually, he didn’t

even know if it was a good name, but the rabbit in his hands was almost eaten up like how a wind blew over remnant clouds. He threw the bones away, and licked his lip as if he wanted more. He realized that he didn't leave some meat for Ye Wu Chen till he took up a leaf to wipe his hands. His face turned stiff immediately, but then he could only laugh and shyly scratch his head.

Ning Xue finally finished eating as well, she gently pulled Ye Wu Chen's cloth and said in a low voice. "Brother, I am full."

"Okay." Ye Wu Chen replied then kneel and wipe her mouth by using his fingers, he then wipe her hands in the same way. He took her small hands, and look ahead "Let's go deep into the forest. "

"Okay." Chu Jing Tian took back his basket and followed behind them while single-handedly drags the wild boar. He looks like he doesnt have a hard time dragging it but looks as if he was dragging a grasshopper. When it comes to brute force, even 10 Ye Wu Chen could never be compared with 1 Chu Jing Tian.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 7

Chapter 7: Flame Lion

The 3 people kept moving forward, on their way there are some unlucky big and small beasts, but they were all basically knocked out by Chu Jing Tian with one punch. Compared with those low level beasts, Chu Jing Tian was more like a beast. After an hour, he has filled his basket. Dragging a dozen tied big beast plus the full basket on his back, even if it's Chu Jing Tian, he felt kind of hard moving forward. But Ye Wu Chen insist to keep moving so Chu Jing Tian had no choice but to move.

Walking deep into the forest, it sounded more silent. Another half an hour passed, Chu Jing Tian finally sits on the ground and grasping for breath said. "How about stopping here? If we continue moving forward, it is the place which the Flame Lion hunts. I can run if I am unable to defeat it, but you and your little girl may get in trouble."

"Flame lion?" Ye Wu Chen realized that it is the mentioned level 10 Demon Beast that Chu Jing Tian can't subdue. He looked into the distance and asked. "What is the place that is beyond the Flame Lion's territory?"

Chu Jing Tian took a light relief and said. "It is the edge of this isolated area. It is the terrible barrier which only lets people in but not out, even my grandpa....."

Ye Wu Chen kept quiet then pulled Ye Ning Xue and moved forward.

"Hey, buddy, it is dangerous there!" Chu Jing Tian instantly ran after him, just then, a roaring sound of a lion was heard. Chu Jing Tian was astonished so he sped up his steps and stood in front of Ye Wu Chen. "Brother Ye Wu Chen, we have entered the flame lion's land, you and little girl escape now!"

Just then, another roaring sound came. A tall lion over 2 meters whose body burns flame all over it, came into sight. It gets exceptionally angered when it

comes across its enemy. It roared with anger while it saw Chu Jing Tian then it dash its body straight to him. Without even getting close to him, it has already enlarge its mouth, then a huge fireball rush out.

The cautious Chu Jing Tian took a side jump and managed to dodge the fireball, he then took up his iron sword and was about to stab the Flame Lion when his eyes suddenly narrowed and realized Ye Wu Chen and Ye Ning Xue stood behind his back, hurriedly shouting. "Dodge now!"

Flames were coming to them, Ye Wu Chen was about to take Ye Ning Xue and dodge when a strange feeling controlled his mind, his eyes moved and then he even extended his hand to catch the flames.

The flames that even Chu Jing Tian dare not to touch were caught directly by Ye Wu Chen, then it died out fast when it touched a flashing blue light on Ye Wu Chen's hand just like how flames touched cold water.

Chu Jing Tian widened his big eyes as if he saw the most unexpected thing in the world.

Ye Wu Chen took a look at his palm..... intact, not even a hair was hurt. He only felt the warmth of the flames but not its scorching hotness.

Not only Chu Jing Tian but also the Flame Lion were all astonished. The Flame Lion growled and fired out 3 fire balls to Ye Wu Chen, then it ran to him with a heavy momentum, yet it forgot its original target.

Ye Wu Chen didn't catch it with his hand this time, and didn't even dodge. The 3 fire balls just directly hit his body and made him step back 3 steps in succession, but it didn't hurt him at all, even his clothes didn't get burned. Facing the Flame Lion, he waved both hands to form two cold ice spikes, then cast the ice spikes to the Flame Lion.

Ice Spike magic, on Tian Chen Continent, is the lowest level magic of the water element, it can be used by a Rank 1 Water Mage, normally, Ice Spike will be melted before getting close to a Rank 10 flame lion. However, the two ice spikes ran extraordinary fast, just a moment, they mercilessly stabbed into the Flame Lion's weak eyes.

After a miserable roaring the Flame Lion heavily fell down. Chu Jing Tian would

never miss such an opportunity, he suddenly jumped up, focusing all strength on his hands, then after the loud lion's roar he stabbed his iron sword into the Flame Lion's throat. The Flame Lion due to the pain it couldn't resist at all, its throat was cut through easily. It stopped moving after a fierce struggle.

Chu Jing Tian took out his iron sword, poked the Flame Lion then laughed. "It died? So easily? I still remember that I didn't succeed in killing it even though I fought it many times but instead got several clothes burnt." Chu Jing Tian thumbs up to Ye Wu Chen. "Brother Ye Wu Chen, you are really amazing. I was thinking of stabbing its eyes before but I didn't succeed even once. But you hurt its two eyes without any problem..... hmm, are you a Water Mage?"

Ye Wu Chen's face looked pale, shaking his hands. "It is just a coincidence, maybe I know a little about water magic, but at most know how to use basic ice spikes."

Ye Wu Chen told the truth, because he had felt that in his body a particular power was used to form two simple ice spikes.

"Brother Da Niu, how about you taking the Flame Lion back first? Ye Ning Xue and I still want to hang out here, it is safe now anyway."

Ye Wu Chen absent-mindedly seemed to say this in a plain decisive voice.

Chu Jing Tian was startled at first, then nodded. "Alright then. I also feel a bit tired with so many stuffs, but promise me to come back soon."

Soon, he put the flameless Flame Lion on his shoulder and dragging his spoils in his back. He then tried to sneak back to see what Ye Wu Chen was about to do.

"Let's go." Ye Wu Chen took the small Ye Ning Xue and walked towards the distance with a attentive face. After walking around 100 meter he, all of a sudden stopped, because he felt that a transparent wall stopped him. After pondering, he suddenly lifted up Ye Ning Xue then put her 10 meters away and seriously said "Just stay here and do not move."

Ye Ning Xue nodded her head timidly, then with her unblinking eyes watched him go back to his original position.

This is the barrier which isolate here from the outside world?

Ye Wu Chen inhaled, concentrating his attention then with great efforts controlled several air flows in his body. He concentrated the strength of Wu Chen spell on his right hand and let his whole right hand be covered by a transparent light. He made a low sound, then form his palm into a blade then with full strength cut the transparent barrier in front of him.

There is no unexpected crushing and booming sound but a slight sound, after the sound, he was bounced back by a huge force. He rolls on the ground then after a few breath stood up, while his left hand held his painful right hand with cold sweat on his forehead.

“Brother!” An anxious yell, Ye Ning Xue ran to him hurriedly, her small face full of panic. Ye Wu Chen smiled and looked at her tearful eyes, then said in a gentle voice. “Ning Xue, don’t worry about me. I am fine, I was just bumped by something.”

Heavenly Star - Chapter 8

Chapter 8: The Nan Huang Sword

“Brother..... did you get hurt?” Ye Ning Xue anxiously look over his body, with a tearful voice. Ye Wu Chen helplessly smile and pick her up, and put her in her previous position, touching her small nose and said. “Listen to me, obediently stay here. I promise that nothing will happen this time.”

Ye Ning Xue was about to say something but finally didn't, she looked at him and held her small hands tightly instead. She knew her brother was doing something dangerous.

Ye Wu Chen walked in front of the [Barrier] again, but this time he didnt look at the [Barrier] but on the ground which he was standing on. He lowered his head and walked back and forth with extraordinary dignified eyes. He then bent down and kept quiet for a while, lifting his right fist and gathered all the recovered strength and then brutally hits the ground.

A loud roar made the ground shake a bit, in front of Ye Wu Chen, a shallow pit which was more than half a meter deep and half a meter wide emerged. Ye Wu Chen felt a bit dizzy after using up all his energy again and tried to balance his body then he focused his sight and looked down to the ground. The shallow pit's soil is surprisingly smooth, as if a mysterious power was protecting the soil which was below half a meter of the ground from being damaged. While a sudden flash of a golden light which made Ye Wu Chen's eyes contracted was actually a sword hilt, it shone with blinding golden light. The sword was buried into the soil, but just the sword hilt which was exposed outside of the soil had a power of making people hold their breath.

What is this...

Ye Wu Chen put his hands onto the sword hilt without any hesitation. Immediately, soft golden light covered his hands. He then slightly pulled the sword out, the golden sword was slowly being pulled out of the ground with a 'sizzle' noise, shortly after, it completely came into sight.

Just after the golden sword was pulled out, the ground began to fiercely shake. Successive huge broken sound was heard. For the time being, the [Isolated Land] which no one could know how many years it has been isolated just fiercely shook just like a severe earthquake, all people and beasts was surprised and panic. In front of the grass house, the old man who was conserving his energy with closed eyes, the old man then opened his eyes and looked into the sky, then suddenly his expression change. " The [Barrier]..... was broken!"

The shaking ground and roaring sound didn't attract Ye Wu Chen's attention at all, he just stared at the big sword in his hands. The sword has a handle of more than 30cm, a body of more than 2 meter, a cutting edge of more than 10cm. The whole sword is all golden and smooth like a mirror. No matter if it's the sword body or the handle, he can't see any other lines on them except a small word "南" being sculptured on the sharp end of the sword. Just then, an ethereal voices reverberated in his mind..... (TL Note: 南 you read it as Nan and it also means southern)

"At the beginning of the Heaven and Earth, Chaos, gave birth to two of the earliest life form. They were born at the same time, and were sworn enemies. One took up the south of the world, while the other took up the north of the world. They separately called themselves [Nan Huang] and [Bei Di]. They had been fighting with each other for many years with no result, but it cause Chaos to break and it then formed the heaven, earth, humans, gods and demons.....

The voice in his head was suddenly interrupted just like being abruptly cut off without more contexts.

"You were calling me just now?" Holding on the sword, Ye Wu Chen with closed eyes asked in his mind.

"It is... it is me." It was a girl's voice, she revealed an obvious nervousness in her voice.

"Who are you?"

"I.... I don't know."

"Why were you calling me?"

"I don't know."

"Then... you know who I am?"

"I... don't know."

Ye Wu Chen's forehead showed 3 black lines. "Then what the hell do you know!"

The girl's voice became more terrified, "Please don't get angry with me master, I really have no idea of who I am..... I just know my name is Nan Er and I was sealed in the sword. And you are my master and the only person who can save me."

"Reason." Ye Wu Chen wiped the cold sweat on his forehead. She knew everything but said she had no idea like a fool just now.

"I really don't know... ah, that feeling. I slept really too long then woke up suddenly because I could feel that my master came to me. So I was desperately calling to you, master." The girl's voice became cheery. (TL Note: A wild harem girl candidate appears!)

Ye Wu Chen frowned then asked. "You said that I can help you get out, now you should tell me what I can do to help you."

"I don't know."

"....."

"Forget it." Ye Wu Chen's whole body felt powerless. "You, from now on follow me, someday you can then tell me if you recall the way how to help."

"Thank you master, thank you very much." The girl answered happily. The sword in Ye Wu Chen's hands instantly turned into a golden light and shot between his two eyebrows which isn't noticeable.

A girl who was sealed into the sword... a sword turned into energy and still attached to the girl... Such a thing is unthinkable, why was Ye Wu Chen didn't feel surprise but felt a familiar feeling.

He shook his head then looked to the front. The [Barrier] was destroyed, and the sword was the source of the [Barrier]. What was the story of that sword, why as it buried here, and how did the [Barrier] formed?

And what were the memory fragments in his head about the [Nan Huang] and [Bei Di]?

He didn't expect an answer from the girl called Nan Er, because whatever he asked, she would not be able to give an answer.

When Ye Wu Chen came back with Ye Ning Xue, the old man still sat there peacefully like an unshakeable mountain. Beside the old man, Chu Jing Tian was saying something to the old man from the left to the right of the old man, was tantalizing like an ant on hot pot. However, the old man said nothing which made Chu Jing Tian so anxious that he almost jumped.

Chu Jing Tian eyes lit up when he saw Ye Wu Chen came back and instantly ran to Ye Wu Chen, shouting to him. "Brother Ye Wu Chen, I have good news to tell you. We can get out of the isolated area because the weird [Barrier] disappeared all of a sudden."

Ye Wu Chen gave a light smile but said nothing.

The old man looked at Ye Wu Chen up and down with sharp eyes like a blade. Ye Wu Chen felt a huge power pressing on his chest just like a heavy sheet of iron. The old man looked back and smiled, "Young man, what are you planning to do now since the [Barrier] has been broken?"

Ye Wu Chen felt frightened at the bottom of his heart but still pretended to be calm on his face, and said with a smile. "Let's talk about this in the future."

Ye Ning Xue blinked her big eyes then peeked at Ye Wu Chen, but she had no idea of what they were talking about.

In the coming days, the only thing that Ye Wu Chen is doing is to take Ye Ning Xue out and play with her, they go wherever Ye Ning Xue wants. Sometimes, they go hunting in the forest or picking fruits. Ye Wu Chen even run after some butterflies like a kid with Ye Ning Xue.

In such a short times, they almost went to every corner of the isolated area. Chu Jing Tian followed them every day like a follower. He went wherever they

went, just like a heavy life guard. He did this because grandpa Chu asked him to, but he himself was not reluctant to do it at all.

Ye Ning Xue was happy every day like a set free bird. Her laugh moistened Ye Wu Chen's heart again and again because she was the only decoration of his empty world and she could easily touch the softest part of his heart.

It was just..... Looking at her petite white body, he sighed in a low voice.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 9

Chapter 9: A Dragon Getting Out of The Sea

The sky is just turning bright in the east. Ye Wu Chen stood up lightly and blankly stared at the sleeping Ye Ning Xue. Two weird scars damage her beauty, but she has the most innocent heart. He gently kissed her face then reluctantly walk outside.

“You are leaving?” The old man sat on the stump which he has been there for many years, with his walking stick in hands gently striking on the ground. Chu Jing Tian stood in front of Ye Wu Chen with unwillingness on his face then a moment later said with eager eyes. “Brother Ye Wu Chen, are you really leaving?”

Ye Wu Chen nodded his head, “Take good care of Ning Xue for me. The road ahead of me is probably full of danger, I can’t take her with me..... I will pick her up when I get everything settled. If you can’t wait, you can take her to find me as well.”

Chu Jing Tian was about to vow to ensure when the old man said. “Don’t worry about this. We won’t leave here within 3 years, and won’t even let Ye Ning Xue be bullied.”

“3... 3 years?” Chu Jing Tian widened his eyes staring at the old man and his tears almost dropped. “Grandpa, are you... serious? 3... 3 years!”

The old man ignored him then turned his palm up to the sky. It was a black thing that was thrown to Ye Wu Chen. Ye Wu Chen took it and saw a black ring which didn’t look special except a tiny word “楚” sculpted on it. (TL Note: “楚” read as Chu)

“What is this?”

“It is a storage ring which is not counted as rarity on Tian Chen Continent but should be of some use for you.” The old man said peacefully.

“Storage ring?” Suddenly astonishment crossed his eyes, he nodded then wore it on his left index finger. “Thank you grandpa Chu, I must someday repay your kindness to me”

“Repay? You actually already repaid it.” The old man said while smiling. He broke the [Barrier] which set them free from the “cage” and gave them a reborn freedom. This is real kindness.

Ye Wu Chen didn’t argue more with him, he slowly turned his back then gently waved his hands. “Grandpa Chu, Brother Da Niu, take good care of Ye Ning Xue for me, we shall meet again soon.”

He didn’t look back but slowly walked away. Chu Jing Tian suspended his hand that was waving to Ye Wu Chen in the air, with tearful eyes saw Ye Wu Chen’s shadow disappear from his sight.

“He just left us?” Chu Jing Tian was nagging with reluctance when he suddenly thought of something, so he jumped to the old man and distressingly asked. “Grandpa, is it true that we won’t leave here within 3 years? But I.....”

“It’s true, at least 3 years or we will never go out.” The old man said calmly with profound eyes.

Chu Jing Tian almost knelt to the old man. he has been stuck in such a god-forsaken place for 15 whole years, he has been looking forward to his dream of someday getting out of here, but that day miraculously came but getting such a result. If the old man does not agree, he cannot escape no matter what method in the palm of his hand is used.

“He is like a dragon getting out of the sea, while you must be like a fierce tiger going downhill. Before you become a fierce tiger, you are not allowed to get out.” The old man was sitting there then stood up while he said this without mercy.

“A fierce tiger? When will I become fierce tiger?”

“When you get a little understanding of Heaven Realm, you can get out of here.” The old man looked into distance and said with a calm and dignified voice.

“Heaven Realm..... But I couldn’t even reach spirit level in the past 5 years, how will it be possible to reach spirit level then break through Spirit Realm and reach Heaven Realm within 3 years?” Chu Jing Tian said this with grievance on his face.

“Humph!” The old man was always calm but gave a cold hum sound this time, and yelled.

“Each generation of our Chu family must stand on the highest peak of the Dao of the sword on Tian Chen Continent. Your father died young, now we have pinned all hope of Chu family on you. If you have no confidence in reaching this goal, how do you deserve to be a descendant of the Chu family and Chu Cang Ming’s grandson namely my grandson?”

Chu Jing Tian shamefully lowered his head and dared not to say even a word.

The old man suddenly use his walking stick to strike the ground, with a crashing sound, the walking stick turned into 4 pieces. A slender sword which shines with faint blue light showed up in the old man’s hands. He yelled in a low voice then the sword burst into blue light. The blade which was less than 1 meter shone an over 1 meter blue light, even the slender sword body expanded 3 times.

“From today on, this sword belongs to you. 3 years later if you are not powerful enough to deserve the sword I will take it back.” The old man swung his arms, then the sword turned into a blue arc and fell down into the ground in front of Chu Jing Tian. Chu Jing Tian immediately pulled it out and his arms was trembling with excitement.

“Cang Ming Sword... known as the magic sword.” Chu Jing Tian was so excited that with glittering eyes he even wanted to kiss the sword in his hands. He was only excited but not cautious or afraid at all, which made the old man almost slap his head.

“If you win it over in 3 years remember that you use it to kill evil and help the weak. On the contrary, you have to follow it if you can’t win, you understand?”

“I understand, understand.” Chu Jing Tian instantly answered and with his thick hands, touched the Cang Ming Sword again and again as if he was touching a girl. Finally, his eyes turned sharp and he waved his right arm to use Cang Ming

Sword to draw a blue arc, then patted his chest and vowed solemnly. "Don't worry grandpa, I will try to reach Heaven Realm within 3 years just to deserve the Cang Ming Sword!"

The old man nodded his head then with a subtle smile on his face turned his back. He was taken as a rare genius when he got a little understanding of Heaven Realm when he was 30 years old, he reached Heaven Realm at 35, reached God Realm at 60. Now, he aspires to see his fairy tale being broken by his grandson. And he would look upon him with delight.

In the morning, a sleepy head Ye Ning Xue stretched herself then slowly opened her sleepy eyes but only to find that her brother was not here. She shrugged her mouth with unwillingness, because she could always see her brother when she wakes up every time. Lightly jumping down from the wooden bed, she fixed her hair and arranged her clothes then ran out of the house.

"Brother!" She shouted with a crisp voice but didn't get any reply. Outside of the house, she only saw Chu Jing Tian and the old man.

"Where is my brother?" Ye Ning Xue rubbed her sleepy eyes.

"Hmm..." Chu Jing Tian scratched his head then smiled. "He has left."

"Left? Went to the forest? I will go find him right now."

"No, no." Chu Jing Tian waved his hands instantly, speaking in a halting way. "Little girl, your brother has left here and been on the way to Tian Long country, but he said he will pick you up soon."

Chu Jing Tian's words were stuck in his throat and couldn't say anything, his heart suddenly jerked heavily, because instead of sadness or anxiety he saw... fear on her face.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 10

Chapter 10: Full Moon Night

"Brother..... left..." All of a sudden Ye Ning Xue's face turned stiff, nagging absent-mindedly. Her wandering eyes instantly turned grey as if the world in front of her eyes suddenly collapsed.

Chu Jing Tian subconsciously stepped back and immediately said. "Little... little girl, your brother is worried that you will be in danger if he takes you with him. But he said that he will be back to pick you up soon."

"No..." Ye Ning Xue whispered, then suddenly she ran to Chu Jing Tian like a madman, which was different from the weak and tame Ye Ning Xue, bursting into tears, she constantly hit Chu Jing Tian with her fist. "You lied to me! lied to me! Brother won't leave me, you lie... I don't want to separate from brother, No!"

Her fierce reaction was far more than they expected. Chu Jing Tian instantly lift up his hands. "Calm down little girl, your brother will really be back soon."

"You lied to me... you all lied to me! I don't want to leave my brother....." She loudly cried. She was left alone in the world if her brother left her, she couldn't imagine a world without her brother. All at once, she wiped her tears when she thought of something, then held Chu Jing Tian's clothes and shouted. "Tell me, where did bro go? I have to go find him!"

Chu Jing Tian hurriedly shook his head and almost burst into tears. "My little ancestor, spare me. Your brother will really pick you up. You can't catch up to him since he has left for a while."

"Tell me... Please tell me which direction my brother walked into... please....." She looked up with tearful eyes and a tear-stained cheeks, then stared at Chu

Jing Tian stubbornly, which made Chu Jing Tian afraid of looking at her eyes.

“Brother Da Niu... Please tell me, I don’t want to leave my brother....”

“Tell me... I don’t want to leave my brother, I can’t leave my brother...”

The old man silently watched them at the beginning, his face turned from emotionless to emotional, then horrified.

Chu Jing Tian suddenly felt as if he is losing his breath so finally surrendered, then points to the south. “He is on the way to Tian Long country in south, but...”

Ye Ning Xue took her hands back and recklessly ran to the direction he pointed. Chu Jing Tian was surprised, he was about to catch her when he found his body stuck there as if it was fixed. He gritted his teeth to struggle a bit then shouted. “Little girl, come back! Come back now!”

That small white shadow was getting farther and farther then soon, under the cover of the trees, disappeared from his sight.

Chu Jing Tian turned his back, struggling and shouting. “She will be in danger if I don’t chase her. Why did you stop me from chasing her back?”

The old man sighed and said. “If you could read her eyes, you wouldn’t chase her back. It’s a desperate obsession which can’t be stopped by anything. If you forcibly stop her, she won’t stop struggling even with her last breath.”

“Then let me go with her or you take her. After all, she is just a 10 year old little girl, she can’t catch up with him because Ye Wu Chen brother has left for a while. What’s more, she may encounter all sort of danger. A random beast that is over Rank 2 can..... Grandpa!”

“No!”

Unexpectedly, the old man still refused with cold expression.

“Grandpa, you have the heart to watch a little girl get in danger? Moreover, she is Ye Wu Chen’s sister!! Chu Jing Tian shouted to the old man anxiously. This was the first time that he shouted to his grandpa, because this time he was really harsh.

“I told you no!” The old man shouted in a more loudly voice and overpowered

Chu Jing Tian. Chu Jing Tian clenched his fists, violently stamped his feet, then finally kept quiet.

“Don’t worry, she will be fine.” After a while, the old man said this slowly and meanwhile was beset with doubt in his heart.

At that moment, her unintentionally released momentum chilled him..... Is this really just an ordinary girl?

Passing over the forest, there was a wild grass, then another forest beyond the grass. Ye Wu Chen was walking to the south from early morning to evening and silently calculating the distance, then he talked with Nan Er at times.

“What is your name, master?”

“Ye Wu Chen.”

“Wow, nice name.”

“.....”

“Where is your hometown, master?”

“.....Hua Xia.”

“Wow, even your hometown has a nice name.”

“.....”

Ye Wu Chen was using mind, then the golden sword was already in his hands. He waved his arms gently to form a golden arc. He could feel unbelievable power contain in the sword, just relatively speaking, his own power was so weak that he couldn’t unleash the sword’s real power.

What on earth kind of sword this is...

“Nan Er, do you remember the name of the sword?” Ye Wu Chen asked.

“Let me think... uh, it’s Nan Huang sword, and it’s called..... Zhan Xing.” Nan Er said in a halting way as if with efforts recalled it from her blurry memories bit by bit.

“Nan Huang—Zhan Xing?!” Ye Wu Chen lift the sword, then stared at the word “南” sculpted on the sharp Nan Huang sword?

At the beginning of the world... Nan Huang and Bei Di.....

Suddenly those fragments of ancient memories resurfaced in Ye Wu Chen's mind once again. He can't help but think: this is Nan Huang sword, so is there a Bei Di sword as well? Nan Huang and Bei Di, were the first two people that existed in the world, and can even be said as the creator of the world.

".....They had been fighting with each other for many years with no results, but broke the chaotic world and then formed the Heaven, Earth, Humans, Gods and Devils..."

If it is real, then the world of Gods and Devils do really exist. The fairy tale Grandpa Chu told that day will also be real.

All was blank to Ye Wu Chen since he just came to Tian Chen Continent. Now that he had to start a new life, then he had to speed up his own pace. He somehow came to the continent and lost his past memories then obtain the mysterious Nan Huang sword..... What was waiting for him?

Another forest came into sight.

The sky became darker and darker as sunset came, and dark clouds all over the sky came early. Several hours later, when the curtain of the night fell, the dense forest looked terribly dark while Ye Wu Chen's heart cast a shadow.

What is this feeling of oppression? He touch his heart which was fiercely beating, fast and slow.

He couldn't help sped up because he didn't want to live in such a dense forest which had too many unknown dangers. According to the old man, walking through this small forest. there should a small town. But he doesn't know how far he still needed to go until he finally reach the capital city of Tian Long country.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 11

Chapter 11

As time went by in terrible silence, the shadow in Wu Chen's heart grew larger and larger. When a cold wind blows, it slowly blows away the black clouds in the sky. Little by little, the stars begun to appear in the sky, faint starlight drive away some darkness. After a while, the moonlight shone from the sky brighten the silent forest.

Ye Wu Chen look up into the sky. The full moon in the sky shines a dazzling light. He silently thought: It turned out that there is a moon in this world which was even bigger and brighter than that world..... Was it full moon? In his previous world, full moon represented family reunion, was it the same meaning here? Who were my family members, where were they?

He stopped his steps, and stared at the full moon as if his eyes were attracted. His heart started beating faster and faster...

Finally, he touched the place where his heart is, kneeling on the ground, then his whole body started to severely tremble. On his forehead, a thin but dense cold sweat quickly integrated together then those beads of sweat quickly dropped down from his forehead.

"Uh... ah..." Even though he gritted his teeth with great efforts, painful groans still came out from his mouth.

"Master! What is wrong with you master? What happened?" Nan Er who was stuck in the Nan Huang sword was anxiously calling him but didn't get any reply. Great pain had completely deprived his consciousness, vision, hearing, spirit were all messed up.

At the moment that he was looking at the full moon, a dozen of air in his body

started to disorderly flow, then started to strike fiercely as if those air was smashing his internal organs. There was some much weaker air trying to stop this but was easily scattered. He felt himself devastated just like a dozen of knives were cutting his inner organs.

Why.... Why even such a killing pain was so familiar..... He used to... often endured such torture?

In unbearable killing pain, his consciousness eventually wanders and gradually runs away from him. He heavily fell down onto the ground while touching the position of his heart.

It ended already..... even if it didn't even start?

He whispered, then his world finally turned all grey, not a light at all.

“Master! What’s wrong with you master... sob... master please wake up, please don’t scare Nan Er.”

“Sob... Master, please wake up now, please don’t make such a joke with Nan Er.”

“Poor Nan Er... I just found my master but he died now..... someone help Nan Er?”

No one could hear her calling in the quiet forest. Moonlight freely brightly shone on Wu Chen’s body that couldn’t see any signs of life. As time passed, the full moon begun to move to the west.

Eventually, the curtain of the night disappeared while the first sight of dawn appeared in the early morning. All living things became lively again—except Ye Wu Chen who had been resting the whole night as if he really died.

Ye Ning Xue was running all the way, she dared not rest or even stop. She was afraid that she couldn’t catch up with her brother if she stopped. On her way, she didn’t know how many times she tumbled, how many cuts she got on her hands, feet and face because of the sharp branch. But each time, she tried to stood up quickly and refrained from the pain and tears. She was wiping her tears while calling her brother’s name then kept running along her brother’s breath.

After running whole day and night, she had been scratched on her feet again

and again, and felt so painful that at last she couldn't feel any pain. She didn't eat anything or even drink a drop of water during the day and night. Eventually, the world in her eyes began to blur, grey, she couldn't see clearly. Her biggest hope right now was her brother's shadow coming into her sight.

At last, her consciousness turned blur, only her feet were still moving forward like a machine. She had no idea how long and how far she had been running, but the only thing which supported her was the obsession of catching up with her brother and not leaving him forever.

Flop!

She was tripped over by something and fell down on the ground once again, but the pain made her blurry conscious a bit cleared. She tried to use her small hands to forcibly hold up her body but instantly fell down again. With falling down, she saw what tripped her then her mind instantly turned blank

Because that was her brother who she had been catching, even though he lied on the ground and his face couldn't be seen, how could it be possible that she wasn't familiar with his clothes and hair?

She forgot the pain and exhaustion on her body due to the fear and she grit her teeth to stand up then threw herself onto him, shaking his body and calling with crying voice. "Brother, what happened to you, brother? Wake up please, this is Ning Xue!"

"Brother, please don't make me worry... brother, wake up please!"

"Waaa....!"

She finally could no longer suppress and made a helplessly and heartbrokenly cry.

Tian Lie town.

It was a remote and sparsely-populated region but a good place to live in seclusion or take refuge since wars wouldn't spread here, but it still unavoidably suffered from a shortage of goods. The native-born people were seldom willing to get out of here, because there was a powerful sky beast— Tian Lie bird living less than 10 miles away from the town. Because of the Tian Lie bird, the not too high mountain was called Tian Lie mountain, and the town was called Tian Lie

town.

Heaven Rank demonic beast, who could compete with it? except a few geniuses who reached Heaven Realm and God Realm. For ordinary human, the sky beast is like a guardian angel, they settled here confidently because they considered that the sky beast Tian Lie bird would guard them. Gradually, more and more people were in the town including all kinds of people.

In the morning, an old man in his 60s took a basket on his back and came to the forest located in the north of the town. He had a kind face and looked a bit like a sage but judging from his eyebrows seemed to be worrying about something.

“It has been 20 years, is Tian Long city still the same as it was?” He talked to himself and constantly swept bushes, searching for medicinal materials he needed.

At this moment, some sounds of bushes came from the distance, the old man frowned his eyebrows and was about to put his hand into the basket but instantly froze there.

A girl who had cuts on all her face and hands and even had contaminated half of her snow-white shoes with blood, was dragging an unconscious man and moving hard bit by bit.

She didn't know how long she had been dragging but with great efforts she just gathered her strength from her weak body, because she couldn't let him die and she had to save his life.

Seeing the old man, Ye Ye Ning Xue's glassy eyes finally flashed, and she knelt on the ground with her last bit of strength then said in a husky voice. "Grandpa... grandpa... please... save..... him..."

Taking a look at her brother's pale face, she finally collapsed on the floor.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 12

Chapter 12: Grandpa Long

The old man walked back to them quickly then put down the basket on his back. First he tested Ye Wu Chen's breath, then used his withered old hands to clench Ye Wu Chen's wrist. After a long while, he revealed a surprise on his face then sighed and shook his head. Finally, he put his attention on the young girl who would be unforgettable to people at first sight. His fingers touched her small wrist then suddenly his face turned astonished. "She has such strong stamina even though she is very young. She almost exhausts her vitality and potential..... If this happens, even god can't think of a way to save her. But now, she has already used up most of her vitality, hence, it is unknown when she will completely recover, sigh!"

"I will make an exception this time, for you—a surprising young girl."

The old man use one hand to grab Ye Wu Chen, and the other hand to grab Ye Ning Xue. His old shriveling body grabbed them easily then his body rose up from the floor and flew out of the forest.

Brother... Brother.....

She constantly called his name in a coma, because it was a big fear for her if she lost him.

It was he who took her hands and became her brother when she was in the most helpless moment and didn't know how to live. When she was rejected and hated by others, he touched her face and told her that he would protect her and wouldn't make her starve nor be bullied. He even didn't mind offending all people and taught those who bullied her a lesson.....

From then on, her world was not grey darkness any more but a person came

into her world. Because of his existence, she became loving to this world.

If she lost brother...

She slowly opened her eyes and whispered. "Brother, brother.....where is my brother?"

Feeling exhausted and weak, she even had difficulty In moving her eyes. A mild old voice came to her ears, "You woke up, kid? Get more sleep, you are too tired."

"Brother, I need my brother..."

"Your brother is right beside you, you can rest assure and sleep. If you don't recover, who will take care of your brother for you?"

Ning Xue eventually closed her sleepy eyes tightly then fell asleep again. She was really too tired.

The old man looked at her for a while with tender affection then whispered. "If I had a granddaughter like her, I would feel very happy. Even though she has a terrible scars on her face and weird white hair, she is so kind-hearted that I..... Sigh, forget it, now that I had made an exception, I won't mind helping her one more time. It is useless for me, as I am old enough."

He stretched out his two fingers, then touched the middle of Ye Ning Xue's eyebrows, then a flow of warm air was constantly pouring into her body from the old man's two fingers. When sleeping Ye Ning Xue's pale face turned red bit by bit, the old man began to smile then took back his fingers and looked at his two hands with strange expressions. "After all, she is just a young girl, and don't consume much of my vitality...In this case, she will recover when she wakes up, sigh..... It is really a bother for her."

Just...

His eyes fell on Ye Ning Xue's face again with full confusion and whispered. "It is so strange because this is my first time to see scars like this in my lifetime..... What can cause such scars?"

When dusk came, Ye Ning Xue opened her eyes once again. Although she still feel her body painful and limp, she almost recovered from exhaustion. She

subconsciously called “Brother” then stood up in a hurry and finally saw Ye Wu Chen lying beside her. But his face was still pale like paper and only had a weak breath. She could not say even one word, but just star at him with all her eyes. Tears gathered quickly in her eyes, she slightly sniffed nose to prevent her tears, but eventually the tears fell down.

The old curtain was opened, the old man took a small bowl and came in then smiled. “kid, you woke up. First drink the medicine in the bowl.” Ye Ning Xue seems to see hope, she hurriedly got down from the wooden bed then kneel to the old man. “Grandpa, please save my brother’s life, please, I beg you... I will do anything you ask me to do.”

After saying this, she was going to kowtow when the old man instantly pulled her up. He slightly sighed and smiled to her with much pity. “Kid, drink the medicine first, then we can discuss okay? By the way, you can call me grandpa Long.”

“Okay, thank you grandpa Long.” Ye Ning Xue nodded with huge gratitude and took the bowl of medicine porridge then drank it fast without using a spoon because she was too hungry. However, she then put down the bowl after drinking half of it. “Grandpa Long, I want to leave the rest to my brother.”

The old man’s face twitched then he took a long breath and said. “ Kid, sit down first, sit beside your brother.”

Ye Ning Xue followed his words but felt anxiety in her heart.

Just then, a young man’s lively voice came. “Grandpa, I am back!”

The curtain was opened and a handsome face came into sight. He was around 20 years old, with a heroic face but obvious arrogance and subtle melancholy. Even though it was just an isolated small town, either from imposing manner or temperament, ordinary people could never be compared with him. Seeing Ye Ning Xue, he was surprised at the beginning then asked with concern. “You woke up, little sister. Do you feel uncomfortable anywhere?”

Grandpa Long had told him everything about Ye Ning Xue, which not only touched the young man but also made him surprised. It was so rare to see such a girl who took feelings so important at such a young age.

Ye Ning Xue raised up her anxious small face and asked. "Big brother, you are.....?"

"He is my grandson, Long Zheng Yang. You can call him brother Long." The old man said mildly.

Long Zheng Yang's face flashed an obvious surprise, because his grandpa told his real name to a stranger easily.

"Long brother, glad to see you. I am Ning Xue, Ye Ning Xue. My brother gave me this name." Her eyes stopped at Ye Wu Chen's face because she expected he would wake up immediately.

"Your brother gave you this name... your blood brother or.....?" Long Zheng Yang asked with confusion.

Ye Ning Xue shook her head, "Only my brother is kind to me while others hated me. He plays with me, protect me and gave me a name."

Long Zheng Yang smiled. "Little sister, most men judge people by appearance, you can just ignore them. It appears that your brother is not an ordinary person. No wonder you don't even cherish your life just to save him. By the way, how come you got that scars on your face?"

Ye Ning Xue hesitated for a moment, because she had never thought of this question, so she had to only shook her head." I don't know either. I can't remember anything just like my brother..... Please save my brother..... please..."

Grandpa Long sighed in a low voice with a glittering eyes. "Yang Er, go check his body."

"Me? Long Zheng Yang was surprised. "But grandpa, I just know some basic medical skills....."

"Just try and you will know."

Long Zheng Yang seemed to understand something and became silent, he pressed his right palm on Ye Wu Chen's chest after a short hesitation. But instantly he took back his palm as if he was burnt by fire, with full of fear on his face.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 13

Chapter 13

“How..... how is this possible? Something is crashing inside his body, which totally made his internal organs chaotic and injured. However, there is another force struggling to protect him from being hurt. Maybe... maybe someone used black magic on him?”

“Yang Er, in your opinion, do you think he can still recover?” Grandpa Long asked.

Long Zheng Yang shook his head: “It is already an unbelievable miracle that he still keeps breathing. Totally recovery, no way! There is also the possibility that he may use up his last life breath.”

Ye Ning Xue’s suddenly couldn’t stand firm, her wide-opened eyes turned dark grey. She could only look at them with her dull wide-opened eyes and give an almost desperate whisper: “Save.....save my brother.....”

“I have never heard of a disease like this, let alone met it. Maybe there is a hope to save him if Xuenu who is called the greatest doctor in the world is willing to help.” Long Zheng Yang mused.

The greatest doctor in the world..... Xuenu?

Ye Ning Xue hurriedly asked because she seemed to grasp the last straw: “Where is she? I am going to find her, she can definitely save brother’s life, definitely!”

Grandpa Long gave a bitter smile and said: “Xuenu does master incomparable medical skills which has been recognized by people. Even if a learned doctor still feels ashamed when he or she meets her. It is said that as long as a person still keeps his/her last breath, she can make him/her recover within a month. But the

problem is that she has been living at Xuenu peak which is located in the northern of Cang Lan country all year round, and she only steps onto a continent once a year. What is worse, initiative patients have always been kept out of her house, even if you are a royal relatives of Cang Lan country. Little girl, even though you are willing to beg her, it is still very far away from Cang Lan country. According to your ability, we have no idea when you will get there, sigh! Even if you can support far distance, your brother can't."

Her last slim of hope was mercilessly extinguish. Ye Ning Xue moved her lip then clenched her small fists, trying to control her tears.

"Oh, grandpa. There is a method to continue his life. Spirit beasts, heavenly beasts, god beasts have strong vitality in their eggs which can extend a week or even a month life of dying people." He asked Grandpa Long with inquiry eyes.

Long grandpa shook his head: "I know there are a few eggs of Spirit Beasts and Heavenly Beasts, but it takes a month to go there and back, moreover..."

They are just strangers, is it really necessary to sacrifice those rare eggs to save this strange teenager?

Ye Ning Xue kept staring at them, her two small hands held her clothes tightly. Long Zheng Yang felt not at ease while being stared so he turned his face with pity: "I just went to Tian Lie mountain today and found it was laying eggs... sigh, if I was able to kill a Heavenly Beast, I would definitely help him."

Grandpa Long shook his head and patted Ye Ning Xue's thin shoulders: "Tian Lie bird is mild so it won't attack people initiatively. But once someone touches its eggs, he will be killed with cruel attack. Heavenly beasts are so strong that we can't resist against at all."

Ye Ning Xue kept silent then she raised her head after a short silence and gave a smile with gratitude: "Grandpa Long, brother Long, really thank you two. You are a very nice people. Not only you didnt hate me, but you also help my brother and I so much, I really appreciate it."

Grandpa Long shook his head then smiled: "It is not us who help you but yourself."

"I really appreciate your help. If there is a chance someday, I will definitely

reward you.”

“Oh? Little girl, if you really want to reward us, how about taking me as your blood grandpa?” Long grandpa smiled.

Ye Ning Xue was stunned there for a short moment after hearing this, let alone Long Zheng Yang who was even more astonished. Long Zheng Yang was about to say something when he was given a fierce glare from grandpa Long, he instantly turned his back and kept silent, but with complicated feelings in his eyes.

Ye Ning Xue knelt down to grandpa Long again, then called: “Grandpa.”

“Aye, okay, okay, get up, get up now. You are very weak now, so you are not allowed to kneel again. Although I have a blood granddaughter who is several years older than you, she is very mischievous and unruly. It has been several years since she visited me last time, but you are much more thoughtful than her!” Grandpa Long pulled her up and looked at her with a joyful and mild face. Ye Ning Xue was about to cry while her tears dimmed her eyes: “Finally.....I have more relatives.....except brother.....”

“Exactly. Even though your brother is gone, grandpa will be with you as well because you are such a lovable little girl.” Grandpa Long smiled. His words immediately made Ye Ning Xue face stiff. She looked down and turned her back to look at Ye Wu Chen who was still lying there, then said gently: “Grandpa and brother Long, can you allow me to leave brother and I alone?”

Grandpa Long nodded, giving a glance at Ye Ning Xue and Ye Wu Chen separately, then walked out with Long Zheng Yang. When they went far, Ye Ning Xue couldn’t control her tears any more, lying on Ye Wu Chen’s body, she controlled her crying voice and tears wet Ye Wu Chen’s clothes very fast.

Just walking out of the house, Long Zheng Yang couldn’t wait to say :”Grandpa, I consider that it is not proper to let her be your granddaughter prematurely. You just met her for the first time, what is more, grandpa is.....” Long grandpa waved his hands to stop him then said slowly: “did it ever occur to you, what will Ye Ning Xue do according to her personality if that young man dies?”

Long Zheng Yang took a moment then said at a low voice: “Will... commit a

suicide.”

“Exactly.” Grandpa Long showed a regret face: “I am trying to give her a reason to continue living. Yang Er, when you are at my age you will know that power, reputation, wealth and beauties are all unneeded and tasteless. What is the most precious is that there is a person with you and treat you sincerely. If there was a good girl like Ye Ning Xu at that time, I would definitely discard all..... When I really get insight into this, I am old and all is late. For such a good girl, how can I stand to watch her... alas!”

Long Zheng Yang was in a daze, he was thinking of something after hearing these.

Grandpa Long glanced at Long Zheng Yang then asked flatly: “Yang Er, how many years you have been here with me?”

“5 years.” Long Zheng Yang quickly answered.

“You have been living a hard life with me and earning your own living for 5 years, I know you have suffered a lot.”

Long Zheng Yang shook his head: “No! I Know grandpa does all these for me. During the 5 years, I really learn a lot and grow up bit by bit.”

Grandpa Long smiled then said: “During the 5 years, you have left here for 7 times. There is another person who knows this except your family members, are you willing to tell me who he/she is?”

Long Zhen Yang turned panic and peek at grandpa’s face, he dared not answer.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 14

Chapter 14: For Brother

“Alas, it has been 5 years. Your mind became calm and kind-hearted. But your calm heart apparently turns upset each time you come back. You..... still can’t get rid of the thing called ‘Love’.” Granpa Long sighed.

Long Zheng Yang revealed a miserable face. “I can’t forget her.....Since I saw her at first sight, I already couldn’t forget her. I secretly observe her without letting her know, each time I go to Tian Long town. Afterwards, I was not able to see her face, but I still felt satisfied if only I could hear her voice. As long as she accepts me, I will really give up everything as grandpa told me.”

“Hehe, that girl named Shui Meng Chan makes you so obsessed with her, she definitely is not an ordinary girl. I really would love to meet her if I didn’t escape from the secular world. Every hero fails to pull through beauty pass, you shouldn’t be blamed if you are addicted to love, but..... the wicked ways” Grandpa Long raised up his head and looked into the sky then gave a deep sigh.

Long Zheng Yang touched his forehead and took a deep breath, still with a miserable face, because he was addicted to a girl whom he shouldn’t fall in love with.

He came to his grandpa for 2 reasons: First, practice his heart, Second, escape from his feelings and try to forget. However, love is like a poison, during those 5 years, he not only failed to forget, but also felt more sad when he thought of this each time.

“Yang Er, you don’t have to stay here from tomorrow on. Go back. 5 years is enough. Staying longer will just waste your time and affect your prospect.”

Long Zheng Yang looked down and replied: “Ok... Just, I am just reluctant to leave you, grandpa.”

Granpa Long patted his shoulders and smiled. "If you worry about me, you just come back and visit me more often when you have time. Yang Er, now that you can't remove her from your mind, neither escape from your true feelings, then don't escape. An old saying tells: True man will never be tripped over by love..... Hehe, ridiculous. If a man can't protect his love and has to give it up, he will truly be a loser! Understand?"

Long Zheng Yang solemnly nodded his head. "I got it, grandpa. I never want to give up."

"Hehe, alright. I have another purpose to take Ye Ning Xue as blood granddaughter. If she arrives in Tian Long town someday, she will definitely be rejected due to her white hair and ugly face. This identity can protect her. Moreover, you are counted as her brother and should protect her from being bullied, or I will be unhappy."

Long Zheng Yang nodded his head again: "I will keep it in mind that I won't let anyone bully her because she is my sister."

Long grandpa nodded then reluctantly looked towards that house. "That teenager can't survive his life till tomorrow. After tomorrow, let Ye Ning Xue stay around me. When she wants to go out someday, I will let her start for Tian Long town."

His eyes turned deep..... According to his life experience and social status, why would he take someone as relatives easily? True reason of this even confused himself. It seemed that a voice was telling him that there was no better choice than this if he shortened distance between this strange girl and him.

But..... they still underestimated Ye Ning Xue's persistence.

That night, while Granpa Long and Long Zheng Yang were sleeping in Long Zheng Yang's house, Ye Ning Xue was keeping in company with Ye Ye Wu Chen. At midnight. A white small shadow opened the door of room secretly then ran towards west-- the direction of Tian Lie mountain.

She didn't make any sound, because she knew that she would be stop if she was found.

Just, she just could concern nothing except the only hope to save her brother.

If her brother was gone, she really didn't want to live alone.

Ye Ning Xue didn't notice that Ye Wu Chen's mouth slightly trembled just at the moment that Ye Ning Xue tried to secretly leave..... because he wanted to make a sound then call her back.

Although he was unconscious and couldn't control his body, but his mind is wide awake. Ye Ning Xue kept running after him at all risks, and was tripped over by his body, pulled him out of the forest with her feminine body for several hours then they were saved by grandpa Long..... He could hear every word they said and even every tiny sound. He even felt each drop of tears from Ye Ning Xue, which made him heartbroken.

Now, she was starting for Tian Lie mountain to steal the Tian Lie bird's egg, regardless of her life, just for him to live several weeks longer.

Chaotic air was still crashing in his body as if those chaotic air was about to crash his body into pieces. This was killing pain, but far beyond his heartache.

Xue Er.....He called her name silently, an indifferent heart was filled with a strange thing bit by bit.

The ground was totally bright when it was shined by a round moon hanging in the sky. Night was cold like water, silent but terrible.

How could it be possible that a 10 years old girl was not scared at all? Her heart turned painful when she recalled the scene that she was lying in her brother's arms and falling asleep comfortably the day before yesterday, so she began to speed up her steps.

When she came at the foot of the mountain, after running for an hour her whole body is wet due to sweat. She had to go up bit by bit after failing to find the mountain pass and tried not to make any sound, because all beasts in Tian Lie mountain were asleep, she would fall in danger if she wake them up.

The mountain was neither high nor steep. Most beasts had mild temperament. But no matter human beings nor beasts dared to get close to the top of the mountain, because it was the territory of the Tian Lie bird. Even though it was said that it wouldn't attack human beings, few people were bold enough to bet their lives to try. For beasts, they even dared not to get close due to the

Heavenly Beast's vigor.

Sharp rocks and tall or short brambles scratched on Ye Ning Xue's face and left a scar. She tried hard to hold her surging tears in her eyes even though she felt pain. Then she climbed up step by step and she wouldn't allow herself to step back at all.

The God of Fortune seems to blessed her, because she didn't alarmed or encounter one beast on her way up. She felt exhausted when she eventually get to the top of the mountain, but she desperately still held her heavy breath for fear of startling something.

Ye Ning Xue hid herself behind a big stone and secretly watched everything at the mountain top. It was flat and large at the mountain top.

A big bird nest located in the middle of the mountain top, however there wasn't a giant bird in the nest as she imagined but a white round ball that reflected strange light under the moon.

Ye Ning Xue's heart started to beat quickly and she slowly came out then quietly walked to the bird's nest. Then she gently put that white egg into her arms, and finally gave a satisfied smile on her face.

Just then, an angry bird screaming came from the sky. Suddenly, a shadow covered the moonlight. Ye Ning Xue hugs the Heavenly Beast's egg more tightly since it was the only hope to save brother. Then she looked up to the sky but was ghastly pale with fear.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 15

Chapter 15: Heavenly Beast's Egg

A huge white bird was flapping its wings. It had a 5 meters long body and all the white feathers on its body stood erect. Its feathers looks like a clusters of white flames under the moonlight. The white bird has a sharp claws like hooks and flashed cold light, glaring at her and even screaming with warnings and anger.

Ye Ning Xue trembles while staring at it with fear, then held the white egg and stepped back but she never put down the egg.

The Tian Lie bird's screams became sharper and sharper, it had a mild temperament and never attacked people. Even if its patience had been hit by this little human, it still gave her 3 warnings. After the 3 warnings, Ye Ning Xue just held the egg more tightly and tried to hit the bottom line of its patience.

"Please..... Give this egg to me, my brother needs it, I can't lose my brother." Ye Ning Xue was begging while she was stepping back, she had deeper persistence besides fear.

"My name is Ye Ning Xue..... I promise to visit you more often and play with you..... I will bring delicious food to you as well..... Would you please give it to me..... I really need it badly."

"I know it is your baby..... I am quite selfish person but I can't lose my brother. Would you please give it to me, please....."

Heavenly Beast had very high intelligence but generally speaking, it couldn't understand the human language. Even if it could understand, how could it be possible for it to gives its baby to a human?

Eventually, after 5 warnings, its patience had worn out. After a sharp cry, it

dived down then one of its claws that flashed cold light was going to scratch Ye Ning Xue's face, the other claw was grabbing the egg in Ye Ning Xue's arms.

Ye Ning Xue gave a frightful shout and closed her terrified eyes then subconsciously hugs the egg in her arms more tightly. The Tian Lie bird came to her in the blink of an eye, it was just its strong strength could almost tear down her body. Ye Ning Xue shouted desperately. "No..... I have to save my brother, I won't let him leave me....."

The Tian Lie bird's sharp claws which seemed to be able to scratch the space scratched Ye Ning Xue's face and stopped just on her scars that ruined her beauty. In just a second, Ye Ning Xue's body shined with dazzling white light, her scars faded in white light and finally disappeared then shows an unbelievable exquisite face, from her closed eyes, eyelashes, nose, lips to her skin that was even much more tender than snow, all were flawless— maybe perfect was not enough to express her beauty. With all of her organs' cooperation, the 10 years old girl release a breathtaking beauty as if the god poured all his efforts onto this small face. Although those light scars that were cut by brambles, amazingly they didn't destroy her amazing perfect beauty. On the contrary, they made people have affection for her.

Maybe the god envied her face, so he totally destroyed her beauty with two scars but now kindly took them back.

At the moment that the scars fades away, dazzling white light covered the whole mountain top. A miserable bird screaming broke the silence, which could even be heard clearly by the people in the Tian Lie town which was 10 miles away, and woke up many sleeping residents.

This powerful heavenly beast which frightened both human beings and beasts and was only 1 rank lower than the highest rank [God Rank], was swallowed bit by bit by the [White Light]. In just several seconds, its huge body was totally swallowed and turned into flying ashes, nothing else left. When the [White Light] fades away, Ye Ning Xue finally fell down on the ground and passed out with her eyes closed, but her hands still held that egg tightly. However, those two disappeared big scars turned up on her face once again, from light to deep till they recovered as they were.

“Brother...”

The unconscious Ye Ning Xue was trembling while she was sleep talking then she subconsciously tightened her hands for fear of losing the egg that could save her brother.

In the early morning, when the dawn was coming, Ye Ning Xue finally woke up while her body was all wet due to the dew. The first thing she did when she woke up was to hug the egg that was even more precious than her life more tightly. After this, she became slightly relaxed then looked around for a moment nervously but she didn't find that big white bird. She was confused for a while and she could only recall that it suddenly rushed at her..... then she was too scared and passed out...

She stopped recalling this and didn't dare to stay longer. Thus she stood up with great efforts then ran down the mountain in a hurry because the longer she stayed, the more her brother was in danger.

In the morning, it was all bright. Grandpa Long stretched himself and walked out of house then said to Long Zheng Yang behind him. “Yang Er, you can leave after breakfast. Remember to dress up yourself in case someone identifies you.”

“Okay. By the way, did you hear a strange sound at midnight grandpa?” Long Zheng Yang asked with confusion.

Grandpa Long nodded his head. “If I am not wrong, it should be the Tian Lie bird's screaming, or someone offends it..... I will go to see my new granddaughter now.”

Creak.....

The Old wooden door was pushed out, Ye Ning Xue was standing outside with exhausted body. Her white hair were all messed up with sand and leaves, while her body was all wet with either sweat or dew and a few more pitiful scratches were added on her face. She stretched out her hands trembling because she was so exhausted and raised up that White Egg then moved her lips, but it was all black in front of her eyes before she was about to say something, eventually she fell down to the ground.

Grandpa Long just realized from the surprise and he instantly held her then

took the white egg but found she passed out once again. For him, in only 2 days, she had no idea of how many times she had been unconscious.

An astonish voice came from behind grandpa Long. "That is... Tian Lie bird's egg, I just saw it yesterday, this...she..."

Grandpa Long suddenly felt grieved in his eyes, he sighed. "Silly kid, what a silly kid!"

He put the egg into Long Zheng Yang's hands. "Yang Er, you know what to do. Promise you won't screw up the little girl's efforts."

"I know." Long Zheng Yang took the egg then hurriedly walked into house.

Half an hour later, Long Zheng Yang took a small bowl of soup into Ye Wu Chen's room. Grandpa Long was walking up and down tensely with two hands tied behind him. He instantly asked when he saw Long Zheng Yang coming.

"Everything went well?"

Long Zheng Yang wiped the sweat from his forehead. "All the innate vital essence coming from that egg has been poured into him. If he is still alive, his life can be extended to half a month."

Heavenly Star - Chapter 16

Chapter 16: Recovery

Ye Wu Chen was lying together with Ye Ning Xue on the same bed, his face remained serene. Grandpa Long said in a low voice. "Heavenly Beast's Egg has a real innate vital essence, which largely increases the common people's development and extends dying people's life to dozens of days. Young man, Ye Ning Xue got it from the Heavenly Beast the Tian Lie bird, for you, she even throws her life. For your last 10 days of life, you can't disappoint her."

Even though Grandpa Long spoke in a very low voice, he still woke up the nervous Ye Ning Xue. She opened her eyes then slowly sat up and stared at Ye Wu Chen with all her eyes. Grandpa Long suddenly rush, and he hurriedly put down the bowl then said with care. "My good girl, grandpa begs you to have more rest just for your weak body."

Ye Ning Xue slightly shook her head and gave a smile on her pale face. "I will be fine, I dare not sleep..... I am worried that I won't see my brother if I sleep too much."

"....."

"Grandpa, I have heard everything you said just now. That egg can really save my brother's life?" Ye Ning Xue pointed to the bowl.

"yeah, he should... he must recover after drinking this."

"Then..... Can I feed him?"

Grandpa Long was a bit surprised then passed the bowl and spoon to Ye Ning Xue with a smile.

The liquid in the bowl was odorless and colorless just like water. Ye Ning Xue

put a small spoon of medicine in front of Ye Wu Chen and slowly lean the spoon. But the unconscious Ye Wu Chen wasn't able to drink and swallow, so the medicine falls one drop at a time then gathered a flow of water and fell down from his mouth. Even she had tried twice, but not too much flew into his mouth.

Ye Ning Xue was so anxious that she almost cried out, because every drop of medicine was to save her brother's life.

She put down the spoon, picked up the small bowl then took a sip and lean down to make his mouth open with her hands. And then she fed him mouth to mouth, the medicine flows into Ye Wu Chen's mouth bit by bit, she gently blows to let the medicine slowly flow into Ye Wu Chen's body.

Raising her head up, she looked at him with a silly smile. "Brother, you said you will protect me forever... When you aren't able to protect me, let me protect you then."

Long Zheng Yang turned his back and left quietly. Grandpa Long quietly stood up and walked out of the house as well.

Standing in the courtyard, Long Zheng Yang was looking up into sky, not knowing what he was looking at. Grandpa Long walked beside him and asked. "What are you thinking?"

"I guess... Compared with killing and lighting fire, betraying such a girl will be the greatest sin, even if she is only 10 years old."

Long Zheng Yang sighed with emotion.

"Hehe, don't worry about it. Everything happens because of a reason. If that young man isn't nice to Ye Ning Xue, Ye Ning Xue won't do that for him either. Yang Er, keep in mind that if you want someone to treat you with all her sincere heart, first of all, you should treat her that way."

Long Zheng Yang nodded his head.

"But, grandpa, is she really 10 years old?"

".....You asked a good question. Is she really 10?" Grandpa Long shook his head, he himself even didn't know what he was confused at.

In the dark world, he was listening to everything outside quietly. At the same

time, a familiar distant voice seemed to occur in his deep consciousness.....

“.....If we want to develop our power, we must have not only enough spirit but also enough heart. Spirit, means the Spirit of Heaven and Earth which our body can spontaneously absorb from the Heaven and Earth and increases every minute and every second, it can even be poured into immediately. While Heart means the Mind, you have to experience Life, Death, Hope and Faith. When you get enough spirit and heart, your power will definitely develops.”

Life, death, hope and faith.....

Wasn't this exactly what he was experiencing during the past one day and two nights? He had been lingering at the edge of death, one hope after another, obsession of keeping his last breath for Ye Ning Xue..... Did this mean that he had enough experience of mind, now what was lack of..... was just so-called spirit?

A kind of soft warmth with coolness flowed from his mouth into his body. With new breath flowing in, those breath that was protecting his inner organs became stronger, while those dozens of crashing breath weakened.

With the cool breath flowing bit by bit into his body, the protecting breath became thicker while the chaotic breath became mild, till it hid silently somewhere in his body. Just then, he felt a string was broken in his heart. Around him, countless heaven and earth essence was surging into his body and fixing every abnormality in his body.

Was this—-spirit?

Spirit given by Ye Ning Xue?

Now, his ability reached the second level of [Wu Chen Spell]? If he wanted to reach third level, it meant more essence from heaven and earth should be absorbed?

Tears had been blurring Ye Ning Xue's eyes, due to this, she didn't even notice that Ye Wu Chen's face began to recover the glow of health, even his breath recovered to normal and became more smooth.

The disordered inner organs which were crashed by the chaotic breath recovered immediately, which made him get rid of the pain. What was more,

those mysterious breath had increased many times. When he opened his eyes, he stretched his arms then tightly hugged Ye Ning Xue while they were still doing mouth to mouth.

Ye Ning Xue's eyes widened then she threw herself in Ye Wu Chen's arms heavily and burst into tears as if she was going to release all fright, grievance, pain and despair she had experienced.

Her crying made Grandpa Long and Long Zheng Yang face change color suddenly, since they thought Ye Wu Chen lost his last breath. When they walked into room in a hurry and pulled open curtain, only to find a smiling young man who was lying in the bed now stand in front of them. There wasn't any sign of weakness on his face or body after a heavy disease. He was holding Ye Ning Xue who was crying on his shoulders.

Ye Wu Chen smiled to them. "Grandpa Long, Brother Long. I won't speak more appreciative words for your great kindness, but I— Ye Wu Chen must return a favor to you someday."

Right now, they wouldn't really take Ye Wu Chen's promise seriously. But several years later, they would know that it was great wealth even glory to get a promise from Ye Wu Chen.

"Young man, you...?" Grandpa Long asked with a bit of surprise.

"I have recovered completely, thank you for saving my life." Ye Wu Chen answered smilingly.

"Completely..... recovered?" Grandpa Long almost couldn't believe his ears, but when he realized that Ye Wu Chen was not an ordinary person after all, he soon continued with smiles. "You don't need to thank us. If you have to thank someone, then it should be your sister. She neglects everything in order to save your life."

Heavenly Star - Chapter 17

Who hurt you, I will make him regret it

At this time he began to seriously look at the boy in front of him, the boy is clearly amazing. His looks are excessively handsome, and perhaps can even be described as dramatic. He seems to release an aura of an elegant and detached personality, even if thousands of people stood next to him, he would transcend all of them. With a faint smile on his face, his eyes looks at the world as if it were dull, only when looking at the girl in his arms will they melt and completely soften.

His voice seems too peaceful, a tone of voice that is similarly used by beings with supreme power, though it seems to be suppressed to hide it from people.

Grandpa Long thought in his mind. It seems this person is definitely not normal, he must be a successor of an influential family. This sense of superiority and switching between characters is definitely not what a small family can develop.

Grandpa Long couldn't help and be curious about this person's story all the more.

Grandpa Long's eyes fell on his left hand holding Ningxue, when his line of sight saw the ring, the pupils of his eyes contracted fiercely, but quickly reverted to normal.

Ye Wu Chen saw the instant of the change in grandpa long's eyes and the emotion within them, he directed a smile at grandpa long, and the corner of his eyes glanced thoughtfully at the black ring in his left hand.

"Xue'er don't cry anymore or everyone's going to laugh at you". Ye Wu Chen lightly shakes Ningxue's body as if coaxing a newborn baby.

"I.... I wasn't crying, I'm just so happy....." Ye Ning Xue suppressed her cries,

her arms tightly wrapped around his neck unwilling to let go of him.

Long Zheng Yang finally said: “Brother Ye, are you really all right?, but the wounds on your internal organs before was....”

If it was an ordinary person the damage on the internal organs already spelled certain death, the fact that he did not die can already be considered a miracle, but now he is standing here safe and sound.... It’s simply unimaginable. The strong innate spiritual aura of the Tian Lie Bird’s egg should only be sufficient to allow him to survive for some time, there should not be such a magical effect.

Ye Wu Chen smiled and nodded: “my injuries are far less serious than you imagined, I practice cultivation exercises which can automatically restore injuries moreover during these past two days, even though I could not move my body, I have been always awake. I could hear everything you guys said.”

Ye Wu Chen was really healed, and there were no traces of injury on his upper and lower body. But more than a dozen air is hidden in his body, lying dormant as if it were a sleeping time bomb which threatens his life, he does not know when it will wake up.

Long Zhang Yeng frowned slightly with look of confusion on his face.

“Your Kindness to me and Xue’er, Ye Wu Chen will always keep in mind. We have given you a lot of trouble during these past two days, and now I can’t bear to continue disturbing you guys any longer.” Said Ye Wu Chen as he parted with Xue’er.

Grandpa Long looked at him for a few minutes, seeing as he did not want to stay longer, said: in that case, this old man will not keep you, but are you sure that your body has recovered? Don’t waste Ye Ningxue’s efforts.

“Grandpa Long thank you for your concerns, but I really have no problems now.” He looked down and patted Ye Ning Xue’s back softly: “Xue’er , time for us to leave, say goodbye to Grandpa and Brother Long.”

Ye Ning Xue obeyed and waved with sadness on her face: “Grandpa Long and Brother Long, thank you for helping brother and Xue’er, Xue’er will always think of you, and get brother to take Xue’er to visit you often.

Grandpa Long laughed heartily and said “your words make this grandfather feel really great at doing good” while waving goodbye.

Nodding slightly to them Ye Wu Chen no longer stayed and went out, and soon, Ye Ning Xue’s shouts was heard from behind the door “goodbye grandpa” sounding far away.

“Why is he in such a hurry, even if his body is already well, little sister Xue’er also needs to be nursed back to health. But is his body really okay? I am still bewildered about that” Long Zheng Yang exclaimed.

Grandpa Long was silent, then said to himself: “No... Fifteen years ago I've seen his grandson, when he was five years old, his bones were strong and thick, but his appearance and age seems wrong, strange.”

“Grandpa, you’ve seen that person before?” asked Long Zheng Yang

Grandpa Long shook his head and said meaningfully “Son, to have had the opportunity to make friends with this man will be very helpful to you.”

Long Zhen Yang nodded and murmured “Strange, why do I feel as if I’ve seen this person before”

.....

“Brother , you said you would protect Xue’er for a lifetime.”

“En.”

“Then do not leave Xue’er alone ok?...”

“En!”

As he heard the gurgling sound of water Ye Wu Chen stopped, and put Ye Ning Xue on top of a smooth rock in a stream, then wiped gently the line of tears on her face with a finger, then gently stroked the cuts on her face, and whispered: “Does it hurt?”

“No – it doesn’t hurt at all.”

Ye Wu Chen tapped her small nose and his eyes turned sour, he smiled and said: “Because of me, Xue’er had to suffer so much pain, Even then I know Xue’er will not blame me Your brother swears to you, wherever you go in

the future, your brother will never leave Xue'er again.

Ye Ning Xue forced a nod , her brows bent a bit, and laughed shallowly. In Ye Wu Chen's eyes the damage that the scars and cuts left on her face was absent, in his eyes her face was a dazzling beauty.

He traced his fingers across every red scar on her face, the traces of each wounds was completely erased without a trace, as if the wounds weren't wounds at all, but just trails of a color. He used the power of "Wu Chen Spell" on her face, on the wounds on her hands, then took her in his arms, carefully removing the lovely pair of white shoes, which made Ning xue bear intense pain.

Less than half of the white socks she was wearing was red, one can only imagine the pain she was enduring after running around for two days. Ye Wu Chen felt sorry for her and did not dare to take of her socks, he held her little feet and tapped lightly, the wounds on her feet was completely repaired.

"Oh, Brother, I don't feel pain anymore" said a surprised Ye Ning Xue. Ye Ning Xue has been watching him more intently, her eyes full of obsession and attachment.

As he removed her two little socks, Ye Wu Chen whispered: "Who let you get hurt, I will make him regret it." His voice was too low and Xue'er did not hear what he said. People only cherished something after they've lost it, and he was truly happy that he did not lose Xue'er.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 18

Shui Meng Chan (I)

Ye Wu Chen put his hands on Ning Xue's chest trying to untie her clothes. Against the girl's instincts, Ning Xue's eyes suddenly filled with panic, she subconsciously placed her hands to cover her chest. Ye Wu Chen gently peeled of her hand, smiled and said: "Xue'er makes big brother look bad."

Ning Xue's skin casted a layer of a soft pink color. This girl who only looked like 10 years old should not have reacted like this, but she still obeyed and removed her hands with her eyes tightly shut.

As he fully removed her dress, a snow white body carved like a piece of jade completely appeared in front of him. A young and immature body unexpectedly released an aura of astonishing charm, beautiful enough to suck men's souls. Ye Wu Chen's mind turned into a mess, he quickly looked away, breathing lightly, he calmed his mind until it was calm as water and only then did he look at her body again. He meticulously began to examine every part of Ning Xue's body, and his face began to show a puzzled expression.

There were so many wounds on her face, hands and feet but why didn't her body sustain any injuries?

And he suddenly remembered Ning Xue's tiny feet was covered with abrasions but there were no signs of wear and tear on her socks and shoes.

Ye Wu Chen took Ning xue's white dress, and found that it did not have any scratches, he rapidly stroked the dress using his fingers while using his power to try and slash it, and was surprised to see the dress undamaged.

What kind of material was used to make this dress?

Ning Xue picked up the dress and came to the brook, using the clear water, she started washing away the red marks on her feet. Every wound on her body, every

ounce of pain she suffered, every bit of blood that she spilled, Ye Wu Chen knew it was all for him.

“Xue’er, you are my only flaw.” He softly whispered in her ear. After erasing the traces of water on her feet, Ning Xue started to gently put her clothes on one by one.

Ning Xue lightly blinked her eyes a few times, remembering the words whispered to her ear, although she did not fully understand the meaning behind this sentence, she could not help but involuntarily engrave these words into her heart, because this short sentence continuously let her feel happiness in her heart.

“Xue’er, Let’s go”

He did not pull Ning Xue’s hand. But instead carried her in his arms, moving slowly forward, like a father holding his daughter, she was still tired from the stress of these past few days, so how would he be willing to let her get tired.

His emaciated body, to Ning Xue, was undoubtedly where she could find the warmest embrace, as she fell on his shoulder, her eyes closed comfortably and soon she was sleepy.

“Brother, we should come back and visit often to see Grandpa and Brother Long, they are good because they saved brother and Xue’er.” Said Ning Xue with her eyes closed, whispering dreamily.

“En, we will often come to visit Grandpa Long, because he is our savior. But you will be seeing your brother long quite soon. And also, you can always think of Grandpa Long but, don’t think about your Brother Long”. Says Ye Wu Chen.

“Ah... but why?” Xue’er asked curiously.

Ye Wu Chen was silent for a while, and said: “The most ruthless emperor in his later years, Grandpa Long, found a place to live in that was perfectly suited to his age and position, but it is not suited to your brother long, 5 years of training can only achieve the opposite result. If one wants to become a true emperor, then he must not do it unscrupulously, his goal must be to remove evil and to help the weak, to be a hero filled with chivalry, unafraid of death, not restrained by the charm of material rewards nor to become famous, such things will only make

him a pawn of an ambitious person, and will prevent him from becoming a true emperor. If he wants to become an emperor, he must first become a hero, fierce and ambitious, such a hero will ignore his real family, we should not care for such a false family, unless he really is willing to give up the world for one person.”

Ning xue has already fallen asleep in his arms, Ye Wu Chen was more like talking to himself.

At this time he heard the brisk sound of hooves behind him, then a hearty young man shouted “Brother!”.

“Brother Long, how are you?”

“hahaha, coincidentally im also on a trip back to Tian Long City, the city is still a long way ahead, why don’t you ride a horse?. Although Brother Ye is extraordinary, but you cannot let little sister suffer.” Long Zheng Yang was riding a yellow horse, and the side of the yellow horse was a white horse.he pulled the reins and patted the side of the horse, the horse neighed softly and went to Ye Wu Chen’s side.

Ye Wu Chen laughed and said: “many thanks for your kindness brother long” as he accepted brother long’s invitation.

Ye Wu Chen jumped on the horse , his feet was as light as a feather and looked elegant as if they were magically dancing, although he had never ridden a horse, he found it extremely simple to maintain his balance while riding on horseback. Long Zhang Yeng’s eyes flashed with admiration and wonder for an instant, then he laughed “Xue’er is my half-sister, you are her brother, then naturally you are my half -brother, there is no need for thanks between brothers.”

Ye Wu Chen deliberately closed his heart to those words, because he knew the meaning behind the few sentences that were said to him.

The white horse and the yellow horse started traveling side by side towards the south.

10 days later at Tian Long City.

Even after passing through numerous small towns during the past 10 days, not a single one of them can match the prosperity in Tian Long City. During this time Ye Wu Chen and Long Zheng Yang, became even more familiar with each other

until they were just like real brothers. During these past 10 days Long Zheng Yang kept beating around the bush, he wanted to know Ye Wu Chen's true origin and what his reason was for coming to Tian Long City. His mind could not help but wonder what kind of secret he was hiding under that calm appearance of his.

They were walking in the street and both of them were handsome, which caused girls to often look at them. And some self-conscious people changed color out of shock. Xue'er was curious and was looking around everywhere with her eyes filled with splendor. But the surrounding people ignored her strange looks.

After entering Tian Long City, Long Zheng Yang looked powerful and free, but underneath looked a bit preoccupied. Ye Wu Chen pretended he didn't notice that and instead was looking everywhere, noting every building he could see. Up ahead, they were getting closer to the city palace. The streets were getting crowded with pedestrians and peddlers.

Although Long Zheng Yang was distracted, his feet seemed to move subconsciously, turning right and left. Going to a place as if it were his heart's desire. Finally, He stopped, he lifted his head and looked forward.

House of Dreams and Smoke. Ye Wu Chen glanced at the piece of red plaque to remember the name. Then half-jokingly said: "Is Brother Long really the type of person to spend his time in a brothel?"

Long Zheng Yang seemed as if he did not hear him and stared at brothel for long while, suddenly his faced flashed with sadness then finally filled with ridicule, and said "Brother Ye wait here for a moment, this brother will be right back." He did not wait for Ye Wu Chen to respond.

He hurried his footsteps and went inside.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 19

Shui Meng Chan (II)

Ning Xue curiously asked: "Brother, What is Brother Long going to do?"

"He went to find a seductress." Ye Wu Chen smiled and said.

"Seductress... what's that?" Ning Xue turned her face upwards and asked.

"A smile from a seductress can start a deadly war, a gesture from her can melt a steel like man into mud, a seductress is a truly terrible person. If a man is not strong enough, she will lead him into all kinds of catastrophe, but if a man is strong enough, then a seductress will let him enjoy her collection." A light smile appeared on the corner of Ye Wu Chen's lips, she did not know what he was thinking.

Crowds of people passed by continuously and Ning Xue's white hair attracted most people's eyes, but after seeing the young girl's face, they quickly looked away as if they were scared of catching a plague, and their faces showed obvious expressions of disgust.

Ye Wu Chen coldly glanced around, and gently picked her, leaning her on his arms, he asked: "Xue'er, most of ordinary people judge others by their appearances, because of that many people will hate you because of your face, are you scared?"

Ning Xue shook her head, put her arms around his neck and sweetly said: "As long as my brother doesn't hate me or leave me, I don't care if others hate me."

A light smile appeared on Ye Wu Chen's lips: "Never in my life, nor in Xue'er's life, will I hate Xue'er, just like Xue'er will never hate brother right?"

Ning Xue nodded, her eyebrows bent, and very seriously she said: "Xue'er will never hate her brother."

Ye Wu Chen smiled and nodded, his eyes inadvertently glanced past the crowd, suddenly his gaze collided with a very sharp gaze.

It was a boy around 16 or 17 years old, plainly dressed, he had a handsome figure, his hair was a little messy but his face was very cold and stiff, and his gaze felt as sharp as a blade edge. His eyes concealed hatred, indifference, and vigilance as if there was no one he could trust.

At this time, a middle aged woman he was supporting staggered forward slowly. She was only 40 years old but most of her hair was turning grey which made her look 10 years older than her actual age. The young man carefully held her. Ye Wu Chen faintly heard the middle woman's constant nagging: "... Tian Long City..... I have finally returned to Tian Long City"

The young man's eyes swept across Ye Wu Chen and Ye Ning Xue's face for half a moment, it looks as though as long they were in his gaze, no people could escape from his eyes. It seems this young man was constantly on high alert.

Watching him go back, Ye Wu Chen whispered thoughtfully "is this a lone wolf or an eagle?"

.....

On the top floor in the house of smoke and dreams, Long Zheng Yang was in a room filled with hazy aroma, on top of a circular table was several cups of steaming fragrant tea, in front him was a translucent pink veil, the soundproofing here was exceptional, no street noise from the outside could be heard. In the silence, Long Zheng Yang looked slightly uneasy, making no sound lest should he alert someone.

Finally, light appeared from the pink veil and he heard the soothing sounds of footsteps, a shadow of a woman appeared behind the veil. gracefully walking between the wind and the willow, and although you cannot see her face, her figure alone is enough to enchant normal men.

Long Zhen Yang's breathing cramped up, although it has been a year, this figure appeared in his dreams in almost every night, how could he forget it?

He took a small sip from the cup of tea to ease his emotions, then he stood up and calmly said: "Meng Chan... we have not seen each other for a year, you... ..

are you well?”

The graceful figure behind the veil sat down, the wind carried a soft voice: “Meng Chan is all right, thank you for your concern your highness. I see that after 5 years of refining his mind, your royal highness Prince Edward has returned to Tian Long City.”

Long Zheng Yang bitterly laughed: “Meng Chan, you can call me Yang’er like always, we’ve already known each other for so long, the title of prince is too ... distant....”

“Meng Chan is just an ordinary woman, how can I disrespect his royal highness the prince.” Said Shui Meng Chan her voice was like a curling breeze that could swing people’s hearts.

“Ordinary... .. If you are ordinary, all the other women in the world are sticks and dry leaves.

Long Zheng Yang thought silently, he looked senselessly at the fairy’s shadow on the other side of the veil: “Meng Chan knows I did not conceal anything to return, It must have been when I stepped into Tian Long City that she found me, Shui Meng Chan must have the same worries as me.”

After a brief silence, Shui Meng Chan sounded helpless and sighed with melancholy: “ Your Royal Highness Prince Edward is honored as the crown prince, you are supposed to bring peace and prosperity to the nation, and not to deal with worldly affairs, Meng Chan did not dare to dream to harm the crown prince. And so this love affair should stop. His Royal Highness Prince Edward can only visit Meng Chan every full moon, and Meng Chan would be thankful, Your Majesty can also return my gratitude.”

This is the first time Shui Meng Chan straightforwardly denied Long Zheng Yang and also the first time she asked him to leave. Even after 5 years of refining his mind, today, she would not even give him a glimmer of hope. Long Zheng Yang was struck a blow, he was slightly pale as he slowly stood up and said in a lonely voice: “In that case, Zheng Yang will leave.... Meng Chan its been more than five years since I saw you, will you let me see you again as I saw you that day?”

“Meng Chan is without freedom to act independently, your highness Prince

Edward please return, do not make your friends wait too long.” Meng Chan’s faint voice said. She was referring to Ye Wu Chen and Ye Ning Xue.

Long Zheng Yang stayed for a long time, after a while he finally turned away and left.

Outside of the room, he leaned on the door and laughed loudly: “Prince.... What kind of prince am i? what can I do with wealth? How can I be all powerful, when I cannot even see my own woman’s face... ... why her alone, why her alone AH!” Long Zheng Yang walked out of the house of smoke and dreams looking like a different person.

Ye Wu Chen patted him on the shoulder and quietly said: “want to drink?”

“Drink alcohol?” Long Zheng Yang nodded, his lips pulling upward for a moment, then he asked what are you laughing at? As he took Ye Wu Chen to the opposite restaurant.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 20

Southern Emperor Sect

In a closed room, a table was filled with the color of savory fragrance from a variety of dishes. Long Zheng Yang and Ye Wu Chen were seated opposite of each other, and Ningxue was sitting beside Wu Chen, her mouth was almost overflowing with saliva while she looked at the delicacies on the table, and sometimes she was secretly looking at her brother. In the sealed area she only ate fruits and barbecue, and on the way to Tian Long City they mostly ate rations, when she saw all of these dishes that she had not seen before, she wanted to reach for the dishes and greedily eat all of them.

Long Zheng Yang was holding a wine cup in one hand and a bottle of wine in the other, drinking and skillfully pouring for himself every time the cup was empty, he didn't force Ye Wu Chen to accompany him in drinking and only poured for himself, he seemed like he was truly miserable and wanted to vent off his feelings using wine. Ye Wu Chen did not speak, he picked up Ningxue's bowl, giving her each of every dish, until the bowl was slowly filled, and then put the bowl in front of the small Ningxue: "Xue'er, eat fast."

"En... Im really hungry" Ningxue has endured for a long time and finally her saliva fell out, she quickly picked up her chopsticks and ate eagerly.

After drinking another cup of wine, Long Zheng Yang's eyes became even more blurred, he put his glass down heavily and absent-mindedly said: Brother Ye, I love her, am I right or wrong?

"Liking a person is neither right nor wrong." Ye Wu Chen replied.

"neither right nor wrong.... But why does the emperor like her AH!" the suffering Long Zheng Yang said, he could not help clenching his hands which almost broke the glass he was holding.

Ye Wu Chen filled Ningxue's bowl again and quietly said: "Brother Long, you're drunk"

"Drunk.... I really want to be drunk, I want to always be drunk, being drunk will remove all of my worries. Every time I faced her I thought I was ready, but every time I see her I will realize that I have failed once again. Even after 5 years of refining my heart and exercising my mind, I can't forget her. "Brother Yu, you are not an ordinary person, with your talent, don't tell me that you really can't guess my identity?"

Ye Wu Chen laughed. "I know your identity, after all I am not a man of this world, your identity is not important to me, even if you're a crown prince or an ordinary civilian, I just need to know that you saved my and ningxue's lives, and besides saying "your royal highness prince Edward" is longer and more distant than saying "Brother Long" which is more familiar.

Long Zheng Yang laughed. "if you were an ordinary person, saying such a thing can really be regarded as an offense. But you are entitled to say these things.... Some years ago, An old sword deity used his ability to save the entire city of Long Cheng, then disappeared afterwards, his ability was so great that he didn't even put the world in his eyes, even my father needed to show courtesy seven times to meet with him. You are a descendant of that old sword deity, in the future, you will also obtain the qualifications to rule the world and look down upon our royal family."

Ye Wu Chen smiled and didn't comment. He naturally knew Long Zheng Yang's status and reasons. Because of the black ring of the old deity was on his finger. Grandpa Long and Long Zheng Yang considered him to be a true descendant of the old deity. The sword deity's name was known by everyone in the entire tian chen continent, his existence was like he came from the legends told across the Tian Chen continent. Even the royal family had to curry favor with him, rather than provoke.

"It seems the old man silently sent me a gift." Ye Wu Chen quietly thought.

However, The crown prince secretly fell in love with the emperor's wife. Long Zheng Yang told this kind of imperial scandal to the one sitting in front of him. Even if Ye Wu Chen himself wanted to stay uninvolved it was now impossible to

do so completely.

Long Zheng Yang filled the glass in front of him and leisurely said: “Brother Ye, if you were me, what would you do?”

This kind of question, if one was an intelligent man he would not respond immediately. Because of the consequences of getting involved with the internal scandal of the emperor and the crown prince, is bad beyond redemption. Ye Wu Chen watched him as he slowly said “ Is it possible for you to give up now and never see her again?”

“I’ve spent 5 years training and didn’t even slightly forget her, so i know that in my lifetime it is impossible for me to forget her, if I give her up, I will suffer for my whole life.” Long Zheng Yang shook his head.

“If you’re determined then you can compete with your father and fight for her.”

Long Zheng Yang’s body became stiff, his lips pulled downwards a few times, and softly sighed. “ She is originally my father’s wife, even if I love her she should not love someone else, if I compete with father for her... That would be really disgraceful, furthermore how would I compete with father anyway?”

“Is suffering for your whole life better than being disgraceful and recklessly fighting for your woman? Brother Long pick your choice, I’m merely a stranger.”

Ye Wu Chen made a small circle with his hands, but didn’t say anything. Ye Wu Chen picked up a glass and lightly took a sip, and afterwards he frowned lightly. Long Zheng Yang called the wine in this restaurant one of the best, but this wine truly could not compete with the wine in Wu Chen’s memory. Wu Chen set the glass down and silently thought: “The Tian Long City here is from thousands of years ago in china, without any of the Chinese modern technology, even the wine making techniques are a rotten mess.”

Long Zheng Yang was silent for a long time. Ye Wu Chen filled the glass in front of him and casually asked: “What kind of fairy-like woman can make Brother Long this infatuated with her? I don’t know which girl is so lucky.”

Long Zheng Yang was really worried as he started to raise his wine cup, but he didn’t drink but rather he smiled and his eyes brightened, afterwards he put

down his cup and his face became disappointed and frustrated as he thought: “how many years have I never had a truly calm and honest person. They either flatter or say yes, or even afraid to say anything else, I’ve always wanted a brother to talk with me like a friend.” He soon smiled and said: “This is truly helpless under the righteous external appearance of the emperor’s family.”

Ye Wu Chen’s mouth was slightly pulling. “Because you were born in the emperor’s family you can say such a thing but what if one day you can become an ordinary person, would you really choose it?

“that person.... She really is like a fairy. Born in the imperial family, I’ve seen countless of beautiful women, but after I saw her, I knew that all the other women cannot compare to her. 5 years ago, the first time I saw her I became scared of her dazzling beauty. That was the day she first came to Tian Long City. That year she was 17 years old, she was originally travelling with the clan head of the Southern Emperor Sect to visit father, the emperor.... Then father reacted just like me, he almost didn’t hesitate to request for the Southern Emperor Sect’s Clan head to give her to him as his concubine, the Clan head agreed on the spot, but he gave him a deadline – she must be 25 years old before she can enter the palace, and during this period, she will live in Tian Long City, and no one will be allowed to interfere with her actions.

“Southern Emperor Sect?” Ye Wu Chen’s heart began to beat frantically as he heard the word “Southern Emperor Sect” again and again.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 21

Three Forbidden Weapons

“Southern Emperor Sect” Ye Wu Chen’s heart was beating frantically as he heard the words “Southern Emperor Sect” again and again.

Long Zheng Yang became surprised when he took a glance at him, and he asked: “Brother Ye don’t tell me that you don’t know the Southern Emperor Sect?”

Ye Wu Chen nodded.

Long Zheng Yang smiled and said: “It looks like Brother Ye hasn’t seen the world for a long time... The Southern Emperor Sect is known by everybody on the continent, because it has enough power to completely destroy a royal family and replace it.

Ye Wu Chen: “.....”

“In Ancient Legends, our world was created by the birth of the Southern Emperor and Northern Emperor. Later the Northern Emperor and The Southern Emperor fought each other and they both died, but each of them left descendants, and the Tian Chen Continent was inherited by their descendants, the Southern Emperor’s descendants established the Southern Emperor Sect and the Northern Emperor’s descendants established the Northern Emperor Sect, they have extremely large power that no one in the Tian Chen continent can compare with, but luckily, they have never fought a war with each other in the mortal world. The Southern Emperor sect and the Northern Emperor sect see each other as natural rivals and have fought with each other for countless of years, but neither one of them has won or lost yet.”

“But one day, 20 years ago, the Southern Emperor Sect’s Patriarch was attacked, he was poisoned by a flame poison and he was on the brink of death,

as a result the Southern Emperor Sect was defeated by the Northern Emperor Sect and they began to retreat little by little. It was during that time that my father obtained the title of emperor. The Southern Emperor Sect fled towards the direction of our imperial palace and was discovered by the family. My father, despite of many people's opposition, risked the imperial family getting wiped out to interfere in this matter. In the entire palace there was only one water pellet, and he gave it to the Southern Emperor Sect's Patriarch to remove the flame poison in his body, furthermore he also took 3 heaven level experts and more than a dozen spirit level experts from the inner palace to assist the Southern Emperor Sect. The recovery of the Patriarch of the Southern Emperor Sect and the increase in their strength broke the deadlock between the war of the Northern and Southern Sect. The addition of 3 heaven level experts and more than a dozen spirit level experts and countless imperial guards was enough to easily break the balance. And thus the Southern Emperor Sect turned the tide of battle, since the war started, this was the biggest advantage they had ever held and they used it to completely defeat the Northern Emperor Sect, the Northern Emperor Sect escaped to the north and has vanished for the last twenty years. The Southern Emperor Sect has been searching for the entire 20 years but they have not found anything yet."

"The Southern Emperor Sect have never let themselves owe others a favor. The Clan head repaid our favor by granting my father a single request . After 15 years, father asked for the Southern Emperor Sect's Clan Head, Shui Yun Tian's only daughter, Shui Meng Chan's hand in marriage."

Long Zheng Yang bitterly smiled: "The Southern Emperor Sect and the Northern Emperor Sect both have enough power to rule the world, even the most stubborn gale in the Tian Chen continent endlessly fears and does not dare to provoke them. But unexpectedly, Father was willing to endure the risk of the Northern Emperor Sect retaliating just for the sake of a woman... Because her charm was extremely powerful, no man could resist it. Brother Ye, Its truly impossible for me to fight my father, even if I could fight him I can't fight the Southern Emperor Sect."

"The emperor truly only requested for this woman? At most only a part, with the Southern Emperor Clan head's daughter, of the Southern Emperor Sect

wants to distance themselves from the Tian Long Imperial family. And the Southern Emperor Sect would lose their dignity if they did not promise to agree to his request. The emperor had the patience to wait 15 years to ask for this request and had also used those 15 years to wait for that little girl to grow up. That was truly well calculated”

While he was thinking this, Ye Wu Chen asked: “Brother Long, this should be your imperial family’s secret, aren’t you afraid I’ll leak this out?”

Long Zheng Yang shook his head, and said: “this is not a secret, but rather it has already spread widely through the Tian Chen continent. Now, who doesn’t know the news that the Southern Emperor Sect’s daughter is marrying into our Tian Long imperial family.

Ye Wu Chen secretly sneered: “as expected”

“Why did the Southern Emperor Sect made a time limit before letting Shui Meng Chan into the palace, but they let her live in Tian Long City, is there any reason for it?” Asked Ye Wu Chen

Long Zheng Yang nodded and said: “During that time the southern emperor sect was persistently searching for the Nan Huang sword that was passed on from their ancestor’s teachings. The owner of the Nan Huang sword is the true master of the southern emperor sect. if the owner of the Nan Huang sword appeared, the southern emperor sect’s Shui family daughter will be the wife of the true owner of the Nan Huang sword. If the owner of the Nan Huang sword still hasn’t appeared by the time she turns 25 years old, only then can she get married.

The emotion in Ye Wu Chen’s eyes were fierce, he held his wine cup and drank it in one gulp, feeling the acrid taste spread from his mouth to his stomach. When he put his glass down, his face was as calm as ever.

Fate was a funny thing.

Long Zheng Yang did not see Ye Wu Chen’s instance of abnormality, with his eyes still as blurred as before he said: “the southern emperor sect and northern emperor sect’s teachings that were inherited from their ancestors are almost exactly the same. The only difference is that the Northern Emperor Sect is searching for one of the 3 forbidden weapons inscribed in the tablet, the Bei Di

bow.

(TL Note: Nan Huang Sword is literally translated as the Southern Emperor's sword and the Bei Di bow is the Northern Emperor's Bow)

"Three forbidden weapons?" Wu Chen had a look of surprise.

Long Zheng Yang had gradually gotten accustomed to Ye Wu Chen's "ignorance" and explained: "weapons' ranks are divided the same way a person's strength is divided. Tian Chen Continent possesses a few Heavenly weapons and a few deity level weapons, but legend says that there exists an incredibly powerful weapon exceeding the power of a deity level weapon. On top of them, are the 3 forbidden weapons that were formed in ancient times, a rumor says that if you get a pair of them you will have the power to destroy the heavens, to crush the earth, and to shatter stars. One is the Nan Huang sword, also known as the star cutting sword. The second one is the Bei Di bow, also known as the calamity of suffering, and one other weapon that has existed since ancient times, but it has never been seen before, and even its name is forbidden. Of course these are only legends, but the southern emperor sect and the northern emperor sect said that these are not just simple legends, and they completely believe in them."

Seeing that Ye Wu Chen was silent and his face was saying that he clearly does not care about these imaginary things. Long Zheng Yang smiled self-deprecatingly, and his eyes narrowed again: "after 3 years, she will enter the palace, and at that time, my last hope will be extinguished. During her 5 years in Tian Long City, she is almost daily at the house of smoke and dreams. During these 5 years, I've only heard her voice, I have never seen her face again. When I returned last year, I heard that she appeared in the west Xi Zizhu Park, All the people present at that time thought she was a fairy. While some artist tried to paint her face, no one tried to describe her in words, because they found that even highly skilled painting techniques couldn't portray her beautiful charm. Then the next day, everyone knew that that she was the future wife of the emperor. And she was considered the first of the 3 most beautiful woman in the city.

Long Zheng Yang paused, he looked at Ye Wu Chen and asked: "Brother Ye, want to hear about the 3 most charming women?"

Ye Wu Chen's eyes brightened, and his face showed obvious interest.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 22

Ye Shui Yao, Hua Shi Rou

“The only daughter of the Ye family, Ye Shui Yao, possesses otherworldly beauty, but her personality is cold and haughty, once, she almost broke the Ye family’s door when she went to visit her parents, but they just disregarded her out of contempt, and she ordinarily spends all of her time in her room and rarely goes out. Looking back, I already haven’t seen her for several years, she should have turned 19 years old this year. The last time I saw her was 5 years ago, at that time, she did not even look at me twice even though I am the crown prince.” Long Zheng Yang smiled self-deprecatingly.

“Ye family?”

“Oh right... .. Brother Ye is also surnamed Ye. The Ye family is one of the top 3 families in Tian Long City, they possess an extremely high prestige in Tian Long country and General Ye Lao is publicly known as the god of armies, nowadays General Ye is still matchlessly fierce and prudent and is one of my Tian Long **’s backbone. It is not exaggerated to say that half of the country was conquered by the Ye family. (TL Note: Raws say ** but I think “City” should go there.)

But unfortunately..... the heavens were jealous of the Ye family, The Ye family’s future generations got cut off, the Ye family’s only son showed talent, but he was disabled due to numerous illnesses since he was young, and has been bed-ridden for a long period of time. The last time I saw him was also 5 years ago, at that time he was lying in his bed but he did not have the strength to get up and meet me in person. He was pitiful to see among the valiant generation of the Ye family, however, 1 year ago I heard my father mention something, after suffering many hardships, General Ye had finally found something that could improve his physique, the thousand year snow ginseng, but during this time the Ye family’s only son suddenly disappeared and they have not received any news from him since then. Many people had speculated that he had already been

killed. If I remember his name was called.....”

Long Zheng Yang’s eyes suddenly jerked open, his gaze was fixed on Ye Wu Chen’s face as if he saw something unimaginable as his body stood up unconsciously.

Ye Wu Chen’s eyes started to narrow and his thoughts shifted to the disease.

Afterwards, Long Zheng Yang shook his head and returned to his seat, he sighed: “I suddenly remembered, the Ye family’s only son was also called Ye Wu Chen, what a coincidence, not only are your names the same, Brother Ye also looks similar to his appearance during the year that I saw him, and your age also seems to be completely identical to his. So that’s why I felt that I’ve seen brother Ye before.”

“It’s only a coincidence, it is impossible for me to be someone from the Ye family.” Ye Wu Chen apparently did not want to continue talking about this subject, changing the topic, he said: “I would rather listen to the romantic matters that Brother Long was previously talking about. ”

Long Zheng Yang still had a lot of doubts, but he did not ask and said: “The second is the Hua family’s only daughter, this woman lives up to her name, she is as lovable as a flower and as soft as water, during the year that I had to leave, she was still the size of Younger sister Ning Xue, after 5 years of not seeing her, she should now be a 16 year old graceful young lady, she now probably possesses beauty that can captivate even the birds and beasts, or else she would not be in Tian Long City’s 3 most beautiful women. But 7 years ago, she was already betrothed to the son of the Patriarch of the Lin family, maybe she is now already married.”

Ye Wu Chen did not say a word, he was quietly listening without any intention of interrupting, as he allowed him to talk. The only movement that he occasionally did was to wipe the corner of Ning Xue’s mouth so as to not let her clothes become dirty. He knew that Long Zheng Yang was only using the talk about the 3 most beautiful women as a cover, his true purpose was to teach him about a few of the influential families in Tian Long City, and he further explained about the Hua family and the Lin family.

But unfortunately, Ye Wu Chen was not destined to play a role in his intentions

of becoming the emperor, he was merely providing him information.

“The Ye family and the Lin family are both one of the most powerful and prestigious families in Tian Long City, but the Hua family was a family that they could not provoke, the Lin family’s General Lin is a person of virtue and prestige, but because one mountain cannot house two tigers, General Lin and General Ye were always on bad terms with each other and the Ye family and the Lin family had already been competing with each other for many years, this is a well-known matter in Tian Long City, and my father also lets them act freely and doesn’t interfere.”

“The Hua family actually has less military power than the Ye family and the Lin family, but the Hua family had produced a few Childs called Lei Zhen Childs and Huo Du Childs, even if there are only a few of them, if they went out, they can produce large scale casualties, the Hua family can also produce a great amount of these terrible childs, furthermore, everyone wants to employ these kinds of experts, I even heard that a retainer took a hundred of these world shaking childs to a capital and not a single person was found again. It is precisely because of the Hua family’s existence that the Da Feng country does not dare to provoke my Tian Long country. My Tian Long imperial family is also extremely courteous to the Hua family, and although the Hua family produces a lot of those terrible things they give most of them to our imperial family to employ in war or to be used for protection. But people with discerning eyes know that the Hua family cannot continue preserving their cards – such as the Lei Zhen Childs and the Huo Du Childs.

“Originally, the Hua family, the Ye family, and the Lin family were all quite friendly with each other. But the Hua family’s next generation mostly consisted of males and they only had 1 daughter that could be married off into the Ye family or the Lin family, at that time General Ye once requested to tie the knot with the Hua family, but he was firmly refused because the Ye family’s only son had frail and weak physique, in the Hua family’s eyes he was considered as trash, General Hua was already 30 years old and he only had 1 daughter, how was it possible to let her marry a piece of trash. 1 month later, the entire Tian Long City knew that the Hua family’s daughter had been betrothed to the Lin family’s son.”

Long Zheng Yang glanced at Ye Wu Chen and continued talking: “In this generation of the Lin family there are two sons, the eldest son, Lin Xiao, is a fine scholar and a good soldier, he possesses the title of the number 1 scholar in Tian Long City, and furthermore he is quite strong, he has achieved a strength of rank 10 at only 20 years old, even in the palace, several Heaven ranked experts praised him in admiration and said that his talent could only be seen once in a century, even my father had also praised him a lot. And the Hua family also became more and more satisfied with the marriage. The second son, Lin Yu, had been spoiled since he was a child and was infamous for his misdeeds, he became publicly known as someone who would never succeed in life, and even the Lin family had also completely given up on him, they pinned all of their hopes on the eldest son.”

“The Lin family and the Ye family has been at war with each other for many years now, and although victor still hasn’t been decided, everyone knows that the Ye family has already been defeated, because there is no one to inherit the family property of the Ye family and it could only be passed to a person from outside the family. The Ye family does not have a future and cannot be compared with the Lin family.”

After saying this much, Long Zheng Yang finally stopped talking, and afterwards, showed an embarrassed smile: “I’m feeling anxious, but truthfully saying, I also do not know which place I should take you, Brother Ye please don’t take offense.”

Ye Wu Chen smiled and said: “it seems that, even though Brother Long hasn’t been living in Tian Long City for the past few years, you are always concerned about the trends here.”

Long Zheng Yang shook his head and said: “These things can be known by anyone just by asking on the streets, but I just got somewhat emotional. Even though I’m the heir to the throne, I always think that someone wants to seize my position. During these past 5 years, I already began to be forgotten, if I want to obtain the support of large families, I will have to work harder. Brother Ye, what are your plans from now on?”

“Me? I simply want to recover myself from the past.” Said Ye Wu Chen, his eyes reflected a trace of loneliness, he does not have a past, and including

himself, there was no one who knew what kind of person he was.”

“Searching for your past self?” Long Zheng Yang carefully thought about these words, he frowned and said: “You lost your memories?”

Ye Wu Chen nodded.

“Memory loss..... when did you start to have consciousness?”

“1 month ago.”

Long Zheng Yang was breathing raggedly as he stood up, his eyes were unable to contain his excitement: “Brother Ye, I think you should go visit the Ye family, maybe your past self is there!”

“Oh?” Ye Wu Chen was astonishedly looking at him, but the depths of his eyes were as dull as water.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 23

Abducting the Princess (I)

It was already noon when they walked out of the restaurant, Ning Xue had already eaten till her small belly was full, and her eyes were filled with excitement as she began to look around again. Long Zheng Yang was reluctant to leave as he looked at the top floor of the House of Smoke and Dreams on the opposite street , after lightly sighing, he and Ye Wu Chen began to walk towards the direction of the imperial palace. After cleansing the alcohol in his body, the dark thoughts that he always had was finally reduced by a lot.

They had just barely started walking when suddenly, there was a clear change in the atmosphere behind them, and they heard the sounds of confused whispers erupt around them.

“Look quickly, it’s the commander of the imperial guards!”

“Who is qualified enough to have Commander Wu escort him..... could it be that the emperor is coming today?”

“I heard that Wu Shang had just turned 40 years old this year, but his strength has already reached the peak of the Spiritual level, he is truly formidable.”

Ye Wu Chen and Long Zheng Yang turned around, the originally chaotic street had already parted to make a wide path, in the middle of the road was a person whose whole body was covered in gold armor, a middle aged man was in the lead, his eyes contained the prestige of a tiger, his hands were always resting on the handle of the sword above his waist, and his gaze was as sharp as a knife as he swept his eyes through the crowd, the people who were swept by his gaze couldn’t help but shiver, and behind him were 4 persons carrying an ornamental Luan Palanquin as they were steadily walking forward, no trace of fatigue could be seen on their faces, so they were obviously carrying a small and delicate person, more than 10 sword-wielding imperial guards surrounded them as they

were walking, fully concentrated on protecting them.

“Why did she come out?” after looking at the beautiful palanquin, Long Zheng Yang did not know whether to laugh or cry. He pulled Ye Wu Chen as they went to side of the street and they hid within the crowd. In this situation, he had to hide his identity to avoid adding chaos.

At this time, the curtain on the palanquin was quietly pulled open by a crack, an eye was secretly looking at the crowd on the street, and the eye was flashing with rays of excitement.

The tightly packed crowd was leisurely walking forward, when suddenly, a scream came from inside the palanquin, the sound of the scream made the entire imperial guards change complexion, all of their bodies suddenly became stiff, they thought that the princess in their protection was finally attacked, the commander wearing gold armor turned back as fast as lightning, and at the same time, he unsheathed a gold sword as he ferociously pushed aside the curtains of the palanquin.

After the curtains were torn open, everyone in the opposite direction finally saw a charming girl in the palanquin, she looked like she was only 13 or 14 years old, she was wearing a beautiful white skirt and her skin was as white as snow, she had very beautiful eyes that had ripples like freshly brewed wine, but right now, her face was clearly pale white, as if she was frightened by something.

After seeing that the princess was fine, Commander Wu breathed a sigh of relief, and asked immediately: “Princess, what is going on?”

The little princess responded right away, she pointed a finger towards the side of the street and shouted with a voice filled with horror: “she was so scary, I have never seen such a frightening person before, drive her away quickly..... no, kill her instead, I never want to see her again!!”

Wu Shang looked at the direction where the princess was pointing, after a quick look, he saw Ye Ning Xue immediately because her white hair was very eye-catching. After just 1 glance, even his heart suddenly skipped a beat, no one could endure looking at that face, which was separated by two long roads of scars, it was extremely terrifying.

He was in a difficult position, and he awkwardly said: “Princess, this is not

good, after all

“No, No, No! Kill her quickly, she is very terrifying!!” the little princess’ voice clearly sounded like a child, covering her eyes with her hands, she did not dare to take a look again.

“This is.....” Wu Shang took a glance at Ning Xue, and his face became awkward. Could it be that he truly had to execute this girl under the eyes of many people just because she was very frightening? Furthermore, it seems like she is only 10 years old, if he really touched her, his reputation would become bad.

He had not seen, that since the beginning, the young girl’s hands were holding on to a youngster, whose expression was now turning colder by the second, furthermore, he also didn’t discover that Long Zheng Yang, whose head was half-bent, was behind the youngster.

“If you don’t listen to my commands, I will tell my father when I return!” The little princess pointed a finger at him, she was pouting angrily, and her face was stubborn and unyielding. After growing up in the palace, she only knows a few people, and furthermore, there is almost no one who dares to disobey her. This chance to come out and have fun is something she has gained with great difficulty, but they did not think they would receive a great shock on the way back. Right now, she does not even completely know of what it means to kill, but she just simply believes that after killing that frightening person, she would never see her again.

Wu Shang turned around, and helplessly said to himself: “there is nothing I can do about this, you can only blame yourself for agitating the princess.”

He walked in front of Ning Xue, with his head held high, he looked down at her and said: “I will give you ten seconds to get out of my sight, then afterwards leave Tian Long City forever, otherwise.....”

His fierce eyes were glaring at her, he was intentionally releasing his Qi as a spirit level expert to pressure her. Let alone a weak and delicate girl, even adults, who were only slightly weaker than him, would have difficulty resisting the strength of that Qi. Of course, he did not plan to kill her, he just wanted to scare her.

Ning Xue felt like her stomach was repeatedly being pressed down by a rock, she had difficulty breathing, and her complexion became as pale as a sheet of paper in a split second. She retreated in horror, and hid behind Wu Chen, both of her hands were tightly clutching at his clothes, and her small body was on the verge of collapsing.

Seeing that she still hasn't started running away, Wu Shang wanted to continue pressuring her strongly, but he heard a mocking voice beside his ear: "A person who possesses a strong spiritual level strength, is relying on that power to bully an unarmed and defenseless little girl, the imperial palace's commander of the imperial guards, Wu Shang, is truly acting in an elegant manner befitting adults. It seems that, you really cannot judge a person by his reputation."

Wu Shang frowned, coldly looking at Ye Wu Chen, he calmly said: "Young man, if you are her relative, leave with her at once, I will pretend that I did not hear anything just now."

"Is that right? Who did my little sister offend?" Ye Wu Chen lightly picked up Ning Xue, as he carelessly said.

"She scared the princess." Wu Shang coldly said.

The crowds of onlookers were watching them with their eyes, their expressions looked as if they were watching a play, because Wu Shang wanted to make them leave, but unexpectedly, this young man did not tactfully leave, and instead, were opposing Wu Shang like they were equals, was he not afraid of being killed?

"Oh? Her just standing here scared the princess?" Ye Wu Chen's face sank, and was replaced by a ferocious and sinister expression: "Tell your princess that , even if it was the emperor himself, anyone who dares to provoke my sister will pay a price."

Wu Shang stared blankly at him, and in his moment of being stunned, Ye Wu Chen's body suddenly flashed green for an instant, the body in front of him became an afterimage, and afterwards, he heard a loud shriek behind him, this shriek came from the princess.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 24

Abducting the Princess (II)

“Let go of the Princess!!

“What are you doing, do you know who you’re holding!”

“Release the princess immediately, do you want to rebel?”

The crowd stood up in confusion, and most of the people were starting to retreat subconsciously in order to avoid trouble. From the start, they did not expect to see the legendary princess, and afterwards, they could only watch helplessly as the princess was being kidnapped. The crowd looked towards Ye Wu Chen, their eyes were filled with pity — to dare hold a sword to the princess’ neck, this person’s life was completely finished.

Above the Luan palanquin, one of Ye Wu Chen’s hands was embracing Ning Xue, and the other arm was hooked around the frightened little princess, holding a sword to her neck. The pitiful little princess did not dare to move, her watery eyes were glistening with tears, like contaminated dew on a tender lotus, making her look pitiful, her small mouth was biting her lips, and the tip of her nose were slightly trembling. This was the first time in her life that a man held a sword to her neck.

Under their protection, the princess was unexpectedly abducted by a man holding a sword, cold sweat was constantly running down on Wu Shang’s forehead, regardless of whether the princess were rescued safely or not, his dereliction of duty was a crime he could not escape, and if the princess were to have an accident, even if the emperor could forgive him, he would rather commit suicide to apologize for his mistakes.

He had scanned the surroundings with his Qi beforehand, and there were no possible dangers or anyone with a powerful Qi, he also felt that Ye Wu Chen was

nothing more than an ordinary man, that was why he dared to move 5 steps away from the princess, his mind was not also on guard when he dealt with that situation, during the instance that he was stunned, Ye Wu Chen effortlessly broke his way into their gap, using his quick speed to rush inside the Luan Palanquin, while he was moving, he easily stole a sword from one of the imperial guard's belt and held it to the princess' neck.

Wu Shang had a dismal expression as he whispered: "Wind evasion technique, you are unexpectedly, a rare wind sorcerer.

Ye Wu Chen had indeed used a low level wind magic, the wind evasion technique, which could improve a person's speed for a short time.

"Wind sorcerer?"

The crowd was excitedly talking again, a few people even showed clear expressions of envy and jealousy. A sorcerer was a rare and respected profession, only those who were talented and had magic in their bodies could study in it, which were very few. If a sorcerer and a warrior of the same rank were to fight, it would be difficult to determine which was stronger, but if they were to fight in a war, a sorcerer's formidable power would be enough to face tens or even several hundreds of warriors of the same rank, because powerful sorcerers possesses frightening attack range and devastating magic, and magic which are special in nature, it allows them to become experts in many different fields of expertise, therefore people who could cultivate magic were always highly valued by the nations, they would be sent to the sorcerer guild of the nation and they would not have to worry about food or clothing for the rest of their lives.

Silently hiding in the crowd, Long Zheng Yang had difficulty resisting not showing himself, because if he showed himself now, it might make the situation worse, and the onlookers would see the imperial family as a joke. He believed that Ye Wu Chen did not truly intend to harm her younger sister, and he could only do his best to signal him with his eyes. Seeing that Wu Shang was stunned just a while ago..... didn't grandpa said that he was the Sword Deity's descendant? Could it be that he had what the internal palace had always worshipped — — double cultivation of martial arts and magic!?

When Ye Wu Chen said the following words, they almost jumped out of shock.

“Kneel down, and slap yourselves 3 times.” Ye Wu Chen did not reply to Wu Shang, and instead, he had ordered them, his voice was cold and severe, and had no traces that he was just joking around.

Long Zheng Yang desperately tried to communicate with his eyes..... Brother Ye, you are my brother! Even if you are the sword deity’s descendant, how can you play around like this? You abducted my younger sister, and I can barely contain myself, if you are truly just playing around.....

They did not see that, when Ye Wu Chen appeared on the Luan Palanquin, two people within the crowd were looking at each other, one servant had an expression like he had seen a ghost, and had hurriedly rushed away towards the direction of the Tian Long City’s Ye family.

After those short words, Wu Shang’s face turned even more gloomy, each of the imperial guards had a dark expression and were glaring at Ye Wu Chen, they had surrounded and encircled him, but they did not dare to take a step forward.

Wu Shang took a step forward and pointed his golden sword at him, he coldly shouted: “Release the princess, I can still allow you and your brothers and sisters to safely leave, but if you dare touch a hair on her head, 9 clans will punish you.”

Ye Ning Xue was still in Wu Chen’s arms, her small face were still as scared as before, but she still did not say a word, because she was scared that she might disturb her brother.

“Oh? It seems that you did not hear what I have just said. So I will say it again — Kneel down, and slap yourselves 3 times! You should be thankful, if you really killed my younger sister just a moment ago, I would have ordered you to chop off your hands and feet! Now..... I will give you 3 seconds!”

“One!”

“Seizing the princess, threatening the commander of the imperial guards, each one of these is a capital offense, but if you leave now I can still give you a chance!”

“Two!”

Wu Shang took another step forward, he did not truly believe that this person would really do it.

“Three!”

“HAHAHA!”

“Wuwu!!” (TL Note: sound of someone whimpering)

They heard a small sound that was followed by the cries of a little girl, the imperial guard's long sword was on the princess' tender neck and had cut a long wound, blood was slowly spilling out. The pitiful little princess was used to being spoiled, she was not even beaten and scolded as a child, let alone having a real sword to her neck. Under the pain, her cries were heartbreaking as she miserably said: “Uncle Wu..... please save me..... wuwu..... it really hurts.....”

Ye Wu Chen's expression did not change at all, as if what he was doing was just an ordinary thing. His right hand gently moved, holding the sword with his other hand, he covered the wound he just made with his palm, it seemed that, unexpectedly, he was afraid of seeing her hurt.

“Thud!” Wu Shang heavily knelt on the ground, and afterwards he ferociously slapped himself on the face 3 times, each time using all of his strength, 3 loud slapping sounds made the silent crowd become noisy all of a sudden, each person had an astonished look.

“Release the princess!” said Wu Shang with his head low, his whole body was trembling, and his fists were tightly closed, his fingernails almost sinking into his flesh.

The imperial guards shouted and rushed to support him, each and every one of them almost had their eyes pop out, wishing that their general could hack Ye Wu Chen into pieces. Wu Shang was their commander, furthermore he was their goal and pride, but now, his dignity had been trampled, how could they endure it?

“That's enough” Long Zheng Yang finally stood up, and his face had an expression of disbelief. Was this the gentle and silent Ye Wu Chen? Why was he so reckless? Doesn't he know what he's doing? Doesn't he know that a warrior could accept failure, but never humiliation!

“His Highness..... the Crown Prince!” the imperial guards shouted at the same time, and afterwards, hurriedly kneeled. Their kneeling down immediately started a series of chain reactions, the entire street was terrified, and they all began to kneel down one after another. They could disrespect the princess, but they would not dare to disrespect the crown prince, because he was the future emperor!

Long Zheng Yang suddenly waved his hand to stop their shouts, and heavily sighed: “Let go of my younger sister.”

Heavenly Star - Chapter 25

Tian Long City's Ye Family

The little princess wanted to cry heavily as she was saved when her life was hanging by a straw, but she had already lost the strength to cry, her tender lips opened and closed a few times. She had wanted to cry for help but her voice was already too weak.

Ye Wu Chen did not immediately release her, and coldly said in her ear: "Little girl, do you still want to kill my sister?"

No... .. No... .. I don't, and would never dare to. "She quickly shook her head, and looked carefully, her miserable and watery eyes were looking at him.

"It's useless to beg for mercy, if you want me to release you, apologize to my sister."

"I... .. I'm sorry."

"Look at my sister and make your voice louder" said Ye Wu Chen dissatisfiedly.

"The little princess turned, her eyes finally looked at Ningxue's face, but immediately afterwards, she started to run away as if she were electrocuted, while sobbing, she said: "I'm sorry... .. but she's really scary... .."

"Is she?" Ye Wu Chen looked at her small, tearful face and gently glanced at Ningxue and said: "In my eyes, my sister is a hundred times more beautiful than you

The little princess reacted extraordinarily violently, if a sword wasn't crossed around her neck, she would've jumped up like a cat that had its tail stepped on: "I, I, I, what part of her is better looking than me! How is it possible that I am not as good looking as her! "

The little princess pouted, she wasn't even afraid to argue with an evil man.

Love of beauty is in a woman's nature, the words of this 13 year old princess had truly shown that. Ye Wu Chen let go of the sword on his hand, and using both of his hands, he turned her small head to look at Ningxue, and told her that what she believes as the truth is not useful, the most direct method is to use one's own eyes to discover the truth. "You think that my sister doesn't look good is because you only look at her bad parts, look carefully at her eyes, and her eyebrows, compared to you who is more better looking? "

The little princess stared fixedly at Ningxue's starry eyes and Ningxue also looked at her, their eyes occasionally blinking, the two girls looked at each other for a long time, she muttered: "her eyes are very beautiful."

Unconsciously, those two originally frightening scars unexpectedly no longer scared her, and she even became curious and had an urge to touch them.

"Are you really better looking than her? " A voice asked beside her ear.

She pouted and said: "Not at all. "

With her mind distracted, she even forgot that this person, just a moment ago was holding a sword to her neck and even put a cut on her neck —because unknowingly, the pain had already entirely disappeared long ago.

"All right... Little girl, what's your name? " Ye Wu Chen's voice sounded softer.

"My name is Huang'er. " The princess timidly answered, tear stains were still visible on her face, but she were not scared like before.

Huang'er? or Huang'er? Ye Wu Chen smiled secretly. The emperor had enough children right? But even his daughters were named like this. (TL Note: Huang can mean Emperor or Phoenix)

"How old are you?"

"13 years old."

Long Zheng Yang's head nearly hit the ground, and he couldn't even keep standing anymore, when the two persons had unexpectedly started chatting in front of him.

.....

At the same time, at the Tian Long Ye family.

As one of the country's most powerful family, whether be it in political power, military power, influence or financial resources, they were extremely strong, and no one really knew their true strength, apart from anyone that had the strength that could contend with the Lin family, no one dared to provoke them, even the current emperor had to show the Ye family some degree of courtesy. Currently, the person with the highest position in the family was the Old General Ye Nu. Ye Nu was already 67, he had spent all of his life campaigning on the battlefield, he had performed countless of outstanding military service for the country and even has an extremely high position in the country, he also had the Ye family in his hands and was strengthening it rapidly as an upstart general, and after only a few decades time, they would be at the peak of Tian Long City.

But unfortunately, perhaps the heavens were jealous of the Ye family, the Ye family's successive generations didn't prosper. General Ye was an only child, and throughout his life, he also only had 1 son, his son, who was now powerful enough to shake the 4 seas, was already middle aged and was the general of Wei Long, his name was Ye Wei. Ye Wei also had only 1 son and 1 daughter, and unfortunately, during the Ye family's dominating and powerful era, Ye Wei's son was disabled due to numerous illnesses, which became increasingly more severe throughout the years, during the day, he secretly went out of the city to find an answer to his problem, and because they didn't know, Ye Nu and Ye Wei did not even worry about him, this matter was also well known and had turned the Ye family into the laughing stock of the Tian Long country.

1 year ago, Ye Wei was searching at Cang Lan country and finally found something which could change the physique of the his son, the thousand year snow ginseng, but Ye Wei returned that day because his son had unexpectedly went missing, the Ye family tried to keep it a secret, but not a single person knew why he disappeared, it was as if he faded into the air in broad daylight. And as a result, Ye Nu became furious and started a large scale and thorough investigation within the range of Tian Long City, but in the end, they didn't find anything.

Regardless of whether he himself ran away from home or whether he had been abducted, it was impossible to escape from the Ye family's formidable power,

the only possibility left was the existence of a traitor within the Ye family. And as a result, while they were searching Tian Long city, they were at the same time, investigating the internal part of the Ye family, but they still found nothing again and they were forced to do a large reorganization on the internal and external part of the family. Eventually, The Ye family's son completely disappeared, and not even a single strand of his hair was found, even if the Ye family didn't want to admit it, in their hearts they knew that he might have already been murdered and even his body might have been completely destroyed.

When the Ye family was burning an incense, it broke ominously, because of this Ye Nu was sighing all the time, he was growing old, even if on the surface he was as still as aggressive and domineering as before, people with discerning eyes could tell that the space between his eyebrows contained deep suffering. Ye Wei's heroic pride didn't diminish, but his personality became clearly irritable, the soldiers under his control were all well aware, but they could only keep their thoughts in their heart as their General Wei sighed, they never dared to mention this matter in front of him. Ye Wei's wife was a lady of the imperial court and was crying all day due to the loss of their son.

The Ye family's only hope was Ye Wei's adopted son seven years ago. The name of that adopted son was Ye Wu Yun, which should be 22 years old now, during the years when the child was an orphan, the helpless child survived by picking up trash for a living, dangerously living in a world of ice and snow, when he was about to starve to death, Ye Nu offered to him to serve Ye Wei. Afterwards when Ye Wei was attacked by an assassin, he didn't care about his life and blocked the sword targeting Ye Wei, he was seriously hurt and almost died but he managed to survive, The Ye family was extremely grateful and soon afterwards recognized him as the Ye family's son. During the 7 years afterwards, he adjusted to the Ye family and gave all he has into meticulously caring for the Ye family, and he gradually revealed astonishing talents, because of that the Ye family gave him rewards for his great contributions, and facing an illness, the dispirited Ye family's only son could only take care of himself.

But an adopted son, even if he had an excellent talent, was still an adopted son, the blood flowing in his body was not the pure blood of the Ye family. Even though the Ye family completely trusted this adopted son and treated him as if

he were their own, how would they be willing hand the entire family property to a stranger?

.....

At the present time.

A sudden news left the Ye Mansion in an uproar.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 26

Ye Family's son (I)

"Master! Mistress! Young master, we saw the young master!"

Two persons dressed as the family's servants came running in breathlessly, just after they came through the courtyard gate, they began to shout at the top of their lungs. Their shouts were heard widely through the Ye mansion, even the guards that were normally as stoic as a rock and only looked in front of them, looked at each other in dismay, disbelief showed in their faces. After disappearing for more than a year, everyone in the family believed in their hearts that he has already been murdered, could it be that they were wrong?

A fierce figure suddenly came from the Ye family's backyard and quickly walked to the two men in front of him and suddenly lifted them into the air, he stared at them and fiercely said: "what did you say? Say it one more time, if you dare deceive me believe it or not I'll kill you at once.

This man looked like he was about 40 years old, his eyebrows were as sharp as a sword, his eyes shined like a star, and he had a somewhat white face. People could easily tell that, when he was younger, he must have been a very beautiful man, he easily grabbed the two men's collars and lifted them using his hands, it did not look like he was carrying two persons but rather two chicks instead. His body was surrounded by Qi and he was releasing a bloodthirsty aura, this scent was not something one could naturally be born with, and could only be obtained by fighting countless wars and by dyeing his hands with countless blood, and now he was releasing his Qi unconsciously, this terrifyingly powerful Qi was also unexpectedly releasing the faint smell of blood, the two persons turned ashen faced, and for a moment even the wind itself didn't dare to make a sound.

"It's the young master..... we were at the streets just a moment ago and we saw a person that looks exactly the same as the young master.....possible..... it's

possible that the young master has returned.” The man in the left stammeringly said. As a servant of the Ye Mansion, he naturally knew the general’s frightening power. And since the time his son went missing, he became bad tempered and violent, the people in front of him kept quiet out of fear, with no one daring to say a word.

Afterwards, two persons from the family hurriedly ran to Ye Wei, the one leading in front was a woman that looked like she was more than 30 years old, she was Ye Wei’s wife, Wang Wen Shu. Behind her was an old man with a dignified look and a heavy stare, his hair was grizzled and his body was emitting Qi that smelled of iron and blood, if he stomped his feet the entire Tian Long City would tremble 3 times, he was the Ye family’s Ye Nu.

“Quick, where is he! “ Wang Wen Shu hurriedly said with a trembling voice. Her hands couldn’t keep still under her excitement.

The man hurried said: “Mistress..... he was nearby the House of Smoke and Dreams”

His voice faded, Wang Wen Shu had already rushed through the gate, and it was already too late to say another word. Ye Wei lowered the two men and looked towards his father. Ye Nu had a solemn expression and he said with a sigh: “Is it really the same person?”

His mouth sighed, but everyone could hear the excitement in his voice, he and even his son were suppressing their excitement, because the greater their hope also meant greater disappointment, if they were wrong and it wasn’t him, their ecstatic feelings would once again turn into despair.

They heard the sound of hurried footsteps, this person looked over 20 years old, he had a calm expression and a fine eye, behind him was a person dressed like an attendant, he was not yet near when he loudly said: “Grandfather, stepfather, I heard that younger brother Wu Chen has returned, is this true?”

Ye Nu shook his head: “it’s probably just someone similar, otherwise why wouldn’t he return home?..... Yun’er, can you go take a look?”

Grandpa Ye was walking away from the Ye mansion, in the past he was always calm and serious, even when facing an army of millions, he was still calm and composed, but now he was on the threshold of faltering. A vague hope was still a

hope, after all even if they couldn't find their only son, they also couldn't find his dead body.

The Ye family's son, he was named as Ye Wu Chen, because on the day he was born, a full moon was glowing brightly in the sky, but there were no stars. Pleased at getting a grandson, Grandpa Ye was in a cheerful mood and he poetically named him Wu Chen.

Now, if he had the opportunity to name him again, he would rather name him "Wu Bing or Wu Ji or even possibly Wu Que." (TL Note: Wu Bing = No illness , Wu Ji = No Sickness , Wu Que = No deficiency *whole* perfect)

.....

At the present time, in front of the house of smoke and dreams, the originally hostile atmosphere has already disappeared by more than half, the young man who originally seized the princess was now holding a white haired girl by the waist and his other hand was hooked around the little princess' neck while they were chatting. He kept asking questions and the little princess would answer obediently, she now completely looked like a well behaved girl. Because a sword drew a cut on her neck, she cried out in pain, how could she not become scared? But now that she wasn't panicking her frightened feelings has clearly weakened by a lot.

Ye Wu Chen had touched the princess' valuable body, even though she was only 13 years old, how could a man touch wherever he likes? even with only this, he could be sentenced to death, but before this, he even went as far as to abduct the princess and even injure her, compared to that, him touching the princess meant nothing.

Long Zheng Yang's heart was very complicated, he was strenuously thinking about every different kinds of method to resolve this. The other offense was easy to handle, but the problem was he drew a cut on the princess' neck and everyone present clearly saw that, if his father heard this, even if he wanted to absolve his crimes he would be powerless to do so.

Wu Shang walked behind Long Zheng Yang, his gaze was firmly focused on Ye Wu Chen as he said in a low voice: "Your highness, crown prince."

Long Zheng Yang waved his hand and walked towards the front of the Luan

carriage, he forced a smile and bitterly said: “ Younger Brother Ye, you made me lose face, I thought you were simply pretending to kidnap the princess, but I didn’t expect you to truly injure my younger sister, how could I endure that?”

“Oh really?” Ye Wu Chen smiled slowly: “I was only playing with little sister Huang’er, little sister Huang’er is so cute, how can I hurt her?”

“Damned Thing!” Wu Shang’s eyebrows were rising in anger, if the little princess wasn’t still in his hands, he definitely would’ve took a sword and split him in two. “You disobeyed us previously, and abducted the princess, and afterwards you even impertinently harmed her valuable body, and now you still dare to deny it!”

“Is that really true?” Ye Wu Chen coldly shot a glance at him, his palm was covering the little princess’ tender neck and was gently stroking her, it was pitiful to see that Long Zheng Yang’s little sister’s body had inexplicably become soft: “tell me, on what part of her body is my little princess injured?”

Wu Shang coldly said: “You drew a cut on the neck of the princess and everyone saw it clearly, although it was only a minor injury, but the princess’ body has never been injured before. If you land in my hands, I will surely return it to you with a swing of a thousand swords! Humph..... looking at your appearance and your talent, even if you are a little extraordinary, you are still an insignificant man.

Long Zheng Yang also frowned and his voice sounded gloomy: “What do you mean by that? Even though you hurt my sister in front of me, you still want to lie, you have truly made me disappointed!”

Ye Wu Chen took a glance at him but afterwards his gaze landed on Wu Shang’s face, and while smiling mysteriously he said: “What if this little princess’ neck doesn’t even have a scar?”

“I will dig my eyes out” Wu Shang furiously shouted.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 27

Ye family's son (II)

"Good, you better remember what you have said." Ye Wu Chen had a calm expression as he started to open his right hand that was covering the little princess' neck, exposed was a neck that was white as snow, never mind a scar, there weren't even any traces of blemish or stains of blood.

Wu Shang's eyes widened, his face became completely frozen and he was unable to say a word, the angry guards behind him also looked like as if they've seen a ghost and were even constantly rubbing their eyes as they all thought it was only an illusion.

Long Zheng Yang was expressionless for a long time, then afterwards, he walked towards them and he stared for a long time, then he said while stuttering: "this..... how is this possible? Brother Ye, don't tell me just now you....."

He said that because the sword had truly cut a wound on her neck and it was even bleeding, the little princess had also cried out in pain, but now the wound had completely disappeared, this was definitely not just a distraction.

The little princess carefully touched the place on her neck where she was injured before, her mouth slightly opened and her face revealed a look of lovely surprise, she quietly whispered: "how strange, it was so painful a while ago, how could it have disappeared? And there isn't even any pain like before."

She suddenly looked up, her shiny eyes were looking straight at Ye Wu Chen and her crisp voice said: "Big bad guy, how did you do that? Can you teach me? I can have fun while scaring other people."

"Big bad guy? Call me big brother and I'll teach you." Ye Wu Chen said with a low head. His bored eyes completely disregarded the surroundings.

The little princess slightly hesitated, but she gave in to temptation in the end and whispered: “Big brother.....”

“Very good” Ye Wu Chen was smiling happily as he said: “I’ll teach you, but not right now.”

“ You... ..” the little princess’ mouth was flat, she felt wronged and almost broke out in tears.

Ye Wu Chen patted her little head, then he used both of his hands to pick her by the waist and place her behind him, afterwards, he carried Ning Xue down the palanquin. As his foot stepped on the ground, more than 10 imperial guards were immediately startled and surrounded him in a flash, but they weren’t fools and they knew that he had obtained the crown prince’s friendship, otherwise they would’ve already greeted him with their swords. (TL Note: Raws say ** on (head) idk wtf is that @_@, but I think head goes here.)

“Lay down your swords.”

Long Zheng Yang lightly shouted but his voice was somewhat weak. Wu Shang advanced by a step and coldly said: “Your highness, this man unexpectedly dared to kidnap the princess in the middle of the street, this is the same as saying that he does not care about the honor of the crown prince and the emperor, if I let this kind of man get away, where would the emperor’s honor be?”

Ye Wu Chen was smiling as he looked at him and said: “Commander Wu, you seem to be forgetting something, before talking about anything else, didn’t you previously say that you would dig your own eyes out?”

Wu Shang’s face turned stiff, but he coldly snorted: “You outrageous man, why should we trust you!”

“Oh! What a noble excuse, so the grand commander of the imperial guards is actually just a man who talks fart, I see, I see.” Ye Wu Chen had a sarcastic sneer on his face, but he gently held Ning Xue’s small hands to ease her nerves.

“YOU!!”

Long Zheng Yang wanted to stop them, but in the end he could only sigh helplessly. Wu Shang was a person that lived his life valuing power and dignity, if Ye Wu Chen displays his strength to defeat him, he could obtain his respect, but

it would be repeatedly trampling all over his dignity — even if Wu Shang had great self-restraint, he would still likely harbor a grudge in his heart. The time Long Zheng Yang spent living in Tian Long City wasn't enough and he needed some time before he could re-establish his position, but now he couldn't since Ye Wu Chen had indirectly offended Wu Shang. Because the Commander of the imperial guards in Tian Long City had a very high prestige, even his father valued him greatly.

Suddenly, they heard the sound of small bells tinkling.

Wu Shang pulled out a gold sword and pointed it at Ye Wu Chen, his heavy voice thundered: "I will give you a chance. If you are a man, pick up that sword and prove your strength to me."

Ye Wu Chen looked at him as if he were looking at an idiot and disdainfully said: "Is it for you to decide whether I am a man? If I tell you "if you are a man, chop off both of your hands", would you chop off your hands immediately?"

Wu Shang's expression was becoming darker by the second, and the sword in his right hand was slightly trembling.

"I admit, I am not fit to be your opponent... .. but your strength is inferior to the man in front of you, that man kidnapped the person you were supposed to be protecting, how can this kind of strength be considered strong? It is nothing more than a waste. I would like to know how a person like you got mixed up as the commander of the imperial guards. My words feel ear-piercing right? Well think about before, why did you kneel on the ground and slap yourself 3 times? It is not my fault, but rather, your own fault for courting disaster, because you're useless! If I were evil, I could have completely seized the princess and forced you to break your hands and feet, even the princess that was supposed to be under your protection would have died!" Ye Wu Chen glanced at him and silently asked: "Am I wrong?"

Wu Shang broke out in cold sweat, but he was unable to say a word.

If Wu Shang had only provoked Ye Wu Chen, perhaps he would have turned around and left peacefully, but unexpectedly he also provoked Ning Xue and even used his Qi to oppress her, this is undoubtedly touching his most sensitive spot, not to mention that Wu Shang could not act without the princess' order,

even if he was the most generous man in the world, he would not have let them off easily. Because without Ning Xue there would also be no Ye Wu Chen. Every drop of her tears, every scar on her body, and every crazy act that she did, he would always remember them in his heart. Although ordinarily Ning Xue was cute and pleasant, when it came to him, she had a deadly obsession.

This is why, anyone who wanted to hurt Ning Xue, would have to bear Wu Chen's rage!

Kneeling on the street, the crowd could only stare helplessly at Wu Shang, he was an adult, but from the words that this young man had said, his face had turned from green to white. No one from the crowd wanted to get involved in this fight, they could only complain within their minds, because they had been kneeling for more than half a day already, and even though their knees were sore, they did not dare to get up. Although they lived in Tian Long City, ordinarily, it would be extremely hard to meet the crown prince and the princess, and now, even though they have finally met them, they still had to stay and they still couldn't leave, therefore, they could only continue kneeling.

A group of people had suddenly arrived in the street, people secretly thought: "Abducting the princess in the middle of the street, this large matter should have already spread to the internal palace long ago, and now, someone has finally come to help us." But immediately after that, the crowd had suddenly started whispering among themselves again, because these people were clearly from the Ye family, furthermore, behind the people from the Ye family, there were more than 10 sword wielding guards that had cold expressions.

Ye Wu Chen didn't look surprised, but rather, he slightly raised his head higher, as if their arrival was within his expectations.

So, my prediction came true..... how does it come true? And how does it not?

Heavenly Star - Chapter 28

The Ye family's son (III)

“General Ye, why have you come?” Long Zheng Yang was completely frightened, and had greeted him at once. Even if he was the crown prince, he would never dare to behave rudely in front of Ye Nu.

Ye Nu was startled, and he greeted the prince by clasping his hands and bowing towards him: “This old servant greets Your Highness, I was unaware that the crown prince had already returned, this servant is at fault.”

Long Zheng Yang quickly helped Ye Nu up and said: “No need to be courteous General Ye, I have just recently returned, it is perfectly reasonable that you did not know.”

He did not have enough time to greet Ye Wei's wife, because Wang Wen Shu had already thrown herself against Ye Wu Chen, her two arms were tightly hugging his body, as if she was afraid that he would suddenly disappear again. She was looking at him in a daze, and she eventually said with her voice trembling with emotions: “Chen'er..... you are Chen'er!”

Ye Wei was also focused on Ye Wu Chen's face, but the excitement in his heart rapidly turned into disappointment. He and his son looked exactly the same..... no, his build was somewhat taller, and it seems he was a little more mature, but they still looked exactly the same — his son was lost 1 year ago, and after not seeing him for more than a year, he really should have grown up.

If only Wu Chen didn't have that emotionless expression, Ye Wei might have been as excited as his wife. But there weren't even any happiness in his expression, only unfamiliarity, this kind of unfamiliarity should not be coming out of him, the only possible explanation was that he simply did not see them, otherwise, how would it be possible that they would not be recognized by their 16 year old son.

Afterwards, he could only sigh with disappointment, unexpectedly, there actually exists two people in the world that looked so much alike, it's not surprising that his wife and the 42 servants became so excited.

He walked towards him and asked: "Young man, what is your name?"

Ye Wu Chen had not even opened his mouth yet when Long Zheng Yang already answered for him: "His name is Ye Wu Chen. I became friends with him just recently and he also came back with me. But..... Brother Ye had been in a coma for a long time, he awoke just 1 month ago, and he cannot remember anything from his past, I was going to take him to General Ye's home because I thought that he came from the Ye family.

Wang Wen Shu's reaction made his heart beat rapidly, originally, he possessed a lot of uncertainties in his mind and he only thought that they resembled each other, and he only wanted to go to the Ye family to test his suspicions. But now, after seeing Wang Wen Shu react like this, he knew at once that they were definitely not "just similar" to each other. He couldn't help regretting that he had not recognized the Ye family's son earlier, and that he did not protect Ye Wu Chen, if he was truly the Ye family's son, he could use their relationship to pull Wu Chen closer to him, whether it be his identity as the sword deity's descendant or his identity as the Ye family's only son, both would provide him with enormous benefits and it would make his position as the Crown Prince difficult to shake.

Ye Nu and Ye Wei were both feeling emotional, Ye Nu walked excitedly to Ye Wu Chen's side, and afterwards, he looked at his eyes and asked: "Who gave you your name?"

"I gave it to myself" Ye Wu Chen replied.

"Chen'er, you are definitely Chen'er." Wang Wen Shu's eyes had already turned watery, she could not help stretching her hands and wanting to touch his face. Ye Wu Chen slightly raised his head upwards to avoid it, and laughingly said: "Auntie, you must have confused me for someone else, although my name is also Ye Wu Chen, I am not the Chen'er that you know."

"No, you are undoubtedly Chen'er!" Wang Wen Shu looked at him, her eyes weren't willing to part with him: "Your appearance and voice can be a

coincidence, your name might also be a coincidence, but the mark on your right hand..... this is something only my son had, this is definitely not just a coincidence! Chen'er, I'm your mother!"

Ye Nu and Ye Wei's sight fell on Ye Wu Chen's right hand that were holding Ning Xue, after looking closely, they saw 3 light yellow, five star marks that were evenly arranged on the back of his hand, because the color of these 3 marks were so shallow, it would be hard to see if one did not look carefully.

Ye Wu Chen glanced at the back of his hand, his eyebrows slightly narrowed, and a trace of puzzlement flashed through his mind. Because he had not seen these 3 marks during this past month, furthermore, he also could not remember these 3 marks within the few memories that he could remember from his past."

The first two could only be a coincidence, but 3 coincidences one after another, he could only say that this was arranged by fate.

Since fate gave him this identity, there was no reason to refuse.

Since the beginning, Ye Wei and Ye Nu had fought to stay calm, but they finally began to be excited, because these 3 marks had removed all of their doubts. Behind them, Ye Wu Yun followed and came, the muscles on his face **, and at his side, the entourage that wore gray clothes all had amazed expressions. The small changes in their expression were all seen by Ye Wu Chen, and he became absorbed in thought. (TL Note: Raws say **, idk what to put there so...)

Ye Nu's eyes were slightly moist, he took a step forward and his trembling hand patted Ye Wu Chen's shoulders, and afterwards, he burst into laughter: "HA HA HA HA! You came back well, and you came back safely! The heavens have not let down my Ye family..... HA HA HA HA!"

He suddenly turned around and glared towards the imperial guards that were stunned: "Why are you pointing a sword at my grandson, furthermore, why have you still not lain down your swords!"

How could Ye Nu's power be considered small? After his shout, the imperial guards trembled and panickedly sheathed their swords, and afterwards, they stood behind Wu Shang, each and every one of them kept quiet out of fear, General Ye's iron blood skill and his thunder like speed were famous, if they offend him, even if the emperor himself appeared, they still might not survive.

Ye Wu Chen was clearly confused, and he absent-mindedly said: “Are you truly my family?”

Wang Wen Shu nodded, her hands were still tightly clutching his clothes, and after enduring for a long time, her tears finally came out: “Yes, we are your family, I am your mother, he is your grandfather, and he is your father, and this is your older brother.....now that I know that you can’t remember us..... it doesn’t matter, mother will get the best imperial physician from the internal palace to cure you, you will definitely get better and remember us.”

She gently touched Wu Chen’s face and muttered: “fortunately... .. you did not become thin, you became even more good looking, and even your spirit has improved, you must have suffered a lot of hardships during this past year, but mother will definitely not you suffer anymore.”

Her blurry eyes made Wu Chen’s heart feel painful, and the same time, feel a type of indescribable warmth. This was a gentle and tender mother, mothers love their children more than anything in the world, one could only imagine, the blow she received when she lost her only son, and during this past year after losing her son, how much she was constantly suffering... .. whether she was his mother or not, she made him feel warmth in his heart.

I’m sorry, I don’t intend to deceive you... .. I need an identity, and I also wish that my appearance can erase your sadness.

Ye Wei had a calm and smiling face, but he secretly wiped the tears on his eyes. This was an extremely pleasant surprise, and he felt that he was dreaming. Thinking about this past year’s dark cloud, his father’s lamenting, his wife’s sorrowful weeps, and his own suffering, his heart turned sour again... .. but all of these completely disappeared when he returned, Ye Wei glanced at Ning Xue that was in his arms, and smiled and said: “I know you have a lot of questions, and we also have a lot to ask, but let’s talk after we return home.”

After a confused expression, Ye Wu Chen followed the Ye family to return home, and the streets were filled with the sounds of confused discussions. Long Zheng Yang watched them disappear with a smile on his lips, when suddenly, he heard a piercing cry beside his ear which woke him up.

“Ignoring me! Ignoring me!! Wuwu... .. I won’t forgive you for making me cry!

I'm going back to the palace, and I will tell father that you bullied me!"

The news that the lost son of the Ye family came back rapidly spread throughout the entire Tian Long City.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 29

A drop of blood to identify his parents

In an unknown area.

“How did this happen? Explain it to me clearly!” in the dark, a cold voice sounded.

“This is impossible, I definitely severed his Qi, furthermore, I secretly threw him in a marsh pond 30 miles away, even if he did not die, it is simply impossible for him to survive.” Another voice promised.

“In other words, this person is fake?”

“That’s right, it is definitely impossible that he is the real one. His voice could have been imitated, furthermore... .. it’s easy for some experts to change their appearances. Those marks should also have been copied using a special method. Maybe some powers want to conspire against the Ye family, he was brought back by the crown prince, so maybe... ..”

“Humph, you better hope that what you say is true, I had been planning for countless of years, you better not tell me that my plans were ruined in your hands!”

“Please rest assured, the real one is undoubtedly dead, this one is definitely fake.”

.....

At the Ye Mansion.

The Entirety of the Ye Mansion covered an unusually large area, and courtyards of all shape and sizes covered that area, even though it was not that prominent and luxurious, it still exuded a majestic atmosphere.

Above the hall, Ye Nu’s face was flushed red, as if he suddenly became dozens

of years younger, and earlier, he was almost laughing the whole time while they were walking back. If he had a lot of descendants, then maybe losing 1 grandson wouldn't have been such a heavy blow to him, but Ye Wu Chen was the only scion of the Ye family, and when he lost him, even the incense that they burned completely split, it was absolutely unbearable. But today, not only did he regain his only grandson, even his complexion and spirit were incomparably better than before, and even his face didn't have a sickly color anymore.

At this moment, the internal hall was quiet, a person dressed like a physician was skillfully holding Wu Chen's wrist, his eyes were slightly closed, and his face were filled with concentration, after a long time, he laid down his hand and opened his eyes, and afterwards, he faced towards Ye Nu and respectfully said: "Congratulations my lord, young master, and young madam, the young master's pulse is completely normal and there isn't any trace of an ailment.

"Really? This is good, this is very good." Wang Wen Shu stood up excitedly, Ye Wei smiled and nodded, Ye Nu laughed and said "good" 3 times.

They had just brought back Ye Wu Chen, and afterwards, they immediately called their personal physician to examine his health, because nothing was more important than his health.

At this moment, the originally silent Ye Wu Yun suddenly stood up: "Grandfather, I have something to say."

"Oh? It's alright to say what's on your mind Yun'er." Ye Nu's face slightly turned serious, because Ye Wu Yun was showing a serious expression, as if it was a very important matter. This was the grandson that he originally adopted and he trusted him quite a lot, he even frequently bemoaned that, why was his abilities so outstanding but he weren't his own grandson.

He looked at Ye Wu Chen and hesitated, but he clenched his teeth and said: "Yun'er thinks that we should be more cautious about Wu Chen's identity."

"Why would you say this?" Ye Nu frowned.

Ye Wu Yun raised his head and said: "Little Brother Wu Chen always had a frail body, we even used countless of rare medicine on him and there weren't even any improvements, but this person doesn't look sickly at all, this is very strange, and furthermore, even his amnesia is weird. I believe that we should not accept

his identity for the time being, I am worried that someone might be impersonating Wu Chen, and afterwards, pretended to lose his memories to avoid showing flaws in his act. Because, no matter how easy it is to change appearances or to counterfeit the marks... ..”

“Absolutely Disgraceful!”

Ye Nu’s shout had interrupted Ye Wu Yun, Wang Wen Shu looked outraged and she was glaring at him: “You are in doubt of my son?”

Ye Wu Yun had always been clever since he was a child, and besides being clever, his abilities were also outstanding, during the year that he shielded his husband from a sword, she accepted him into the Ye family and loved him as if he was her son, but after listening to him talk like **, and openly doubt her son, she immediately became furious and harshly scolded him for the first time in many years. (TL Note: Raws say ** again, and idk wtf to put there again)

“No! Yun’er would never dare to, in fact, no one would be happier than me if Brother Wu Chen could return, I have already taken care of Brother Wu Chen for several years and my feelings for him are deep... .. However, this event is related to the future of the Ye family, I just think that we shouldn’t be too careless.” Ye Wu Yun hung his head low and said.

Ye Wei kept quiet, and he questioningly looked at Ye Nu. In truth, this cautious general also had his suspicions, because Ye Wu Chen always gave him a strange feeling and he also felt that his personality was a little strange. Ye Nu’s face sank, and he said: “What you said is not unreasonable, in your opinion, what should we do?”

Ye Wu Yun looked at him respectfully and slowly said: “Test his blood.”

Ye Wei and Ye Nu glanced at each other and nodded at the same time.

“The child is already ready.”

Ye Wu Yun turned around and clapped his hands, and very quickly, 5 servants of Ye Wu Yun came with porcelain bowls filled with water, they put the bowls on the small table beside Ye Nu and took out a clean knife afterwards, they respectfully withdrew after they were finished.

“It’s not that we don’t trust him, but we are just being cautious. Shu’er, have

you ever thought about, what would you do if Yun'er was really correct?" Ye Wei lightly sighed and said.

"That is impossible!" Wang Wen Shu firmly shook her head: "Chen'er had just returned and you already want to test his blood, this is very unfair."

Ye Wu Chen stood up expressionlessly and began to pull Ning Xue's small hand: "Xue'er, we are going to leave ok? Since they do not trust us, there is no reason to stay here, in the future, your brother and Xue'er are going to travel around the world, and we'll have the sky and the earth as our home."

"En!" Ning Xue answered clearly and started to leave with Wu Chen, regardless of whether they had a home or not, as long as she could follow her brother, she was okay no matter where they went. (TL Note: not sure if I explained this in earlier chapters, but "En" is like "Okay" in Chinese, but I'll leave it as En cuz its cuter :3)

"Chen'er!" Wang Wen Shu called out to him and hastily ran and hugged him from behind, she was afraid that he would truly leave. And at the same time, she yelled: "We have just reunited with Chen'er, how could you doubt him. He's your own grandson, and my own son! What kind of disguise could imitate him so perfectly? And furthermore, these marks, besides from our Ye family, no one else knows these marks, even Yun'er doesn't know, so how could other people possibly know? Much less forge them. But, even with this you still doubt him?"

Ye Wu Chen were forced to stop his steps, but he did not look back.

Ye Wei still kept quiet, he picked up the knife and lightly cut the end of his finger, and he watched as a drop of blood fell inside the small bowl, and afterwards, he took the bowl and walked in front of Ye Wu Chen, holding the knife in his palm, his eyes were serious as he looked at him: "it is important that you know this, we do not suspect you, I only have 1 son, and the Ye family only has 1 scion, we see you as our life, I hope that you can understand this father's actions."

A man's viewpoint and emotions cannot be freely expressed like a woman's, and oftentimes, they have to suppress them to become more rational, because the consequences of acting on emotions are often severe and irreversible.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 30

The Sword deity's ring

Ye Wu Chen was coldly silent, and Ye Wei was only staring at him, but suddenly, the knife in his right hand suddenly swung, the knife emitted a silver light and became nailed to the floor, and at the same time, the forefinger on Ye Wu Chen's left hand was cut, Ye Wei extended his hand as fast as lightning and grabbed Wu Chen's left hand with an iron grip, and a drop of blood fell from his hand into the bowl.

"Ah!" Wang Wen Shu cried out in pain, the cut on Wu Chen's hand had also put a cut on her heart, she ferociously slapped Ye Wei's hand open and pitifully looked at the small cut on Ye Wu Chen's hand, she didn't even have any intention of looking at the bowl. But immediately afterwards, Wu Chen's hand was grabbed by Ning Xue, she put his finger into her mouth and sucked gently, while sucking, she lovingly said: "Brother, does it hurt?"

"No, it doesn't hurt at all." Wu Chen gently stroked her hair and said softly. Wang Wen Shu looked at him confusedly, because her recently regained son even had his personality change, he became extremely cold and detached, so cold that even she herself had never seen him laugh or smile, and only when he was with this young girl, Ning Xue, did he reveal his gentle side. Even the white haired girl had "reluctant to part with him" written on her face, because her eyes were always only looking at him, and she always clings to him whenever she can.

"Little sister, can you tell auntie your name?" Wang Wen Shu bent over and asked.

"Her name is Ning Xue, I made her my little sister." Ye Wu Chen replied, but his eyes didn't move, he was captivatedly looking at Ning Xue that was sucking his finger. He was only acting before, in his heart, he had already decided to stay at the Ye family because he needs an identity, and furthermore, Ning Xue also

needs a home. But in the end, this family that fate sent him was fake, in his heart, the only person that he could treat sincerely was Ning Xue, she was his most important person in the world.

“Chen’er, does it still hurt?” Wang Wen Shu got up and asked.

Ye Wu Chen shook his head.

“Chen’er you can rest assured, I will definitely give your father a harsh scolding.” Wang Wen Shu turned around, looked at Ye Wei, and fiercely said.

But at this moment, Ye Wei was attentively watching the small bowl in his hand, the two drops of blood were moving slowly, and unexpectedly, they looked like they were being drawn to each other, and afterwards, they slowly began to combine until they were completely fused. Ye Nu were watching this scene, and beside his neck, Ye Wu Yun had also seen it clearly.

When the last traces of doubts had finally been removed, Ye Wei breathed a long sigh of relief at last. Although he had always been enduring it, he was still afraid, because if he had not gotten the result that he wanted, he might have been struck by another heavy blow again. The small bowl in his hand had already been thrown out the hall, and when he saw the face of his fierce wife, he was in a very good mood and he could only laugh stupidly, because he could no longer talk.

“This is great... .. we finally got Chen’er back, but the first thing his father did was to cut him with a knife, what kind of father acts like this! I see that you still want to explain yourself, so you will get no food today and tomorrow.”

Ye Wei’s shoulder shrank and he began to beg for forgiveness: “Shu’er, I only did this for the sake of the Ye family Just for today, just for today ok?”

“Want to beg for mercy? Then go to Chen’er and ask for forgiveness.”

Ye Wei turned to Wu Chen and said: “Chen’er, I was a little excessive just a while ago... ..”

“I understand.” Ye Wu Chen expressionlessly said: “You can think of me as part of the family, but, I can’t treat you as my family, or at least... .. before I recover my memories, I can’t. Can you understand that?”

He did not belong to this world, within his memories of earth contained his true parents. Before he found them, how could he call others as his parents?

He only needs an identity, and he just happened to receive this identity at the same time, his arrival had also erased the grief and sorrow of the Ye family due to losing their son. While he was using this identity, he would act as the Ye family's son to repay them.

That tone and that kind of expression had never appeared on their son's face before. Ye Wei didn't reply, Ye Nu came to Wu Chen and patted his shoulders: "My child, Your father and I was wrong, we should not have doubted you. You may rest assured, we will not force you, because I believe that after a bit of time, and even if you still haven't remembered us yet, you would still willingly call me grandpa, hehehehe!"

Suddenly, Ye Nu's eyes became a fierce stare and the smile on his face froze. He fiercely grabbed Ye Wu Chen's left hand, and his eyes were firmly fixed at the black ring on Wu Chen's finger, he exclaimed: "Sword deity's ring."

"What!?" Ye Wei was also surprised, he had never seen before what a sword deity's ring looked like, but how could he not have heard of it? According to rumors, this represented the sword deity's disciple and someone that was extremely likely to become the next sword deity of the Tian Chen Continent.

"Yes, I am definitely not mistaken, this is truly a sword deity's ring!" whispered Ye Nu, afterwards, he let go of Ye Wu Chen's hand and laughed: "So that was it, HA HA HA HA! Chen'er must have been abducted by a villain, and he was rescued by the Sword deity Chu Cang Ming afterwards. A sword deity has immensely powerful abilities, improving Wu Chen's physique would only be a simple matter for him. And this ring shows that Chen'er has already been recognized by the sword deity as his only disciple... ... This is a blessing in disguise! HA HA HA HA!"

Ye Nu kept laughing, he was from the same generation of the Sword deity Chu Cang Ming, so he was quite sure what the "Sword deity" and the "Sword deity's ring" meant. In Tian Long City, a sword deity was a "God", even the royal family would never have the courage to provoke a sword deity, with a sword deity's ring, they could even go on a rampage on Tian Long county, and anyone that wants to go against them, would first have to consider the sword deity that was

backing them.

Ye Wu Chen smiled, but he did not have any reason to explain.

“Chen’er is... .. a sword deity’s disciple?” Wang Wen Shu couldn’t believe it and she repeated it again, but inside, she was feeling delightedly excited. Sword deity’s disciple — — these 3 words held heavier weight than those of a prince or a princess, and if he truly becomes a sword deity in the future, his status in Tian Long Country would even surpass the emperor’s. Because an emperor was only a man and a sword deity was a “God” in the eyes of ordinary people.

Ye Wei was also smiling, being reunited with his son was already a huge surprise, he didn’t expect that he would have another pleasant surprise once again. The son that he had lost 1 year ago became a sword deity’s disciple and returned, he suddenly felt that the pain that they suffered for a year was definitely worth it. His only regret was that Wu Chen’s memories were only from a month before, because he couldn’t track down who took him. He asked: “Chen’er, did your Senior Sword Deity give you this ring? Where is he now?”

Ye Wu Chen nodded: “Senior Sword Deity really gave it to me, but unfortunately, I just met him half a month after I woke up, as for where he is... .. he didn’t want outsiders to know.”

Heavenly Star - Chapter 31

A Slap on the face

“hehe, I can find his location after about 10 days. Moreover, if you could start cultivating your spirit again, you’ll be able to live comfortably for the rest of your life. Chen’er, although the power in your body doesn’t fluctuate anymore, the sword deity must still handle your training, and after you start cultivating, you will be sure to rapidly become an expert in the Dao of the sword, I didn’t expect that a sword deity would choose my grandson as his disciple, he has good eyes, he has very good eyes!” Ye Nu’s face barely concealed his pride: “A sword deity lives a life of traveling and does not like getting involved with ordinary people, but unexpectedly, he allowed others to know his current location. Chen’er, did he mention who originally took you?”

“No, when he found me, I was already in a coma, and after I woke up, I had already forgotten everything.” said Ye Wu Chen. These words weren’t completely false, he just didn’t say how long he was in a coma.

Ye Wei solemnly nodded at him: “We will definitely investigate this matter, after he dared act against our Ye family, I will definitely not let him off easily.” He turned to Ye Wu Yun: “Yun’er, take care of Chen’er and keep him company... ..” and he whispered afterwards: “Grudges between brothers is definitely not good.”

Ye Wu Yun’s head was half bent, and people couldn’t see that his expression had changed. But he agreed, and walked in front of Ye Wu Chen and said: “Younger brother Wu Chen, the events just a moment ago was this elder brother’s fault, please don’t take it to heart. As of now, younger brother Wu Chen has not just safely returned, you also became a sword deity’s disciple, this elder brother is truly overjoyed and envious.”

“It’s okay, what you did was also for the sake of the entire Ye family, I have

already forgotten what happened previously, in the future, I'll have to trouble you to teach me about the areas that I don't understand." Ye Wu Chen turned around and were smiling as he talked, his face had a good-natured expression.

"We are brothers, so we should naturally help one another and support the Ye family together, but what would you need me to teach you? Oh, by the way brother Wu Chen, who is this white haired little sister?"

"She is my adopted little sister, her name is Ning Xue."

Ye Wu Yun lightly nodded and carefully said: "Brother Wu Chen, would you allow this older brother to take this little sister out of the city and put her for adoption? Because this type of white hair can only be seen on a savage man-eating snow wolf and her face is also very frightening, this kind of ugly girl could become the subject of malicious rumors and negatively affect our Ye family."

Ye Wu Chen always had a smiling expression as he waited for him to finish talking, and afterwards, he took a few small steps forward, and slowly said: "Who were you calling an ugly girl?"

He had just barely finished speaking, when he suddenly raised his arm without warning, and afterwards, a loud "Pa" sound echoed, Ye Wu Yun had been hit on the face with an extremely resounding slap, caught unprepared, the slap stupefied Ye Wu Yun, he withdrew two steps backwards and immediately fell on the floor, his eyes were looking at him with disbelief.

"Presumptuous!"

Ye Nu angrily shouted, and Ye Wei's brows were also fiercely knit, Wang Wen Shu quickly stepped forward to help him get up, and she anxiously said: "Chen'er, even if he was wrong, he is still your older brother, how could you... .. quickly apologize to your brother."

She had hurriedly scolded Ye Wu Chen because his grandfather's anger was no joke, but Ye Wu Chen acted like he didn't hear her, he was gently rubbing his slightly sore hand, this slap didn't contain the power of his Wu Chen spell and only relied on his own strength, he had exhausted all of his strength and his face were starting to redden. He coldly watched Ye Wu Yun get up and calmly said: "Bear this in your mind, I will not recognize you as my elder brother, even if you are truly my brother, if you dare speak about Ning Xue like that, I will still thrash

you!!”

He picked Ning Xue up and coldly said: “two weeks ago, when my life was hanging by a thread, Ning Xue risked her life to steal a Heavenly beast’s egg to save my life. I wouldn’t exist without Ning Xue! She is not just my younger sister, she is my life, anyone who dares to make her unhappy, I will make him suffer for his entire life.”

“Heavenly Beast’s egg?” Ye Nu forgot his anger and he sucked in a breath of air, stealing a Heavenly beast’s egg was an extremely insane act, even the 3 Heavenly ranked expert that their internal palace worshipped would not dare to act that rashly, because that would draw the Heavenly beast’s fury and they would have to risk their life to fight it.

The way they looked at this restless and timid looking girl immediately changed, the traces of rejection that they subconsciously had completely disappeared and were replaced by gratefulness and surprise, because, if what Ye Wu Chen had said was really true, that would mean that she’s actually a huge benefactor of the Ye family, therefore, Ye Nu’s anger had already completely faded, but he still said: “Chen’er, apologize to your older brother, after all he didn’t mean any harm, and he is still your older brother. This is the end of this matter. In the future, Ning Xue can stay here... .. and live in the courtyard together with you.”

Ye Wu Yun covered his face and ashamedly said: “No, the one to apologize should be me, I deserved this slap, I shouldn’t have said those things.”

Ye Wu Chen looked at him with a faint smile, and afterwards, he turned around and walked out of the hall: “I’m tired.”

Wang Wen Shu quickly followed behind him: “Chen’er, I’m going to tidy up your room, get some rest early, but you have to properly talk with mama in the evening ok?

Only 3 persons remained in the hall, Ye Nu had a loving expression as he said: Yun’er, you are good and very obedient, but he had been taken away from us after all, so he has been neglected, we must carefully make it up to him, but don’t feel wronged Yun’er.”

Ye Wu Yun shook his head and smiled: “it’s alright grandfather, my debt to the

Ye family is as heavy as a mountain, even if I sacrifice my life, I still wouldn't be able to repay it, and furthermore, this was originally my fault."

"But Alas! Chen'er's personality has changed greatly, if we hadn't tested his blood before, I almost wouldn't have recognized my own grandson." Ye Nu laughed and said. He clearly didn't reject the "Changes in his personality", but felt overjoyed instead. Previously, Ye Wu Chen could only lie in bed and even talking would leave him gasping for breath, his character was weak, and when he occasionally recovered a little strength, he still wouldn't dare to leave his home, having this kind of a son was truly a misfortune for the Ye family, but now, Ye Wu Chen had not only become a sword deity's disciple, he also became calm and unyielding, that slap that he displayed showed that he was fierce and cruel if he were offended, and he truly couldn't be compared with the previous Ye Wu Chen.

When Ye Wu Yun had walked out of the hall, the right side of his face still had a distinct red mark, the Ye Mansion's servants and guards showed expressions of sympathy, but Ye Wu Yun turned towards them and smiled good-naturedly, and afterwards, slightly shook his head to say that he didn't mind it.

His 5 attendants were following closely behind him, they glanced behind them, and afterwards, scowled as they said: "Young master, I heard that the small young master had unexpectedly... .. unexpectedly slapped the young master, this is going too far."

Ye Wu Yun indifferently laughed: "It was my fault for saying something wrong, what he did wasn't strange."

"Said something wrong? The Young master is an intelligent person! Young master simply didn't know where that small white haired girl came from, even if you tried to drive her away, he shouldn't have hit the young master! He... .. he simply doesn't even care about his relationship with his older brother." Ye Wu Yun's 5 attendants indignantly said.

Ye Wu Yun was silent for a moment, and he sighed: "Don't mention this matter again."

Heavenly Star - Chapter 32

Conspiracy

“Young master, the entire Ye Mansion knows that you have a gentle, tolerant, and kind personality, not only to the Ye family, you even treat the servants as your brothers. Most of the time, the old master ignores the matters of the Ye family, so over the past few years, who handled the matters of the Ye family? It was you! But what has that small young master accomplished? Previously, all he did was lie on his bed and eat, even I looked down upon him, and he would’ve been better off having a clean death. At that time, the young master worked hard all the time to take care of him and the Ye family, and now that he has returned, he slapped the young master just because of a trifling matter, truly ungrateful... ..”

“Shut up!” Ye Wu Yun angrily interrupted him, and afterwards, quickly glanced around, then whispered: “Little Wu, I know that you are angry about my injustice, but younger brother Wu Chen is the only scion of the Ye family after all, he will become the only master of the Ye family in the future, And I..... in the end, I’m nothing more than step father’s adopted son, and no matter what method I use or how much I work hard, I can’t change that fact. Otherwise, grandfather wouldn’t have told me to be patient with him when younger brother Wu Chen slapped me in the face. But after all, they are a family, and I..... I’m only a stranger AH! So, this is not strange and it is only natural.”

Ye Wu Yun shook his head and his mouth exposed a helpless and bitter smile, but he immediately erased it, and he smiled and said: “However, to have this kind of step grandfather and step father, I’m already very satisfied, they rescued my life, gave me a home, and now I have all of you as part of my family, even if I sacrifice my life, it still wouldn’t be enough to repay them, so what more of this little grievance.”

(TL Note: be careful not to confuse Ye Wu with Ye Wu Yun.)

Ye Wu felt a little sour and he felt wronged in place of the young master, the phrase “You are all my closest family” made his heart tremble. When he was apprehensive during the time when he was being hired as a servant by the Ye family, he had never been the subject of rumors among the servants and had never been insulted, oppressed, or even beaten and scolded, because he was a follower of the Young master. Ye Wu Yun wasn’t like an ordinary son of a noble which was overbearing, lazy, and bossy, but rather, he was very capable, calm, and good-natured, it was extremely rare to see him scold a servant, even if the servant made a mistake, he would show a smile to encourage them. During the times when they were taking a leave to visit their relatives, he would secretly send them several times more money to take home to their families. In his eyes, servants weren’t servants, but a part of his family instead. Ye Wu could always clearly remember that year in autumn, when the family went out to admire the full moon, Ye Wu Yun called and gathered all of the servants, and afterwards, they put a table and ate moon cakes, at that time, he didn’t know how many of the servants cried as they ate.(TL Note: Mid-autumn festival reference)

Ye Wu were convinced that he was the world’s best master, and that being able to follow the young master was the luckiest thing that happened in his life, so he gave him his complete loyalty and he would willingly follow him to the death. Previously, when he was outside the hall and he heard that Ye Wu Yun got slapped, he almost couldn’t help recklessly charging to his master and falling out with the small young master.

He firmly said: “Young master, you can rest assured, we all know who is better for us, who is better for the Ye family, and who is truly qualified to be the future master of the Ye family, if he bullies young master again, even if we lose our jobs, we still won’t stand by idly!”

“Nonsense!” Ye Wu Yun’s face sank, and he weakly waved his hand, saying: “Don’t talk about this matter again, just do your job well and don’t worry about other matters. If you offend younger brother Wu Chen, I won’t be able to save you. Little Wu, you still have a blind mother and a seriously ill younger brother at home, and they usually rely on you to support them. I know that you are just being good to me, but don’t be impulsive and accidentally harm your own family.”

Ye Wu felt painful in his heart, but he was unable to say a word. Even when the young master had suffered such a large injustice, he still remained concerned about his servants, he even perfectly knew about the situation of his family.

“Hey! I heard that the owner of the 37th store at the south of the city became seriously ill yesterday, they said that he wouldn’t make it, is there anyone there to take care of the arrangements?” Ye Wu Yun asked to change the topic, unexpectedly, he didn’t want to continue talking about their previous topic.

“Well, there isn’t, there’s only 3 people left over there.”

“Go and get... .. never mind, I’ll go personally, I need to take care of a little matter at the south of the city. Little Wu, come and take me back in the morning to check the accounts.” After Ye Wu Yun finished explaining, he turned around and walked towards the door.

“Young master, your face.....”

“hehe, it doesn’t matter.”

Ye Wu stayed for a little while, and afterwards, he returned to the small young master’s courtyard even though he still felt indignant.

.....

In a dark room.

“How did it go? Humph! You don’t even need to reply, your face has already told me the answer. Damned thing! Give me an explanation!”

“Calm down master... .. but, he definitely died that day, this is definitely true, no one had ever been able to escape once they got caught in that dreadful swamp, I even watched him sink before I left. This..... this servant is incompetent, please punish me master.”

“..... I heard that, he wore a sword deity’s ring on his left hand?”

“Yes master, you already know the original owner?”

“Humph! Never mind how I know. If that is truly the case, then it wouldn’t be strange, if it’s a sword deity, he could bring him back to life even if he was truly dead, and pulling him out of that swamp would be even easier. We can only say that this person is playing with fate.”

“Thank... .. thank you for being lenient master. Please give me a month’s time, this servant will definitely manage it well.”

“Don’t do anything. Since he became a sword deity’s disciple, if we touch him again, it’s very likely that the sword deity will come out of obscurity, and if he investigates, how will we resist?”

“What? Could it be that even master is... .. is also afraid of the sword deity?”

“Humph! You’re just a junior, how could you possibly know the extent of a sword deity’s power. He hasn’t appeared for nearly 20 years now, he must have definitely become even stronger, let alone me, even the Southern emperor sect and the Northern emperor sect would also never dare to provoke him rashly.”

“This is..... master, don’t tell me that we can only watch helplessly.....”

“No! Although we can’t touch him, we can have others do it for us, in this way, he won’t be able to track us down even if he investigates. Humph! It’s only regretful that the servant girl from the Ye family didn’t use enough poison, if that baby had immediately died while he was still in his mother’s stomach, then we wouldn’t have such a complicated problem right now.”

“Master is wise!”

“Since he’s a sword deity’s disciple..... have you seen his strength?”

“Answering master’s question, there were no signs of energy undulations in his body. I had provoked him to slap me, and even under his anger, he still didn’t reveal any power, one can easily see that he probably doesn’t possess any strength, and moreover, he’s easy to anger, he’s impatient, he shows his joy and anger on his face, and he doesn’t have any subtlety, it will be easy to break his mind, so he should be easy to deal with.”

“..... it seems like, he might really be just a wind sorcerer.”

“Wind sorcerer?”

“That’s right, he had previously used a low-level wind magic, I didn’t expect that this sickly garbage would actually possess a rare magic constitution, it gave me a surprise .”

“But how can a sword deity’s disciple be a sorcerer? It doesn’t make any

sense.”

“We can’t reach a conclusion for now, you’ll need to keep observing him before we can discuss this again. Return back early, if you stay for too long, it’ll be easy for us to meet with suspicions.”

“Yes, excuse this servant.”

Heavenly Star - Chapter 33

Premonitory-Power of his soul

“Chen’er, this is the small courtyard where you used to stay, and in the future, this is where you and Ning Xue will be living together.”

It was a large courtyard, there were more than a dozen amply sized rooms, and there were also a long pavilion, a pond, a small garden, fruit trees, and a grape rack filled with everything they needed. It would be very difficult for an ordinary wealthy family to have a home such as this, but this was merely one of the many courtyards of the Ye Mansion.

“Even though you’ve been absent for a year, mother still visited and cleaned it every after several days.” Wang Wen Shu had a happy face, for her, cleaning that room was a form of happiness.

“Chen’er, this is your bedroom, the bedroom and the study is connected, but you rarely went to the library before. However, mother knows that was only because of your poor health.”

After opening the door, Ye Wu Chen became quite surprised. The courtyard was rather simply decorated, but the interior was very luxurious, even the hanging wind chimes were absolutely extraordinary, it was the first time Ye Wu Chen saw this kind of pure antiquity and even Ning Xue’s eyes were wide open, her shining eyes constantly flashed with splendor.

“Ning Xue will sleep in the next room ok? I’ll go and get some people to clean it again.” Wang Wen Shu lightly bent down and asked. She knew that this girl looks after his son and had even saved his life, so she naturally also loves her, and even wants to adopt her as her daughter.

“No need, me and Ning Xue will be fine sleeping on a single bed.” Said Ye Wu Chen.

“Eh..... Ah? A single bed?” Wang Wen Shu hesitated at first, but afterwards, she stutteringly said: “Chen’er, you..... you probably don’t have that kind of hobby right?..... this is.....”

“Being fond of a woman’s body doesn’t matter, which man isn’t romantic?..... But, Ning Xue is really too small, she’s only about 10 years old..... this is practically committing a sin AH!” Wang Wen Shu was drenched in sweat, and she subconsciously looked at Ning Xue. At this moment, Ning Xue’s innocent eyes were curiously looking at her panic stricken expression, and she couldn’t find any signs on her body that she had been defiled.

Wang Wen Shu became secretly relieved that it was just her misunderstanding, they probably didn’t have a home before and they probably slept outside, so they became accustomed to snuggling against each other..... My pitiful child. As she thought about that, her heart couldn’t help but turn sour, her expression quickly changed and she said: “It’s all right, Ning Xue and Chen’er can sleep together in this room.”

Ye Wu Chen secretly wiped his cold sweat. He could see in her expression that she had already removed her previous thoughts.

“In that case, wait for a while Chen’er, let mother clean the room first, and then you and Ning Xue can have your first good sleep in a while, it must have been so long since you and Ning Xue had a good rest and ate properly..... Oh, I just remembered, mother will get you some snacks.”

“No need to hurry.” Ye Wu Chen called her and asked: “I heard that, I should also have another sister?”

Wang Wen Shu nodded and rebukingly said: “Yes, she lives at the courtyard next to you, but she’s used to acting cold, she knows that chen’er has returned but she’s still unwilling to visit, ahhh, this child. Do you want mother to bring you to your older sister?”

Even though her voice was rebuking, it didn’t show much on her face, as if she was already accustomed to it. Although Long Zheng Yang had already told Ye Wu Chen that the Ye family’s only daughter, Ye Shui Yao, had a cold personality, but she didn’t even come to meet her younger brother that had been lost for a year, and she didn’t even show her face, it seems that her coldness was really a bit

excessive.

“No, Ning Xue and I will go visit ourselves.”

“Well, that’s ok. Mother will prepare some refreshments first, a few people came by again.” Wang Wen Shu had just finished speaking but she had already hurriedly gone out.

Come Xue’er, We’re going to see a pretty big sister.

Ning Xue lightly said “En”, she slightly bent her head down and allowed him to pull her small hands.

“Xue’er, what are you thinking about? Did brother say something bad?” Ye Wu Chen walked with a smile and said.

“I..... Brother, I will only get you in trouble and I will only drag you down.” Ye Ning Xue hung her head in shame, not daring to raise her head and look at him, whether it was the conflict with the little princess or the conflict with Ye Wu Yun, she knew that it was all because of her. Even though it seems like she’s only a young and simple girl, her mind was much more mature than other girls of the same age.

“Nonsense! How would that be possible, Ning Xue is the most important person in my life, so how could you possibly be a burden? If you say this kind of thing again, I’ll definitely be very upset.”

He knew that if he took Ning Xue by his side, the color of her hair and her face would definitely lead him to all kinds of troubles, this was why he originally left her behind, but now, he no longer had any thoughts about temporarily separating with her, he’d rather keep her by his side and protect her from any hardships, even if he had to do it using any means necessary.”

“But, because of me, brother hit his own elder brother, all because of me... ..”

Ye Wu Chen stopped walking, he crouched down and held her face, and whispered: “Xue’er, you are the closest person to me, how can that person possibly be my brother? furthermore.....” Wu Chen disdainfully sneered and continued talking: “He actually lured me into hitting him on purpose, because he’s pretty shrewd, he saw how important Xue’er was to me, and he thought he could provoke me into hitting him, so I rewarded him with a slap in the face.”

“Not brother’s..... brother? But.....”

“Not only him, everyone here isn’t my family. Do you still remember what grandpa Chu had said? I had been in a coma for 10 years, but the young master of the Ye family had only been lost 1 year ago, so how can I be their lost family?” Ye Wu Chen slowly explained to Ning Xue, he wouldn’t, and doesn’t need to hide anything from Ning Xue.

“That’s..... Brother is lying to them?” Ning Xue asked in a whisper.

Wu Chen smiled and said: “Yes, I was lying to them, because Xue’er and I need to have a home and an identity, which is the only way that I can take better care of Xue’er and search for my past self. And consequently, fate gave me this identity from the Ye family, but I will also do a few things for the Ye family, because as it looks right now, the Ye family is facing a huge crisis.”

“Brother’s past? Brother how will you find your past self?”

Ye Wu Chen’s brows slightly twisted, he thought for a moment and said: “Xue’er, do you believe in premonitions?”

Ning Xue blinked, not knowing how to answer.

“1 month ago, during the first time I saw Xue’er, at that time I had a strange feeling — if I didn’t find you and bring you back, I would regret it forever. Half a month ago, I previously felt that I would encounter a large calamity, and afterwards, I really almost died. At the present, Long Zheng Yang and I..... that is, your brother Long and I were talking when I heard him mention the Ye family, at that time, I had a strange feeling that I would definitely use a type of special method to join the Ye family. All of these came true..... and whenever I try hard to remember my past, a voice tells me that if I could handle the power within my body, which I named “Wu Chen Spell”, and if I could train it to the highest level, I could find my past and return to my original family. These strange feelings sometimes appear and sometimes they don’t, it’s illusionary and it seems like it comes from the depths of my soul. I haven’t lost that part of my memories, this is a special type of power called ‘Soul force’, I can use this power to manipulate my own or possibly even other people’s souls, and even peek at their memories or alter them, maybe even this amazing premonition is another form of soul force.”

Ning Xue blinked, she didn't really understand, but the anxiety and guilt on her face had already disappeared. Ye Wu Chen softly said: "Xue'er, brother's matters, you must keep it all a secret, ok?"

"En!" Ning Xue nodded: "I will definitely keep brother's secrets and I will definitely won't tell anyone."

Heavenly Star - Chapter 34

Ye Shui Yao

Ye Shui Yao's and Wu Chen's courtyard were only separated by a wall, but it was somewhat beyond Ye Wu Chen's expectations that the front courtyard's layout was actually much more simpler than his, on the bare ground, there was only a stone table which was surrounded by 4 chairs, and at the side there was a clean pond, within the pond, there was a slanted green lotus, which were budding, and apart from that, there weren't anything else.

And furthermore, it was too quiet here, as if there weren't anyone staying here.

Ye Wu Chen looked around, the corner of his mouth revealed a warm smile, and he led Ning Xue towards the lightly closed room in the middle, and afterwards gently pushed open the door.

"Get out!"

He had not yet entered when he heard a cold and emotionless voice from inside, it became quiet again afterwards and there weren't any other sounds.

Ning Xue stopped walking and questioningly looked at her brother, and afterwards Ye Wu Chen lightly pulled her inside. Ye Wu Chen walked without hesitation, as if he didn't even hear that cold voice.

A faint fragrance of a woman gently brushed on him, Ye Wu Chen lightly inhaled as his eyes swept through a girl's bedroom, and afterwards, he looked towards the back of the room and he saw a girl. She wore a blue dress that was long enough to cover her legs, her dark and gorgeous hair was casually draped over her shoulder, and she had a slender waist and a delicate figure, her tall figure wasn't any shorter than Ye Wu Chen's.

Ye Wu Chen couldn't help secretly gasping in admiration, she was truly worthy

of being called one of the 3 most beautiful girls in Tian Long Country, he had only seen her back but it was enough to stop time. She was only 19 years old but she already had such a figure that would be difficult to find in other women. Although she seemed a bit thin to Ye Wu Chen, but her height..... using his memories to calculate, was around 175 centimeters.

At this moment, a white roll of paper was spread out in front of her and her hand was softly painting, she heard the sounds of footsteps but she didn't turn around, and she coldly repeated: "Get out!"

"Is that all you have to say to your brother? You didn't even know if I was still alive for a year, but my sister doesn't even want to welcome me, and is asking me to leave instead. Ah, it truly saddens this brother." Ye Wu Chen admired her gently like a jade, she had a white, proud, and slender body that exposed half of a tender, snow white neck, as he bitterly said. He couldn't call other people as his parents, but calling her sister was very easy.

The girl's arm stopped and she finally turned around. Ye Wu Chen could finally see her true face, and for a moment, he suddenly felt that the world became brighter, it was as if a stone was thrown within the lake in his heart which caused countless of ripples. Her face was incomparably delicate, her eyebrows were slender and she had a beautiful body, her majestic eyes looked at him as if she was gazing at the earth from above, it was as if she was a fairy overlooking this mundane world. Even though her light blue dress was slightly too large, her chest still prominently bulged, Ye Wu Chen couldn't help staring for a moment as if he had a heart attack.

But the anger covering her cold face weren't thin and she was releasing a cold and distant feeling. Even though she saw her younger brother that were believed to have been dead for a year, she still didn't show the slightest amount of happiness on her face and her delicate eyebrows narrowed instead, because a man had never entered her room before, not even her brother and father. And furthermore, she had a strange feeling as her brother stood in front of her; it was as if he was completely different.

"It's good that you have returned, now get out."

She glanced at Ye Wu Chen and Ning Xue, looked away afterwards, and after

coldly saying a few words, she turned around again. Even Ning Xue's snow-white hair and spoilt appearance didn't even attract her eyes; it seemed as if nothing in the world would be able to make ripples in her heart.

Ye Wu Chen shrugged..... his mother had talked about his sister, but this sister could be compared to an ice sculpture, and furthermore it was even hard to melt.

He couldn't help remembering what Long Zhen Yang had bitterly said before, even though he was the prince, Ye Shui Yao never even glanced at him.

At this moment she began to paint gently, her paint brush moved as if it was dancing and a magnificent mountain peak appeared on the paper, she drew each peak from the base of the mountain to the summit, from the bottom to the top of the paper; a steep cliff completely occupied the scene. This was only a 19 year old girl but regardless of her strokes or the luster of ink, her movements were already on the boundaries of a great master. Under her hands, the mountain peak came to life and it exuded a majestic atmosphere, if a person were to look at it, he would feel as if he were in front of a mountain himself with his head raised in admiration.

Ye Wu Chen couldn't help secretly shaking his head; even though she had skillful brushwork, it lacked a spiritually moving air, and even though her painting looked extremely real, it was a bit rigid. Perhaps this was true for most people of the world and even his fairly like sister wasn't an exception.

"Women often love to paint flowers and rivers but they rarely like to paint mountains, a proud and Majestic Mountain may not be right for you, if you yearn for the peaceful mountains and a secluded life, your brother can take you sightseeing, there's no need to stay in your room and focus on painting." Ye Wu Chen gently said and shook his head and sighed afterwards: "Sister even though your painting skills have already reached perfection, and there are few people that can exceed you, but..... unfortunately, your artistic conception is far from satisfactory."

Ye Shui Yao turned a deaf ear to him and her hands continued to stroke but her eyebrows lightly narrowed for a moment.

Suddenly, a shadow flashed in front of her, and a pair of soft hands already

covered her right hand, she unconsciously pulled out her hand and she almost coldly called out, but she found out that her paint brush were already in Ye Wu Chen hands, she didn't know when her table had been covered with a piece of white paper, hiding her unfinished painting.

“When painting a mountain and a mountain peak, if you draw the earth and the sky, you won't even need to paint the complete picture of a mountain.”

As he was talking, his right hand had already began to sway rapidly, his sight hanged low, his expression was tranquil, and he had a faint smile on his face, Ye Shui Yao became entranced for a moment, and unexpectedly didn't say anything, but when her sight fell on the painting, her eyes became filled with shock.

Ye Shui Yao's eyes suddenly released splendor, he didn't draw a mountain and a mountain peak and he only drew a faint outline of a sea of clouds looming over a mountain summit, but people couldn't help imagining impressive high ridges and peaks due to the spectacular clouds, compared to her paper completely filled with the mountain peak, it was simply a complete picture of a majestic mountain, the difference in artistic conception was truly as different as the sky and the earth.

And the whole painting, he only took less than a minute!

“The secret of the form of the mountain is in the edge of the clouds, it's better than a steep 10,000 feet! To paint a mountain, you must first paint the clouds.” Ye Wu Chen slightly smiled, he moistened the paint brush again and returned it to Ye Shui Yao's hands afterwards, and at the same time, his palm automatically stroked the back of her hand. Her hands were as tender as snow and warm as jade.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 35

Shui Yao's Heart

Ye Shui Yao's sight wandered around and she looked again at her younger brother that she was familiar, yet also unfamiliar with. His appearance was still the same as before but it was a bit more mature from the one from her memories. He was still very handsome but he had lost that air of delicateness and feminineness and he exuded a type of indescribable sumptuous and elegant temperament, and his demeanor exuded courage naturally, which gave off a feeling that he held others in contempt, as if he had never attached any importance towards other people, but strangely, he didn't let others feel enmity towards him. His two eyes that were originally full of depression were now as deep as the ocean, and under the touch of his gaze, it made her have a strange feeling of wanting to get lost within the depths of his eyes.

"Who taught you?" Ye Shui Yao looked away, she looked at the finished painting again and small ripples formed in her heart. She had been painting since she was a child; she had painted enough mountains over the period of 10 years, and under her hands, she had already painted countless of tall mountains. And with just this painting that he finished in less than 1 minute, it unexpectedly made her feel that the works she had finished over the years were unpleasant to the eyes.

"I learned by myself! The idea behind this painting is actually very simple, but sister just haven't discovered it yet."

Successfully knocking on the door of her heart, Ye Wu Chen pulled up a chair, unceremoniously sat down, and held Ning Xue in his arms: "This is Ning Xue, she is my adopted little sister. Xue'er, greet your older sister."

"Big sister, hello..... My name is Ning Xue." Ning Xue lightly waved her soft little hands and shyly smiled.

Ye Shui Yao had an indifferent expression as she lightly nodded, and her sight fell on Ye Wu Chen's body again, trying to decide whether this man was the same with the younger brother from her memories.

"Sister, are you unsatisfied at having been born at the Ye family?" Ye Wu Chen suddenly asked without even thinking. But these words stunned Ye Shui Yao and she looked away afterwards, her eyes gradually became blurry and she didn't know that to think.

"Whether it be sister's courtyard or her room, even though they're very elegant, their design is extremely simple, but this should be a deliberate request of sister right? Sister doesn't have any makeup and perfume on her body, doesn't wear powder on her face, and she doesn't even wear any jewelry. So it's only natural that my naturally beautiful sister, a fairy transformed as a human, simply doesn't want these secular ornaments, and her being born as the only daughter of this wealthy family is a bit abnormal. And furthermore, sister even has such a big courtyard with maids and servants, I wonder if sister likes peace and quiet or just like living in seclusion?"

"I've been missing for a year as well, but sister isn't even the least bit concerned about me. Maybe if those shouts weren't loud enough to let sister hear them, sister wouldn't even know that I've already returned. Sister also seldom talks to our parents and even neglects her relatives, so sister must definitely possess heavy things on her mind." Ye Wu Chen secretly muttered: "In our world, this was called psychological barriers, a serious focus of mental illness."

"How many women have tried climbing up to riches at all costs? For most women, becoming a maid of the Ye family would be attractive to them. But sister had been born standing at a position that most women wouldn't even dare to look at, and now..... I think that there's nothing that can touch sister, sister rejects her own identity and power within Tian Long Country as one of the Ye family and wants to lead a simple and peaceful life, but she sister's identity is destined not to change, so you could only feel depression in your heart, and over time, your heart slowly closed up."

Ye Shui Yao gently closed her eyes and sadly said: "I didn't expect that the person that would be able to understand my heart would be you."

“That’s only natural, because we’re brother and sister!” Ye Wu Chen laughed and said, just like how a good younger brother would.

Ye Shui Yao didn’t speak, flashing a pair of beautiful eyes like a pool of crystal clear water, they were lovely and touching.

“1 year ago, I suddenly disappeared from the Ye family, if one isn’t a fool, one can see that there’s a force aimed towards my Ye family. Not mentioning what this force is, if I had truly died like that, the result would be; there would be no one besides from sister to continue the future generation, but sister isn’t only a woman, you’re also famous for being an ascetic with a pure heart, with no one else to continue the future generation, it’s simply impossible to not receive support from the Ye family, thinking about this in this way, who would benefit the most?” Ye Wu Chen casually said.

Ye Shui Yao slightly narrowed her eyebrows, and her lip gently opened: “You mean..... Little Yun?”

Ye Wu Chen didn’t reply, and continued talking instead: “So in the end, who’s targeting my Ye family? At the present in Tian Long City, which person doesn’t know that the Ye family is contending against the Li family and the Hua family, and that the Ye family and the Lin family are usually on bad terms, not long ago, I talked with an old man that lived in seclusion for the past 15 years about the affairs in Tian Long City, and he told me that within the few strong powers, the strongest were the Ye family, but he didn’t even mention the Lin family, this means that the Lin family didn’t even enter his eyes 15 years ago, but they developed this quickly in a mere 15 years, and now whether it be in financial resources, power, or prestige, they’re already strong enough to contend against our Ye family, So in this case, what is the force that is supporting the Lin family? And why is the Lin family’s development this rapid? And they’re even intentionally provoking our Ye family, are there really no reason for all of this?”

Ye Shui Yao: “.....”

“Now, even though the Lin family’s Lin Kuang have also achieved a few meritorious military achievements, they’re still extremely far off when compared to our Ye family. And after, Lin Kuang’s daughter, which is now the Lin family’s family head, Lin Zhan’s younger sister, Lin Xiu became the present queen, the Lin

family also continued rising, yet the speed of their rise is still a bit too fast, but if the imperial family is behind them and is sparing no effort in pushing them, then this would provide a lot of explanations.”

Regarding the basic information about the Lin family, Ye Wu Chen casually asked when he and Wang Wen Shu were walking towards his courtyard, and because he’s Wang Wen Shu’s “son”, she naturally answered all of his questions.

Ye Shui Yao’s eyes shrank slightly and she flatly said: “What do you want to say?”

“I’m saying that, the Ye family’s power is extremely big, but they don’t know how to keep a low profile and exercise restraint, they don’t know that their high achievements usually gather jealousy to the owner. At the present, the Ye family barely holds one third of the total military power in the entire Tian Long Country, and they gained even more prestige by producing two valiant generals within two generations, no one can compare to them and even most of the soldiers would be proud to serve under the generals of the Ye family. Because the Ye family is this powerful, how can the emperor remain calm? If I were the emperor, I would hide behind my title as the emperor and the first thing that I would do would be to suppress the Ye family. This is only natural because the Ye family is too powerful, and even though the Ye family is loyal and have performed countless of outstanding military services, he still can’t fall out with them, therefore..... he helped a family rise to power and contend against the Ye family so that they would lose their independence, and afterwards, he would use a quiet method to control the Ye family in his hands, and this would be the perfect result.”

Ye Shui Yao: “.....”

Heavenly Star - Chapter 36

Ye Qi, Ye Ba

“The Ye family is so loyal that their loyalty can never be doubted by the imperial family, and it’s even more impossible for them to even think about replacing the Ye family, but the royal court are constantly scheming against each other to try and take the title of the emperor. And with the Ye family, if I were the emperor, I definitely wouldn’t be able to rest in peace. Of course, these are only my baseless suspicions and it might only be a delusion.”

After listening to him speak with a smile on his face, Ye Shui Yao didn’t know when her sight fell on his face, and she became a bit bewildered. After a while, she slowly said: “Are you really little Chen?!”

Ye Wu Chen showed an innocent face: “Of course I am, don’t you even recognize your own brother? Look at the back of my hand, these are my marks, and just recently, I was also forced to test my blood..... Oh, that’s right, sister probably still doesn’t know that I’ve been in a coma for a long time and that I’ve been saved by senior sword deity and he taught me a lot of things. When I woke up I couldn’t remember my memories from before. So today is also my first time seeing sister.”

Ye Shui Yao became stunned again, his face had a light smile, and her eyes suddenly became entranced, Ye Shui Yao quickly looked away and asked indifferently: “Why are you telling me this?”

“Because I know that sister actually already knows about this. Because they’re too loyal, your father and grandfather never thought about these, and even though sister already knows about this, sister can’t talk about it because even if you tell them you would only suffer being scolded. Therefore you simply showed no interest about our external affairs, but you’re still worried about the future of the family, and you gradually began to resent yourself for being born in this

family, and began to yearn for an ordinary quiet and peaceful life.”

Ye Wu Chen secretly shook his head, does she actually think that her so-called ordinary life would truly be beautiful? If she had been born in an ordinary family, regardless of anything else, with just her appearance, she would still be unable to have a peaceful life and she would be forced to become a plaything in someone’s hands. But it’s only because that she was born in the Ye family that she was able to live this kind of peaceful life. Ahh women.....

“Sister should already know this right? The blood of the males in the Ye family had always been matchlessly powerful but I didn’t inherit the good genes of my predecessors..... and the traits that I got instead were numerous illnesses and disabilities, this is a bit strange. But sister and I afterwards, we wouldn’t be able to accomplish anything no matter how much we try hard, truthfully speaking, this is also very strange. If I were the emperor, I could also make this happen, a few random drugs could easily accomplish this if I want, Sister what do you think? Sister should be glad of your own cold personality, if sister had outstanding abilities that could match with men’s, their target wouldn’t only be me.”

After speaking for more than half a day Ye Wu Chen was rather quite thirsty, he gave Ye Shui Yao a faint smile, he carried Ning Xue and stood up, and walked outside the door afterwards: “I’ve already disturbed sister today so I’ll come back on another day, if sister also misses me, you can come and visit my small courtyard anytime.”

“Have you told grandfather about this?” Ye Shui Yao asked.

“No, I won’t use my mouth to tell them, I’ll use facts.”

She kept looking at his back until he disappeared from her line of sight and Ye Shui Yao gently sat down afterwards, her heart that were originally as calm as a serene lake now found it hard to restore her tranquility. After sitting quietly for a long time, she mumbled: “Is he really little Chen.....”

She thought about her brother that were originally bed-ridden all year round, his body was frail, and his character were extremely weak, she thought again about how he displayed a sumptuous and elegant appearance just a moment ago, each and every one of his words had struck deep within her sealed heart,

she became anxious and she shook her head, her eyes were fixed at the painting he had finished just a moment ago “Sea of Clouds Mountain” and she didn’t move away for a long time.

Ye Wu Chen and Ning Xue returned to their small courtyard, Wang Wen Shu weren’t waiting for them, but rather two persons with respectful expressions, they looked like they weren’t even 20 years old yet and they wore the black clothes of servants, after seeing him return, they immediately came to welcome him and bowed: “Young master, Young lady Ning Xue, this lowly servant is Ye Qi and this is my younger brother Ye Ba, the madam sent us to follow you in the future, so we will definitely obey the small young master.....”

“Call me Young master, I don’t like being called ‘small’. Furthermore, you don’t need to call yourselves lowly in the future, are you really small?” Ye Wu Chen flatly said, he ignored them afterwards and pulled Ning Xue towards the study.

(TL Note – “Are you really small” – it’s a pun, it’s hard to explain but basically, “lowly” in Chinese contains the character small.)

“Yes, yes” Ye Qi and Ye Ba panickedly answered and compliantly followed. No person at the Ye family doesn’t know that this small young master is no longer that sickly master and that even his personality had hugely changed, after he had returned, he threw a slap at the young master, so he would definitely be difficult to serve, when Wang Wen Shu had called for them, they could only complain incessantly within their hearts. Now that the small young master had said these words, how would they even dare to say half the word “No”.

Ye Wu Chen sat down while holding Ning Xue, and Ye Qi promptly served him a fragrant cup of tea, he smilingly said: “Small..... Oh no, young master, your cup of tea.”

Ye Wu Chen nodded and drank a mouthful, the fragrance of the tea permeated the air and gave his lungs a pleasant feeling, he couldn’t help thinking that the wine of this world was horrible, but the tea was a bit similar to the tea from his memories. While he drank, he casually asked: “Ye Qi and Ye Ba, where are your hometowns and what were your original names?”

Once a male enters the Ye family, they could only use the surname “Ye” and the names are numerically ordered, but a maid doesn’t need to change her

name. Ye Qi bowed first: “Answering the young master, this lowly..... Xiao Ba and I are from southern Cheng An City, we are blood brothers, I was formerly called Yang Dianfeng.”

(TL Note – “names are numerically ordered” —->> Ye Qi = 7 , Ye Ba = 8)

Pffftt ~~~

Ye Wu Chen spurted out the tea that were rapidly flowing down his throat, it splashed on Ning Xue’s face and even all over her clothes, he hurriedly put his cup down and helped Ning Xue wipe off the tea while he was violently coughing and even his tears almost came out.

Ye Wu Chen’s exaggerated reaction made Ye Qi feel nervous and he apologetically smiled in a hurry: “Let young master laugh, because father chose this name, i wish I could officially change it in the future, but now..... I am honored to serve the young master, this is almost the luckiest event of my life.”

“How about Xiao Ba? What was your name?” Ye Wu Chen shook his neck, finally removing the discomfort in his throat.

“Answering master, My name was Yang Gaofeng.” Ye Ba hung his head.

3 black lines appeared on Ye Wu Chen’s forehead. Dianfeng, Gaofeng, what a powerful style of naming, unfortunately, their father was surnamed Yang.

Yangdianfeng, Yanggaofeng, how much talent does their father have to choose names like this.

(TL:Note Yangdianfeng = crazy sheep/ epilepsy , Yanggaofeng = insane lamb)

Heavenly Star - Chapter 37

4 Gods of Tian Chen

Ye Wu Chen waved his arm: "Leave me; I'm fine for the time being..... Oh wait, I need to ask you a few questions." Ye Wu Chen suddenly thought of something and called them.

"Young master, you asked?"

"What's the name of the current emperor?"

"This is....." the two brothers glanced at each other and they stood up and began to stammer: "Young master, the emperor's name is taboo, we....."

"I asked you to tell me, and no outsiders will hear of this anyway." Ye Wu Chen looked annoyed.

"Understood, The emperor's true name is..... Long Yin."

"What about the previous emperor's?"

"Long Zheng."

"Oh?" he secretly thought that, Grandpa Long was actually called Long Zheng. He was also considered a cynical person, he hadn't even reached his middle ages yet when he renounced the title of emperor and gave it to his son, he didn't want glory and riches and he lived in seclusion in the north, he detached himself from worldly affairs so that he could be free from the vortex of power struggles.

Long Yin, although he hasn't met him yet, maybe he's qualified to be the emperor and he probably has a bit of ability. But Long Zheng Yang, even after refining his heart for 5 years, he should still have a few things left on his body. Although he sincerely addresses him as his younger brother, if he becomes the emperor afterwards.....

Ye Wu Chen was a frighteningly talented person in his past life, he had already

accomplished terrifying achievements on the four arts, and on the verses of his poems and songs before he was seven. and he was even more proficient in the ancient and modern human history, summing it up, no emperor could possibly become friends or brothers with another person in the true sense of the word, otherwise they wouldn't have a second ending. Even though it's fictional, within <<The Deer and the Cauldron>>, Qianlong and Wei Xiaobao were originally a pure pair of brothers, but in the end, Qianlong still killed Wei Xiaobao — — Although Wei Xiaobao used a plan to escape.

“Then I'll ask you again, Since the Tian Long imperial family uses Long as their family name, Does that mean that a dragon truly exists within our Tian Long Country?” Ye Wu Chen asked.

The two brothers, Ye Qi and Ye Ba, had their eyes wide open, this thunderous question that Ye Wu Chen asked wasn't light. There were rumors that the young master had lost his memories, but this memory loss was really too much.

“Oh? Has someone seen it yet?”

Ye Qi shook his head: “No one has ever seen it before, but legends had been passed down since a long time ago. The Tian Mie Volcano is said to be the hottest place in the Tian Chen Continent, ordinary people can't even go near it, let alone enter it. There were originally many experts that believed that they would be able reach the dragon fruit within the heart of the volcano alive, but they were all buried within it.”

“The hottest place..... the fire element there must be extremely active.” Ye Wu Chen whispered to himself, and suddenly asked afterwards: “What area has the most concentrated Ling Qi on the Tian Chen Continent?”

“Most Concentrated Ling Qi?” Ye Qi and Ye Ba had blank faces.

“Say it like this, which areas on the Tian Chen Continent are relatively more dreadful, for example; areas similar to the Tian Mie Volcano.”

“The most dreadful places.....” Ye Qi scratched his head, while thinking he said: “I don't know that many, but I heard that North of Tian Chen Continent, The Cold North of Cang Lan Country is extremely dreadful, furthermore all kinds of Ice ferocious beasts covers the area, an ordinary person would never dare to go to that place, there's also a legend there about the Xue Nu palace, there lives

inside someone known as the medical god, Xue Nu, which is why many people seeking medical treatment also go to that place, but they all freeze to death.”

“The Dafeng Country is said to have a huge cliff that stretches for dozens of miles, which is called Duan Hun Yuan, it’s said to be bottomless, the Dafeng Country once tried to measure it’s depth, but no matter what method they used they couldn’t touch it’s bottom, a few people used a long rope to climb down but they all disappeared in midair, when people pulled the rope up, the rope would simply be empty without exceptions.”

“The South of Kui Shui Country has a place where someone would die if they enter, a land of the lost, in the past, even the Kui Shui Country sent a Heaven level expert to enter it, but he didn’t come out afterwards. Legend says that countless of incomparably savage ancient evil beasts wander inside.”

“These are all extremely dreadful places, however.” Ye Ba interrupted: “when it comes to the most dreadful of places, nothing can compare with our Tian Long Country’s Devil’s Tower!”

After mentioning the Devil’s tower, Ye Qi also nodded and his face showed how terrified he was: “The Devil’s Tower is just a few miles west of Tian Long City, within a small black forest, originally, Tian Long City were used as a prison for a few powerful criminals, but ever since 20 years ago, 4 god level experts of Tian Chen Continent subdued the woman of the divine wrath and locked her up in the Devil’s tower afterwards, it was then when that place became the most terrible out of all the dreadful places..... One day, the guard that was originally guarding the tower suddenly bled from all over his body, while bleeding he said ‘they’re all dead..... they’re all dead.....’ and his body suddenly exploded afterwards..... after that, no matter who entered there, they would never come out or they would come out and bite anyone that they saw, and would also die before long. Nowadays, everyone in the Tian Chen Continent knows that forbidden area, let alone going in, no one would even dare going near it, if someone is going eastwards, an ordinary person would rather circle around a farther road than pass through those dark woods.”

“Was that woman on that day really that terrible? What does she look like?” Ye Wu Chen asked interestedly.

“I don’t know because, besides from the 4 gods, all the people that knew what she looked like had all died.” Ye Qi hung his head and answered.

This was the second time Ye Wu Chen had heard the name “Woman of the Divine Wrath”, the first time was when Chu Jing Tian had told him, the two pieces of information that he had received weren’t that different, but it made him more and more interested to the “Woman of the Divine Wrath” that everyone was afraid of.

“Now tell me, who are those 4 god level experts?” Ye Wu Chen picked up his teacup and gently fed Ning Xue tea.

“This..... The 4 god level experts, one is from our Tian Long Country, the sword deity ‘Chu Cang Ming’, legend says that during the time when Tian Long Country were in a crisis, the sword deity held the Cang Ming sword in his hand and went to the frontier and laid out an array, the power of one man had intimidated an army of a hundred thousand into retreating, Nowadays, the Dafeng Country doesn’t dare to lightly offend our Tian Long Country, The sword deity is an unforgettable legendary character in our Tian Long Country. Another one is the Wind God of the Dafeng Country, Chao Yang, he’s been entrusted with the life of the country, because he had promised to protect the Dafeng Country’s imperial family for a lifetime, an assassin had never appeared in the imperial palace during the past few years, but the Dafeng country regrets that he only wants to protect, he doesn’t want to obey orders, and he doesn’t want to stand on the battlefield.”

“There’s also the Cang Lan Country’s ‘Xue Nu’ from the Xue Nu palace, she’s not only the best medical god, she also possesses a god level expert’s frightening strength, rumors say that, if she waves her hand, she could easily freeze an enormous army. The last one is from the Kui Shui Country, a person called Wu Qiaocui, but there are very few rumors about him, he ordinarily comes and go without a trace, as if he was a ghost. No one has ever seen what he even looks like.”

“The 4 god level experts originally doesn’t contact each other, but because of the extremely terrifying woman of the divine wrath, the 4 had finally worked together, they subdued her after fighting for a whole night and used the devil’s chain to seal her off..... Oh, young master, the devil’s chain came from the

Southern Emperor sect , it is said to be a strange ancient object, it can seal anything and only the Nan Huang Sword has the ability to cut it.”

Heavenly Star - Chapter 38

Xiao Lu

The young master asked questions after questions, Ye Qi had stayed with his body half bent for so long that his back was aching. Ye Wu Chen nodded satisfiedly, he would firmly remember these few names and their characteristics, and Ye Qi's last words made his heart beat ferociously.

He had almost finished asking what he wanted to know and Ye Wu Chen was going to let them retire when they suddenly heard the sounds of light footsteps outside the door, Ye Wu Chen could hear that the footsteps were cautious and even had hints of nervousness.

Very quickly, a small and delicate figure appeared in front of the door, it was a girl who looked like she was about 16 years old, she was wearing a green cheongsam, and she looked elegant and graceful. After seeing Ye Wu Chen, she hurriedly bowed her head and gave a small bow afterwards: "this lowly girl saw the small young master, I am called Xiao Lu, the madam told me to serve the little master and the young lady Ning Xue."

Even though they were separated by a few steps, he could hear the small maid's heartbeat going "thump thump", he couldn't help thinking uncomfortably: "it's not like I'm looking for someone to slap, why is she so afraid of me?"

Ye Qi and Ye Ba's hearts went cold, they wanted to cry but they had no tears. The Ye Mansion's youngest, cutest, prettiest, cleverest and most lovable maid had actually been sent to serve the little master..... they were finished, they didn't have any chance at all, and tonight, they wouldn't be able to count how many of their brothers would be crying. For a clan's young master, what was a maid's biggest purpose? It's to warm the bed, warm the bed AH!

"Oh? You're dressed in green and your name is little green? Don't tell me that

your sisters are also named little purple, little red, little yellow..... and little white?” Ye Wu Chen smiled while asking.

(TL Note: Xiao Lu = little green)

Seeing that the little master didn't have a violent personality like she had imagined, and that his voice had a warm and gentle feeling to it, Xia Lu's timid and worried heart finally calmed down, and she secretly began to look at the little master in front of her, after 1 look, she suddenly felt her heartbeat accelerate, because she had never seen such a peerlessly handsome man before, Ye Wu Chen also smiled and looked at her, when his gaze touched her, Xia Lu suddenly felt as if she was electrocuted, her heart felt as if she had bumped into a deer.

Ye Wu Chen's appearance and noble bearings had a fatal and destructive power towards this young and inexperienced girl and had resulted to the first awakenings of love.

A woman only needs her face to conquer a man, but she couldn't use these words on a man with a better body.

Xia Lu had just entered the Ye family a month ago, this was the first time he saw the Ye family's young master Wu Chen, before this, she had been serving Wang Wen Shu everyday, and she had won her affection. Therefore, she sent her favorite servant girl to serve her son.

“Don't call me little master in the future, just call me young master, because I'm the only young master in the Ye family, ok?”

“Ah..... Yes.”

“Well, I'm going to have a rest, you may retire now. Oh, by the way, Xiao Lu, tell the madam that you'll be moving to the room next to mine, Xiao Qi and Xiao Ba will also move here, so it will be easier for me to call you in the future.”

The three persons gently left the room and retired. Ye Wu Chen stood up and walked towards the bedroom and put Ning Xue on top of the huge bed. Ning Xue sighed happily, she suddenly threw herself on the soft bed and began rolling around the bed, accompanied by her lovable laughter: “Wow, what a big, soft bed, it's really **!”

(TL Note: wtf is censored there? Was the bed indecent? Wth)

Ye Wu Chen showed a satisfied smile: Xue'er can sleep on it everyday in the future, do you like it?"

Previously, she only slept on tree leaves on the damp and cold ground, after Wu Chen had brought her back, they slept together on the hard wooden bed, while they were traveling to Tian Long City, they occasionally stayed at inns, but they sometimes slept outside. This bed would only be ordinary to the eyes of this rich family, but it was this little girl's paradise.

"I like it, I Love it!" Ning Xue's tiny body lied on top of the bed, she felt so comfortable that she almost didn't want to move, this was the first time she had completely relaxed after accumulating a lot of fatigue while they were traveling, her whole body wanted her to sleep: "Brother, I want to sleep, hold me....."

Wu Chen took off her shoes, exposing her jade like little feet. At the same time, he kicked off his own shoes, lied on the bed and embraced Ning Xue, he gently sighed, his whole body was exhausted. These days, he was really tired. Not only because of the journey, but because his heart were also full of hesitation. He didn't in the past, but since he appeared in this strange world, how could he truly calm down.

"Xue'er, we have a home." He closed his eyes and whispered.

"yeah....." Ning Xue answered sleepily.

"Xue'er, do you think I should continue pretending to be sickly? Or should I pretend to be a bossy young master?"

"As long as it's brother..... Xue'er likes it. But, Xue'er doesn't think brother should get sick....."

"Ah, since Xue'er doesn't think so..... then I'll make it widely known..... my character, it's really hard for me to endure."

"....."

"Ning Xue's nose moved lightly and her breathing became constant, she had already fallen asleep.

"Fame, silence is a hundred times more difficult to endure, even though this is

a strange world, but how can I remain a nobody? Since fate sent me here, then before I leave, I'll make the entire Tian Chen continent remember my name!"

"Little master of the Ye family, you had been despised by too many people, now let me justify your identity for you. If you're under the nine springs, you can thank or hate me from there."

He had a self-confident smile on his lips, he erased all of his distracting thoughts and gradually fell asleep. He felt as though his blood destined him to be a lonely man throughout his life.

.....

"Young master, the madam is calling you to eat dinner."

It was afternoon, a girl's gentle voice woke him from his sleep, Ye Wu Chen opened his eyes and quietly got up, he nodded at Xiao Lu to retire, and then he gently shook Ning Xue to wake her up.

He didn't know how long they had slept, the sky outside was already a bit dark, so it should already be after dusk. Ye Wu Chen led Ning Xue, and let Xiao Lu bring them to an excessively luxurious dining room.

On that evening, the cloud of gloom that hung over the Ye family had finally disappeared, and they welcomed his return with a "reunion dinner", of course, this "reunion dinner" was a custom of Ye Shui Yao, many people were only engrossed in eating, such as Ning Xue and Ye Wu Yun.

The mood on the dining table was surprisingly friendly, "The whole family" felt joyous and harmonious, every face had various forms of laughter. Even though Ye Wu Chen still didn't call them his parents, but they were still very respectful, and acting as a very promising son, Ye Wu Yun also greeted him with a smile, as if the slapping incident never happened at noon. Ye Wu Yun were still acting as if he were peaceful and gentle, he was very intimate with everybody, and he was even a bit humble, he seemed as though he completely didn't care about that slap on the face.

The most frightening thing wasn't a mad dog, but a dog that still wouldn't bark even if it had been beaten with a stick. Ye Wu Chen's eyes were half narrowed as he looked towards Ye Wu Yun, but Ye Wu Yun just had a smile on his face.

Suddenly, Ye Wu Yun's smiling expression became completely frozen, because in an instant, Ye Wu Chen's gaze made him feel as if he were looking at an extremely poisonous snake. But after that instant, that feeling completely disappeared. He became startled for a moment, but he thought that he was just hallucinating.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 39

Night Visit

Above the dining table, Ye Wu Chen talked about his previous experiences, he roughly told them everything, after dinner, Wang Wen Shu pulled him aside to ask questions, especially about when he almost lost his life half a month ago. Ye Wu Chen effortlessly told her the story, without any flaws, and by the time he returned to his small courtyard, a crescent moon already hung overhead and stars covered the night sky.

Xiao Lu, who had been eagerly waiting for his return, finally heaved a sigh of relief, while blushing, she said: "Young master, the bath is ready, let me serve the young master in the bath."

At this moment, Xiao Lu's hands were clenched at the corner of her clothes, and she was unconsciously twisting, her head was hung low and she was afraid to look at his eyes, this was the first time she would serve a male master in the bath, her heart was nervous. Ye Wu Chen shook his head: "No need, I'll be fine by myself."

Xiao Lu let out a heavy sigh of relief, but for no reason, she felt an inexplicable sense of loss in her heart. "Young lady Ning Xue's bath is also ready in my room, I should serve young lady Ning Xue in the bath..... May I?"

"No, I like washing Xue'er. Xiao Lu, there's no need to call us for baths, wash yourself and go to sleep early." Ye Wu Chen led Ning Xue to their room, he closed the door and locked it afterwards.

Xiao Yu's eyes widened, her small mouth hanged open, and her heart beat rapidly..... could it be that the young master actually likes such a small child....."

"Is the water hot?"

“It’s a little bit hot.”

“Well, look at brother.” Ye Wu Chen submerged his hand in the water, his palm flashed with a faint blue light, and the temperature of the water began to fall.

“Is this ok?”

“Oh, it’s good now, he he he.”

The pure white dress of unknown materials laid quietly on the bed, Ning Xue stood, compared to her petite body, the “enormous” bath was too big, the water only exposed her small head and her petite snow white shoulders, her eyes were closed as she enjoyed Ye Wu Chen’s hands wandering around her body.

“When it feels cold just tell me.”

Ye Wu Chen’s hands slid across every inch of skin on her body, her skin felt amazingly smooth. This wasn’t the first time that he washed Ning Xue, but each time that he did, he would discover that her body were always spotless, and were as smooth as soft jade, maybe taking a bath was unnecessary for her.

Even though it was night, the room was still as bright as day, hanging on the ceiling, two huge white pearls were releasing bright light, but the light wasn’t blinding. The Tian Chen Continent naturally didn’t have electrical lights, these glowing beads weren’t the legendary treasure of heaven and earth, known as night pearls, but rather a type of top level light magic lamp. Within the rare teams of magicians, having a light magician was very rare, their magic had no attacking capabilities, and they only possessed simple healing abilities. But in the Tian Chen Continent, light magicians were recognized for their magic lamps. During the day, they can compress and inject light elements into a special object, allowing them to release light for a long period of time, and these objects would become strange magic lamps.

The more powerful the light magician, the longer the magic lamp would be able to release light. Of course, ordinary people couldn’t afford such things, like the one in Ye Wu Chen’s room, it could release light for a month and it was only used by a very small number of people.

Ning Xue looked like a cursed spirit, with a cursed face, but she possessed a

flawless fairy-like body. Her skin was snow white, her waist and hips were as slender as a willow, her body looked extremely petite; yet her lovable breast faintly protruded on her chest, they looked as tender and fresh as a newly peeled bamboo shoot, her peaks that were slightly sticking up had droplets that were about to fall at any moment, those two dots looks so tender and red as if they were small pink gems, yet those droplets still remained crystal clear.

Ye Wu Chen's eyes only held love and appreciation without any traces of lust. He and Ning Xue enjoyed this kind of intimate feeling even though they've been only been together for a short month, these two people both didn't have a past and could only rely on each other, they even experienced being separated by life and death, and now, they already shared everything with each other.

"Brother, you're always giving me a bath, why do you never allow me give brother a bath?" Ning Xue looked upward and asked.

"Because I don't need to take a bath." Wu Chen gently played with her petite and tender buttocks, and replied with a smile.

"Don't need? Why not?" Ning Xue had look of curiosity, and she lightly flicked her long white hair, scattering small pieces of gorgeous white shadows.

"Because brother's body automatically removes all kinds of filth, so I'll never be dirty, even my clothes will never be dirty." Said Ye Wu Chen while he removed his right hand from Ning Xue's body, he put his hand on the surface of the water and his palm flashed with a faint red light and released heat, making the cold water turn a bit warm.

10 minutes later, Ye Wu Chen picked up Ning Xue's naked body from the water, wiped her thin body dry, then put her on top of the bed and covered her with a thin blanket.

"Brother, let's go to sleep....." Ning Xue spread her flawless arms, signaling Wu Chen to embrace her. Sleeping within his arms had unconsciously became a habit for her, moreover it was a hard habit to drop.

Wu Chen put her arms back into the blanket, then touched her small face afterwards and said: "Xue'er, wait obediently for brother. I need to do something first, but I'll be back soon."

“En, brother, be sure to come back soon.” Ning Xue nodded very cutely, her eyes lightly blinked, but she tried very hard to not let her reluctance show on her face.

The night wasn't deep, the people on the Ye Mansion weren't sleeping yet, most of the rooms were still bright with the light from magic lamps or oil lamps, plus the crescent moon were still suspended in the sky, under the night sky, the Ye mansion were covered with a layer of brightness, so that they wouldn't be incapable of seeing the surroundings.

Ye Wu Chen quietly walked away from his room, the small courtyard was very quiet, only the room next door had sounds of flowing water, Xiao Lu was probably taking a bath. His feet and his body flashed with a green light for an instant, and he quietly leapt onto the roof, his body was as light as a feather and he fell like a piece of leaf. After he landed, he looked like a flash of white lightning as he dashed wildly along the roof towards his target.

There's a specially designed clothing for “thieves” and night stalkers known as “night walker”, not only are they skintight for mobility, they're also as black as ink, after putting on the clothes, a person could blend in with the night and become hard to detect. But wearing a strikingly white night walker — there's either a problem with his mind, or he possesses extreme self-confidence and arrogance.

At this moment, with his body dressed in clothes as white as snow, Ye Wu Chen was obviously not the former.

In this world, this was the first time that he had displayed such astonishing speed, while he was running, a faintly discernable voice echoed from the depths of his consciousness.....

“..... Our power can give us a powerful body and countless of magical abilities, but the first thing that it bestows us is an extremely high speed, you must not underestimate speed, in the world of martial arts only the quick are not broken, even though I was only on the first layer of strength, but when I relied on the speed it gave me, even people with strength far surpassing mine were rendered helpless. So, when your power is not strong enough, be sure to make good use of your speed, because not only will it help you against surprise attacks, but also

with dodging storm-like attacks, when you're confronted with an enemy you can't contend with, you could still perfectly run away..... Even though our speed won't increase significantly faster with the increase of our strength, but when we reach the peak of our power, we'll be able to manipulate space, at that time, we would no longer need speed."

This is what I named "Wu Chen Spell" what is this power?

Heavenly Star - Chapter 40

Accident

He moved as if he were flying, under the curtain of darkness, a white shadow flashed by. After dinner, He was pulled aside by Wang Wen Shu to tour around the entire Ye Mansion, conveniently, he also took note of the bright places and secret hiding spots and remembered them in his mind, at this time, he was running on the perfect route to avoid being seen.

He lightly jumped, the inertia within his body enabled him to cross a distance of more than ten meters, he landed on another rooftop, like sand falling to the ground, without making any sound. He used his spirit to check the surroundings with his body bent down, afterwards, he went somewhere and leaned down, he gently pulled open a piece of tile, after a short time, white light passed through the small crack, revealing a person that was bent over a desk — which was Ye Wu Yun.

If the other person were an expert, he would never have chosen to peek* in this way. Because the higher their strength, the keener would their spiritual sense also be. But he had already made sure during the day that this person didn't practice any method. Because the Ye family were constantly on the move all year round, he apparently didn't have time to practice anything. (TL Note: Raws say (**) on "peek", and I just assumed that peek was the word censored there.)

At this moment, he was holding a thick book, he was holding a pen in his right hand and he would write something from time to time. Even though he couldn't see his face, he assumed that he probably had a serious expression.

Due to Ye Wu Yun's ability to be trusted, the Ye family's finances had all been reassuringly placed into his hands, and he had never let the Ye family be disappointed during the past few years, so the Ye family felt even more

reassured, they felt so reassured that they even trusted him too much, this isn't good. Ye Wu Chen secretly thought.

"Thud Thud", after a knock on the door, a man dressed as an attendant came in with a cup of tea and put it on top of Ye Wu Yun's table: "Young master, take a break and have a cup of tea."

"Oh, thank you Xiao Wu, it's a bit late so I can only have a short chat with you, after this, go rest early ok?"

"No, Young master should be the one to rest early, the young master works without rest every day at the Ye Mansion, even if you don't love your body, we care a lot about it!"

"hahaha, this is already a habit, if I stop, I'd feel uncomfortable instead. So you may go now."

"Then..... Xiao Wu will retire." Knowing that the young master wouldn't listen to advise, Ye Wu only shook his head and quietly went out afterwards.

The room became quiet again.

Pushing the tile back in place, Ye Wu Chen stood up to leave, he knew that there probably wouldn't be any harvest tonight. Of course, he also didn't expect to discover anything, he simply just wanted to try his luck. Because the other side already knew that he had a sword deity's ring, even if they looked down on him, they also had to consider the risk of provoking the sword deity.

After another leap, he jumped across another roof, and returned along the route he came from as if he were a white ghost.

Not surprisingly, the night visit had been fruitless, but accidents still happen.....

After several twists and turns, Ye Wu Chen was already at the top of his own small courtyard, as long as he leaps to Ye Shui Yao's rooftop again, then he could directly walk back. This was the first time he used the power of "Wu Chen spell" to move in high speed, he felt extremely comfortable, and he even wished that he could continue experiencing that feeling. Therefore he ran to test the limits of his speed, after a heavy step, his body drew a beautiful white arc down towards Ye Shui Yao's rooftop..... but this jump completely crossed more than 30 meters,

and he fell directly towards Ye Shui Yao's bedroom.

Ye Shui Yao's bedroom rooftop had a very huge "skylight" that could open and close, this was her special set up, but it's purpose was unknown. Most of the people in the Ye family knew of the existence of this window — but Ye Wu Chen was clearly not one of them.

His eyes were closed as he enjoyed the comfortable feeling of the wind high up in the sky, but he quickly felt that something was wrong, he definitely should've reached the ground already, but his foot still hadn't stepped on anything..... because the landing point of his body just happened to be the skylight on Ye Shui Yao's bedroom.

The time with which Ye Wu Chen could keep his body light was limited after all, plus he was caught off guard when he pushed his power to the limit, his jump suddenly turned into a free fall, and afterwards, he fell into water with a "plop" sound and his head landed on top of two soft balls, It was as though he had sunk into smooth, soft, top-quality yogurt, the touch of skin felt soft and extremely slippery, it felt warm and soft but the tightly pinched cheeks were overflowing, he could clearly feel a huge circular outline, while the aroma of river orchids penetrated his nose.

Why was there water!?

His hands subconsciously grasped forward to support his body, and his hand felt something soft and slippery wet, after he raised his head, a reflection entered his eyes and he saw a flower so exceptional that it would be enough to make all the men in the world to admire it, but the face of its owner had wide open eyes, with shock and horror spread across her face.

The magic lamp released a gentle white light, it completely shone on her ** and her lovely and tender body, it was as though a halo of light were flowing on her skin and shoulders, outlining the semi-arc of her moist clavicles, her lotus-like arms looked as tender as the moon, they were folded together and looked too tender to discharge a drop of water.

The water was very warm, the hot water permeated their skin and turned it into a pretty pink color, the light were reflected by her beautiful black hair, half covering her beautiful figure that was submerged under water, her attractive

face sparkled as if it was pure jade. She was standing on her toes along the edge of the tub, her legs were suffused with a gentle luster and her exquisite feet were as though they were pastries, her breasts glistened as though they were glossy jade and were as soft as satin... .. but on her chest, two plump balls were being grabbed by two hands, but they were extremely large, so the two hands could only grab half of them.

The two persons looked at each other for a full two seconds; it was as though time was frozen. Finally, Ye Wu Chen managed to react and he retracted his hands as fast as lightning, afterwards, he casually stepped out of the tub and turned around, his face were full of resentment as he said: "Sister, this is your fault, why did you leave the window open for no reason... .. furthermore, the water is a bit cold."

After he finished speaking, despite that his whole body was soaked with water, he casually pulled open the door and walked out.

The night wind blew, Ye Wu Chen's soaking wet body immediately shivered, his body became filled with power once again and he completely disappeared, unable to deal with anything else, he fled.

If it had been a normal room of a girl, a scream should already have pierced through the night... .. However, Ye Shui Yao's courtyard still remained extremely quiet, but the magic lamp inside the room had been extinguished after Ye Wu Chen had left.

After returning to the doorway of his bedroom, Ye Wu Chen dried the clothes on his body at top speed, and he entered the room and closed the door afterwards, he used a very small ring to turn off the magic lamp and the room immediately became pitch-black, he took off his clothes and made his way inside his blanket, his heart were still beating as hard as before.

Even if he were facing an army of thousands, he still wouldn't have been this nervous. But because, apart from the small girl Ning Xue, that was the first time he had seen a woman's body, the situation caught him unprepared, and that woman was still his older sister in name, furthermore... .. Not only did he look, he even groped... ..

"Brother, what happened to you? I can hear your heart beating, it's so fast."

Ning Xue pressed her body against his, and she placed her small hand on top of his chest.

“It’s nothing, I just saw something I shouldn’t have, I’m a little bit nervous.” Ye Wu Chen replied, he was trying hard to calm down and control the waves in his heart.

He vaguely knew that this world was different from the open-minded China within his memories, their degree of conservativeness was equal to the China of ancient times, a woman’s body being seen by a man was equivalent to losing her chastity.....

“Considering that we are relatives... .. looking and touching should probably be fine.” Ye Wu Chen reassured himself, but he couldn’t help thinking about that beautiful body and the feeling of those soft peaks, for a moment, his mind became a bit agitated.

“I... .. I’m still a man after all, I’m no different from a normal person.” He quietly said to himself. He sighed faintly as he closed his eyes, he didn’t know what to think.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 41

Shopping

On the next day.

Wu Chen and Ning Xue woke up very early, but the sun was earlier than them. It was sunny outside and the skies were cloudless. The Ye Mansion went about their business as usual, besides from the two persons involved, no one knew about the “event” that happened last night. Ye Wu Chen didn’t think that Ye Shui Yao would spread it to others. She didn’t seem to care about anything, so maybe she also didn’t care too much about that matter. Because after all... ... they were still brother and sister in name.

At this time, Ye Wu Chen had already finished changing into the luxurious clothes that Xiao Lu brought him, after tying his hair, he looked matchlessly handsome, the corners of his mouth raised into a smile filled with evil charm, and he changed his demeanor into one that was faintly arrogant, Xiao Lu saw stars in her eyes as she became dazzled, she even almost fainted, Wang Wen Shu was even more satisfied, because not only does her son look outstanding, but he also clearly changed, he no longer had that coldness from yesterday and he had a big smile on his face, this meant that he had already began to accept this as his home.

What a perfect pretty boy image..... Ye Wu Chen said to himself after looking at the mirror.

After breakfast, the Ye family suddenly became really busy, Ye Nu and Ye Wei went out, Ye Wu Chen took Ning Xue to tour around the large mansion, but he found that he had nothing else to do.

“Xiao Qi, we’re going to go shopping. You’ll stay here Xiao Ba, if the madam looks for us, tell her that I just went shopping and that I’ll return very quickly. Oh by the way, bring me a fan.”

“Yes Yes!” Ye Qi and Ye Ba answered simultaneously. Soon after, Ye Ba came while holding a white fan.

Ye Wu Chen took it and flung it open, he smiled and asked: “Xue’er, doesn’t brother look like a young master from an influential family now?”

“As long as it’s brother, you’ll always be the best looking.” Ning Xue winked at him, giving an irrelevant answer.

“I knew you would say that.” Ye Wu Chen gave her a doting smile, then waved his fan afterwards and said: “Xiao Qi, let’s go.”

Ye Qi quickly followed. Even an idiot would see that, unlike the unsmiling young master from yesterday, he seemed like a different person today, it seems like he was in an unusually good mood.

On the crowded streets, all sorts of people flowed in an unending stream, revealing how prosperous the Tian Long capital city was. Ye Wu Chen held a fan on one hand and led Ning Xue with the other as they strode down the middle of the road, he looked noble and arrogant beyond doubt, combined with his astonishing appearance, he looked very eye-catching as though he were a crane amongst a flock of chickens as they mixed with the crowd, each passerby all subconsciously stepped aside for him one after another, and he constantly obtained glances from a few unmarried girls, but they sadly hung their heads in shame right after, because this kind of temperament wasn’t something that an ordinary huge family could foster.

Even though the news of the return of the missing young master of the Ye family was already widespread in Tian Long City, because the small young master of the Ye family rarely went out, no one practically knew him. Even someone who had seen him before would have already forgotten, therefore no one could recognize him.

“Xiao Qi, how far are we from the imperial palace?” Ye Wu Chen asked.

“Answering master, very near, it would probably take about less than half an hour on foot, but we would arrive quite quickly if we rode a horse.” Ye Qi answered.

“Oh... .. we’re going to take a look at the surroundings of the imperial palace.”

The imperial palace were located northwest of the Ye mansion, and as they came closer, the crowd also became denser. After walking for more than ten minutes, Ye Wu Chen frowned and asked: “Xiao Qi, are there anything important happening these days? Most of the pedestrians here are young, looks hurried, dressed differently, and walks while unconsciously looking around, they obviously doesn’t or rarely comes here. Is there some sort of assembly today in Tian Long City?”

“Master is intelligent, in a few days, the Tian Long Royal Academy will hold a once a year competition to choose the most talented youth, anyone under 25 years old can participate, even the emperor himself would attend to watch and select the most talented, therefore there are a lot of people that wants to participate and watch.”

“Oh? What are the rules?” Ye Wu Chen asked.

“This..... the contest is divided between literature and martial arts, literature comes first and martial arts after. This year’s literary contest had just finished the day before yesterday and the martial arts contest is starting tomorrow, the preliminary matches are tomorrow, there will be many matches conducted at the same time to filter out the strong and the emperor probably wouldn’t watch, the matches of the truly powerful would be on the next day, they also receive the most attention each year. Today is the last day of registrations. Ah..... young master, look at that and you’ll understand.” Ye Qi’s eyes lit up, pointing towards the front.

Posted on the wall was a large announcement, but this announcement already filled the city and they posted it every year, there were few people who didn’t know what it were and most would go just to confirm the date of the competition, therefore a crowd didn’t form around the announcement. Ye Wu Chen were just starting to approach it when he suddenly stopped, because he saw a back which left a deep impression on him.

Contrary to the gorgeous white clothes that Ye Wu Chen was wearing, the other were dressed in shabby black clothes, he stood quietly beneath the announcement with his whole body motionless, Ye Wu Chen saw that he held a straight **, releasing the cold light of a sharp blade.

Ye Wu Chen had seen this person in front of the House of Smoke and Dreams yesterday, at that time, he was supporting a middle aged woman who seemed blind as he walked by in front of him, that cold air and his sharp gaze as though he was a starving eagle, made him firmly remember this person.

He went to his side, he roughly swept a glance at the announcement. He skipped past the wordy opening speech, the details of the contest were more or less the same as Ye Qi explained to him. The qualifying matches were tomorrow and the day after were the contests between the powerful youths. The rules of the matches were a challenge system.

Ye Wu Chen's gaze slightly tilted to the side, he looked towards his side and saw someone around his age, he had a very thin figure and he had a cold and stiff expression, but he saw that he had a resolute gaze as he stared at the announcement.

Ye Wu Chen turned around and left with Ning Xue.

The announcement below reads as: "The first place winner will be summoned by the emperor and receive a spirit ranked weapon, five thousand taels of silver, and a residence north of the city, depending on how high his abilities. The other 10 names chosen by the emperor can choose to receive either a thousand taels of silver, or they could choose to enter the imperial guards of the emperor and they wouldn't have worry about food or clothing for a lifetime.

Such conditions may not be rich, but for most people, they wanted fame, they wanted to their name to spread through the lands under the heavens, and live a way of life on the boundless plains. But for some people, they didn't care about fame, and only wanted the attractive monetary rewards.

He was the same kind of person as the latter, in this life that he was forced to live in, he needed money, therefore he would participate in the competition.

"This is, young master, would you possibly want to sign up?" Ye Qi had a nervous expression as he asked. He was afraid that the small young master would register to compete on the spur of the moment..... the result would definitely only lose face for the Ye family. In the past, the whole city knew how useless the young master of the Ye family was, even though he was already normal now, but he was still nothing more than a weak scholar.

“This young master won’t participate, I’m just going to watch.” Ye Wu Chen said.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 42

Heavenly Star – Volume 1 Chapter 42

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

Chapter 42: Quacks

“Young master..... let me say something. Actually, everyone believes that the first place wouldn’t belong to anyone else, and would still belong to the eldest young master of the Lin family.

“Eldest young master of the Lin family? Is he that difficult to deal with?” Ye Wu Chen asked lazily, he remembered that the eldest young master of the Lin family were apparently called Lin Xiao, it is said that he was well versed in both literature and martial arts, and that he had all the qualities that a man should have, even Wang Wen Shu had a face full of admiration when she spoke about this young master from their rival family, wishing that he was her son.

“He’s not just difficult to deal with. The eldest young master of the Lin family is known as a dragon among men, he’s unrivaled among young geniuses. Not only is he handsome, unrestrained, and outstandingly intelligent, he’s also well-versed in literature and martial arts. When he first competed 3 years ago, he easily obtained first place in both literature and martial arts, he also participated last year and he still remained number one in both literature and martial arts, the literary contest had ended the other day and he still obtained first place, and he’d probably obtain first place in the coming martial arts competition as well, rumors says that his swordplay had already reached perfection, even the 3 heaven ranked experts within the palace had all praised him in admiration because he was such a genius, among his many titles, some are ‘The number one

scholar of Tian Long' and 'The number one genius of Tian Long'. All of the young men in Tian Long City could only hope for the achievements of the eldest young master of the Lin family, yet he never acted arrogantly, and he treated other people rather modestly, therefore he possesses an extremely wide range of connections in Tian Long City. Furthermore, he isn't a womanizer, he has deep feelings for the young lady of the Hua family and he promised to her that he would never marry again. Within Tian Long City, everyone's talking about the eldest young master of the Lin family and not..... *cough cough*, the, small, young master....."

This topic were mentioned all throughout Tian Long, because every men both admired and envied Lin Xiao, Ye Qi forgot where he was for a moment and excitedly talked in a hype, even his saliva splashed across from his mouth, at this moment, he finally remembered that he was by his master's side—— the Ye family's small young master, he had greatly boasted about Lin Xiao in front of his master, Ye Qi started to sweat profusely, and he stutteringly said: "Even though the eldest young master of the Lin family is pretty good, he's still a little bit worse when compared to young master, ever since I first saw young master....."

Ye Wu Chen raised an eyebrow and stopped the outburst of flattery that he was about to say: "Shut up! I'm a bit tired today so we're going back."

He naturally wasn't tired yet, but Ning Xue was already looking a bit tired. He carried Ning Xue in his arms, attracting all sorts of strange looks while they were returning to the Ye Mansion.

They had just barely entered the gates when Wang Wen Shu hurriedly came to welcome them: "Chen'er, follow mother quickly, mother has brought you the 3 best imperial physicians, they'll definitely find a way to restore your memories."

Ye Wu Chen put Ning Xue down and said: "Xue'er, go back and wait for me ok?"

After Ning Xue left, he quietly followed Wang Wen Shu to the hall. Inside were 3 well-mannered middle aged men, the oldest was over sixty years old and the youngest were around fifty.

"Come Chen'er, this is Doctor Li, this is Doctor Wang, and this is Doctor Zhang.

Quickly greet the 3 imperial physicians.” Wang Wen Shu introduced them one by one.

Ye Wu Chen arbitrarily glanced at the 3, he faced towards Wang Wen Shu afterwards and said: “This is..... Can you let me and the 3 imperial physicians talk alone, I think this might help me have a better chance of recovering my memories.”

“Eeh..... well its ok, I’ll leave first, 3 Doctors, Chen’er will accompany you.” Wang Wen Shu agreed without hesitation and left afterwards.

Ye Wu Chen didn’t look at them again, he sat on the seat in the center instead, and poured himself a cup of tea afterwards, he smiled as he drank, he had shopped all morning and his mouth was quite dry.

His arrogant actions made the 3 doctors want to storm out in anger, but they held back because his status as the young master of the Ye family, the eldest man said: “Young master, let this old man first take your pulse.”

He put down his teacup, wiped his mouth, and looked at him afterwards and said: “There’s no need to take my pulse, Doctor Li, can you answer this junior’s question? Has the pit of your stomach ache been aching frequently during the past week? And furthermore, eating anything spicy would make the pain intensify and it wouldn’t improve no matter what method you used.”

Doctor Li’s face revealed a startled expression: “How did young master know? Young master Ye is right, this old man’s stomach had been constantly aching since 1 week ago, I’ve already used multiple kinds of medicine but it was all to no avail.”

“Of course it’s useless, Doctor Li is perfectly healthy, it’s not a physical problem, but rather a poisoning. Doctor Li, were you bitten by a poisonous insect 1 week ago?” Ye Wu Chen said with a confident tone, as if he were absolutely sure.

Doctor Li pondered for a moment and he suddenly slapped the table ferociously: “That’s right, this old man was bitten by a strange insect when I was gathering herbs a week ago, I still have the scar, so it was actually a poisonous insect! Ahh the shame!” He held out a withered old hand, and sure enough, there was a strange bite scar on his little finger.

“Doctor Li is already this old but he still picks his herbs himself, this junior admires your integrity. Doctor Li just overlooked something trivial, there’s no need to feel ashamed. This poison is very mild, but it will also cause irreparable damage after a long period of time, if you take an ordinary antidote now, the poison will be completely gone before 3 days, I think this would definitely not be a problem for Doctor Li.” Ye Wu Chen said with a smile.

“How did young master know?” Doctor Li asked with a respectful expression.

“First, the tip of Doctor Li’s tongue is a bit greenish, secondly, the wound on the back of your finger is also green, and furthermore the injury had only been there for a week. Therefore I could guess it.”

The 3 doctors were completely shocked. Tip of the tongue, back of the finger..... Aside from knowledge and experience, this also required astonishing powers of observation.

“Doctor Wang, have you recently started experiencing frequent headaches and chest pains, accompanied by difficulty sleeping during the night, and taking countless medicines also couldn’t cure you?”

“Yes, they’re all true!” Doctor Wang stood up a bit excitedly.

“Actually, Doctor Wang doesn’t need to take medicine, just go sightseeing and you will naturally improve after some time.”

“This is.....”

“Doctor Wang, has there been something bothering you and making you angry recently? Keep in mind that extreme anger injures the liver, the liver is one of the five viscera, injure one and you injure the whole body. Especially during Doctor Wang’s age, you should be calmer and avoid being angry.”

Quacks, they’re all quacks! They don’t even know the most basic of things! However it also wasn’t surprising, this medical knowledge had been accumulated for millennia, and had much more advanced technology when compared to the Tian Chen Continent. A few basic medical knowledge, to this world, might be enough to cause a revolution in the medical community.

Doctor Wang was stunned at first, but he suddenly exclaimed afterwards: “Young master is truly a god, that’s right, I’ve been frequently angry because of

my dog of a son's matters. After I return, I'll trust young master's words and ask the emperor for a few days of vacation and go sightseeing.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 43

Heavenly Star – Volume 1 Chapter 43

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

Chapter 43: Kicked Out!

Ye Wu Chen slightly nodded, and he turned towards the young Doctor Zhang, Doctor Zhang also looked at him, a shocked expression was on his face. Ye Wu Chen had a mischievous tone as he said: “Doctor Zhang is actually very healthy, you’re already at this age but you still have the vitality of a dragon and the ferociousness of a tiger, quite admirable. But Doctor Zhang is already near 30, you should exercise better control on some things, otherwise you’ll definitely fall seriously ill after half a year.”

(Vitality of a dragon and the ferociousness of a tiger —>> in bed (๖_๖))

Doctor Zhang had a reddish face, but he didn’t refute, Ye Wu Chen clearly wasn’t wrong, he stood up and faced him: “Young master Ye’s eyes are as revealing as a torch, i, myself, admire you endlessly.”

They could say that the first time was only a coincidence, but what about the second time and third time?

The 3 doctors’ previous looks of discontent, disdain and even thin anger, had turned to shock, and had now turned into extreme admiration, looking at Ye Wu Chen’s eyes was like looking at a deity. Scholars yearn for the celestial beings’ knowledge, martial artists respect the powerful, while people who practice the art of healing naturally admire someone whose medical expertise surpasses theirs.

During the time when the young master was sick, they also came frequently to the Ye Mansion to take care of him, they could say that they were already quite familiar with him. Now, while looking at the youngster with a faint smile in front of them, they all came up with the same question: Was he truly the frail young master of the Ye family? He had barely swept a glance at them and he had already diagnosed their illnesses and its causes, which they themselves didn't know, without the slightest error..... how could he have obtained this kind of world shocking medical skill.

The 3 doctors looked at each other in dismay, when facing him, they actually felt a strange feeling of extreme admiration, they were no longer angry about his previous display of rudeness and arrogance, and they felt it was only natural instead.

“This old man had always been confident that his medical skills were peerless on the lands under the heavens, I didn't think that in front of young master I would actually be..... Ahh, the shame. May I ask young master what kind of deity is your master?” Doctor Li respectfully asked, his voice were filled with distinct admiration. He didn't believe that Ye Wu Chen could have comprehended those kinds of medical skills by himself, he definitely must have had an extraordinary medical god giving him instructions.

Doctor Wang and Doctor Zhang both had the same fervent expression. Ye Wu Chen shook his head and sternly said: “My master has shunned the world for a long time and doesn't want to be found, I ask seniors to forgive me.”

“No matter, this old man spoke out of turn. Since even his disciple says so, then your revered master's medical expertise should have probably reached a heavenly level. If your revered master had wanted fame, then his name should have already spread through the lands since long ago. It's not surprising that Young master Ye's body is already completely functional. Ah, I know that there's a medical deity but I have no chance meet him, it's truly a regret of a lifetime.” Doctor Li said with a sigh.

Doctor Wang and Doctor Zhang both nodded, their faces were also filled with yearning and regret.

Doctor Li stood up and said: “Young master Ye, we have to say goodbye. If

even Young master Ye and his revered master was incapable of restoring Young master Ye's memories, then we 3 doesn't even need to try."

"Allow me to escort the doctors outside, but I will still have to ask the 3 senior doctors to keep this junior and his master's secret." Ye Wu Chen respectfully said, his lips were raised into a meaningful smile. Wang Wen Shu using a few methods to invite some imperial physicians to treat him was all within his expectations! He could also use this as an excuse to remove suspicions on him, it was hitting three birds with one stone! Now he had also planted the Lin family's destruction.

"Yes, of course!"

Soon after they left, he heard Wang Wen Shu and the 3 doctors' voices through the door.

"Madam Ye, this old doctor is ashamed to say this isn't within our powers."

"This....."

"Madam Ye, this old doctor doesn't have the face to stay, thus we bid farewell."

"..... Please take care senior doctors."

He took a stroll in Tian Long City in the morning, next, he talked with the 3 old men for quite a while, and afterwards, Wang Wen Shu pulled him aside for a "mother and son" talk for a long time. When he finally became free, it was already noon.

Ye Wu Chen did not immediately return to his courtyard, after a bit of thought, he turned towards Ye Shui Yao's courtyard. He had just arrived at the courtyard when he heard a man's voice from inside, his eyebrows narrowed, because this was clearly Ye Wu Yun's voice.

Hey..... this should be interesting. Ye Wu Chen had a very unscrupulous smile as he casually walked over. There were no maids in Ye Shui Yao's courtyard, so naturally, it was unlikely that there was anyone who knew.

"Little sister Shui Yao, I'll put this invitation here in advance, besides from younger brother Wu Chen, the whole family is all meeting together, Younger

sister shouldn't always stay at home, you should also stroll out once in a while."

"Get Out!"

"Little sister, your elder brother had always wanted to ask, is there something worrying you? There is no harm in talking about it because brother might be able to help you."

"I said get out!" Ye Shui Yao's cold voice sounded a bit impatient.

"My older sister wants you to get out, what are you still doing here, or are you possibly waiting for me to throw you out?" Ye Wu Chen unhurriedly walked in. They were in Ye Shui Yao's study, he didn't think that Ye Wu Yun, like himself, would have the courage to enter her room.

Hearing his voice, Ye Shui Yao still didn't raise her head, but her tender eyebrows clearly stirred up a bit.

Ye Wu Yun's face ** a few times, afterwards, he calmly said: "Younger brother Wu Chen's words are clearly a bit excessive, because your brother is also speaking for younger sister's sake."

"Oh?" Ye Wu Chen sneered, and looked at him with half an eye: "This word 'younger sister' are you also qualified to call her that? Let me ask you in advance to understand your own position, your life was saved by my Ye family, the Ye family also raised you and gave you your identity, do you truly consider yourself as the eldest young master? You..... you're merely a dog which was picked up by my Ye family, please don't look at yourself as a person. Performing well is a dog's responsibility, but it is still not up to you to take care of my Ye family's matters."

Ye Qi had also mentioned in the morning, everyone at the Ye Mansion knew that the eldest young master was fond of the eldest young lady, the Ye family had also never opposed it, and had made great efforts to support it instead, because they had approved for their foster son to become their son in law so that they would become a true family. And they already felt reassured with Ye Wu Yun's character and capabilities.

"You....." Ye Wu Yun had a twisted expression, even a Clay Buddha still had some anger, even though he had good self-restraint, he would also be unable to suppress his anger when faced with this kind of humiliation.

“You’re still not getting out! Then..... let me send you out.”

Ye Wu Chen suddenly raised his leg without any warning, and he kicked him in the stomach, Ye Wu Yun groaned as he fell to the ground. Ye Wu Chen sent another kick at him so that his body kept rolling, it was just right to roll him right out the door.

They heard a “click” as the door of the room closed, Ye Wu Chen laughed and said: “Well sister, now it’s peaceful.”

After a little while, they heard the sound of footsteps gradually getting further outside the door, which vaguely sounded like he was staggering a bit. Ye Wu Yun must have probably had an incomparably wonderful expression, but he didn’t have any interest in looking.

“You were excessive.” Ye Shui Yao sat in front of her desk, she was looking at a sketch of a scenery and she didn’t even raise her head. Her voice was as cold as water.

“When a person is angered, that’s the most likely time when he’ll show his weakness.” Ye Wu Chen sat down freely and enjoyed her graceful and elegant sitting appearance.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 44

Heavenly Star – Volume 1 Chapter 44

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

Chapter 44: Are You Insane!

“After all, those were only your guesses.” Ye Shui Yao faintly said, but she didn’t blame him. Besides from not looking at him, she didn’t appear particularly strange. As if the matter from last night didn’t even happen. The two persons remained absolutely silent.

“I’ve never doubted my own guesses. Furthermore, those weren’t guesses, but rather..... facts!”

“..... What will you tell mom?”

It’s been a long time since Ye Shui Yao had spoken so many words. Previously, even though she was talking to her parents, she was unwilling to speak and would only nod or shake her head.

“Is older sister worried about me?”

“.....”

“Don’t worry elder sister, Ye Wu Yun is a lenient and magnanimous person, why would he do something like talk about me behind my back. He would only stay silent, then afterwards, he would ‘accidentally’ let the servants know and it would ‘accidentally’ spread to others. But they also shouldn’t have enough time to attend to me for these two days.

Ye Wu Chen picked up the invitation on top of the table and opened it — — this

probably shouldn't be called an invitation, but rather an invitation letter to watch the competition on the day after tomorrow. Because those matches would be used to select Tian Long Country's most talented rising star, some of them would probably become top level experts of Tian Long City in the future, and some might even serve the country and become the country's pillar of support. Aside from that, these kinds of competition to determine the strongest have always produced incomparably wonderful matches, which people could only see once a year, who wouldn't want to watch? Therefore most of the nobility will be present on that day, and even countless of people would travel far and wide to come and watch the matches. And the Ye family, being a huge clan, were naturally invited.

However, this invitation included every member of the Ye family and only he was excluded.

"It seems like that I've already been forgotten. Older sister, you might as well watch the matches, every young genius of Tian Long City will be there, and older sister might even be able to find someone she likes. Oh, and by the way, I might also come and watch." Ye Wu Chen seemingly casually said.

Ye Shui Yao: "....."

The two persons ran out of things to say and the atmosphere became quiet. After a long silence, the mood became increasingly awkward. Left alone in the silence, not remembering something was impossible.

"Cough..... that, older sister, last night's matter....."

It was as if Ye Shui Yao was electrocuted, her cold voice interrupted him: "Get Out!"

"Oh..... we are siblings after all, looking should be fine....."

BANG!

A black ink slab smashed on the place where Ye Wu Chen was sitting before, but Ye Wu Chen had already panickedly escaped.

"I really should never mention this matter again..... that was such a huge piece of marble ink slab, and yet it had been thrown with enough strength to smash a hole through an ordinary person's head. Women really are frightening things."

Ye Wu Chen fearfully thought after escaping from Ye Shui Yao's courtyard.

He could say that he understood the ancient and modern world, but the only thing that he couldn't understand was a woman's heart. Because when he was only 7 years old, he had subconsciously learned not to go near them. He was still a blank sheet of paper after ten years after he turned 7, and the only change was that his mental attitude, which laid dormant within his body, grew and matured.

As expected, the news that the small young master had unreasonably beaten up the eldest young master had started spread during the afternoon, and in addition, he also threw extremely revolting insults at him. This matter was naturally spread out by Ye Wu, and he even said that the eldest young master had strictly prohibited him to tell others, but he was really feeling a bit indignant.

As a result, this matter naturally reached Wang Wen Shu's ears. But this was her recently regained son which was extremely pampered by his mother, so how would she be willing to blame him, she merely consoled Ye Wu Yun with a few lines but Ye Wu Chen didn't even say a word to him and he acted as if nothing happened.

But General Ye and Grandpa Ye were both busy and it was unlikely that they would return for the next two days.

Ye Wu Chen was looking forward to seeing how much longer Ye Wu Yun could endure silently, however, when the day truly comes that he can't bear it any longer and he exposes himself, Ye Wu Chen would lose an excellent toy. How could he live a boring life without any embellishments.

On the next day, Ye Wu Chen took Ye Qi with him to shop around Tian Long City again, he walked through every place that he's visited and hasn't visited before and firmly remembered the layouts and locations of various buildings and shops. In the evening, he gave Ning Xue a bath, and afterwards, he quietly went out for another round trip again, but this time, when passed by Ye Shui Yao's bedroom, the window on the roof were closed tightly.

When he returned, Ye Wu Chen was holding a gilded paper within his hands, it looked exactly the same as the piece of paper from before on top Ye Shui Yao's table, it was the invitation letter for the competition tomorrow. The only difference was that the name Ye Wu Yun was written on top of it.

The matches tomorrow really couldn't be watched unless one was wealthy, because the emperor will be attending, the security can't show any negligence and no unauthorized person will be present. But the people showing up would have both power and influence, and most of which are Tian Long City's princes and dukes and the nobles, but it will also include every provincial governors, the wealthy and etc...

And the Ye family, being such a huge family, will naturally receive the most solemn of invitations. By using very rare gilded invitations.

Ye Wu Chen pressed his finger on top of the character "Yun", and his fingertip shone with unrecognizable colorless rays of light. As his finger moved, the pitch-black writing also disappeared in succession, until no trace of it remained. The paper was spotlessly white, but there were no signs that it was damaged.

Ye Wu Chen wrote "Chen" where the character "Yun" was before, and afterwards, he put his brush back, yawned, and went to sleep.

It was already late when Ye Wu Chen woke up the next morning, he heard the sound of Xiao Lu knocking as she said: "Young master, the madam has already went out and won't be returning until evening, breakfast is already prepared, so please get up Young master and Young lady Ning Xue....."

"I understand, you may come in." Ye Wu Chen weakly said as he rubbed his still sleepy eyes, he flicked his finger and the tethered door opened.

It was already time for the matches to begin, but Ye Wu Chen didn't seem to be in a hurry, he allowed Xiao Lu to clothe him and tie his hair, and afterwards, he leisurely ate breakfast with Ning Xue, he was about to leave the Ye mansion, but unfortunately, he came across Ye Wu Yun as he was also about to leave.

Ye Wu Yun had a stiff smile as he asked: "Younger brother Wu Chen, are you going shopping again?"

"Oh, didn't someone say that the royal academy would be holding a competition, I'm just going to take a look." Ye Wu Chen casually said without raising his eyes.

"This..... Younger brother Wu Chen, it isn't an ordinary competition, you won't be able to get in without an invitation. Younger brother Wu Chen you seem like

as if you.....”

“Are you insane? With my Ye family’s strength, where in the entire Tian Long City can’t I go? Anyone who dares block me, I’ll have his head!” Ye Wu Chen looked at him with contempt and coldly snorted afterwards, he took Ning Xue and took large strides forward and paid no attention to him again.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 45

Heavenly Star – Volume 1 Chapter 45

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Project Page](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

Chapter 45: Tian Long Royal Academy

Ye Wu Yun didn't say anything else, but he secretly sneered in his heart. Using the Ye family's influence, perhaps Ye Wu Chen's words wouldn't be an exaggeration in an ordinary situation, However the emperor himself would be supervising the fights during the competition..... not having an invitation would mean that his presence was unwanted, or that he isn't influential enough to enter, even his identity as the young master of the Ye family wouldn't help.

In the past, the entire Ye family were all given invitations, but Ye Wu Chen were incapable of showing up because of his body. And Ye Wu Chen hasn't returned yet when these invitations were being made, therefore he doesn't have his part.

The Tian Long Royal Academy were located east of the palace, it was very close by. It occupied an enormous area, but its appearance exuded a majestic atmosphere. The Royal Academy had been built a long time ago and it was the most respected academy in the entire Tian Long City. All of its departments of literature, martial arts, magic, and even the teachers aren't simple. However, the conditions to enter the Tian Long Royal Academy are extremely harsh, one needs to be either; someone from the imperial family, extremely wealthy, showed extremely high talent when enrolling, or specially permitted by the imperial family. Therefore, ordinary people could only dream but could not enter.

Academy..... this thing had never appeared in the history of ancient china, it seems that he can't use ancient china as a reference for this world, the Tian Chen Continent possesses rules of its own. Ye Wu Chen thought until this point, he had finally arrived at the huge gates of the Royal Academy, the gates were guarded by a large number of imperial guards, each and every one of them were sharp and reserved, they were evidently extraordinarily talented people.

Ye Wu Chen calmly walked forward with an innocent expression on his face.

"Please show me your invitation." An imperial guard wrapped in golden armor reasonably said.

Ye Wu Chen took out his golden invitation in a flash. After seeing the gold invitation, the imperial guard's expression immediately changed, and he showed a respectful expression on his face: "Young master, please."

Ye Wu Chen nodded, he pulled Ning Xue and went in. He deliberately slowed down his pace, as if he were waiting for something. It was written on the invitation that he could bring with him one attendant at most, so bringing a child with him shouldn't be a problem.

Ye Wu Yun was stunned and he was at a loss. At this moment, he also went to the front of the guards, the guard saw him and gave him a good expression as he respectfully said: "So it's young master Ye, forgive me for being presumptuous, but please show me your invitation."

Few people knew Ye Wu Chen, but most of the imperial guards were familiar with Ye Wu Yun.

Ye Wu Yun put his hand on his chest and searched, but he didn't touch anything, his expression slightly changed immediately. Because he clearly remembered that he put his invitation inside his clothes last night, could he have dropped it accidentally, or.....

He suddenly thought of something, his eyebrows narrowed and he yelled: "Wait a minute, younger brother Wu Chen, that invitation in your hands is mine!"

"Oh? What do you mean?" Ye Wu Chen turned around, his face obviously unhappy.

The invitations sent to the Ye family didn't include a copy for you, so where did yours come from? While the invitation in my hand disappeared for no reason, how can there be such a coincidence. Younger brother Wu Chen, I've always been patient with you, but you're actually a person that crows like a cock and steals like a dog, it's truly..... very disappointing." Ye Wu Yun said with an angry face. (TL Note: idk how to translate that idiom.)

"Are you saying that I stole your invitation?" Ye Wu Chen's face sank, as he walked back with a gloomy face.

"Do you dare to let us look at the name on the invitation!

"Then open your dog eyes and look clearly." Ye Wu Chen coldly snorted and he readily threw his gilded invitation into the hand of a somewhat stunned guard. He caught it at once and inspected it, soon after, his face showed a strange expression and he said to Ye Wu Yun: "Young master Ye, this..... this is truly not your invitation."

Ye Wu Yun seized the invitation, but the 3 words "Ye Wu Chen" was clearly written on it, furthermore, there weren't any traces of alterations, it was even more impossible that it was forged. Ye Wu Yun's face immediately changed from red to black, but he was unable to say a word.

Ye Wu Chen pulled the invitation from his hands and sneered: "Have your dog eyes seen it clearly? This is ridiculous, you said it again and again that the Ye family gave you your life, but you're just an obedient dog of my Ye family, so don't consider yourself as the eldest young master, you are nothing."

Not bothering to look at the ashen face of Ye Wu Yun, Ye Wu Chen gracefully stepped aside and walked inside.

"Young master Ye, if you don't have an invitation then please return. Please don't make things difficult for me, because the emperor himself ordered....."

"Humph"

He snorted angrily, he had lost a lot of face and he didn't want to stay a second longer, he quickly left with his heart full of resentment.

"Having a toy makes life truly wonderful." Said Ye Wu Chen while smiling, making Ning Xue laugh furtively: "Older brother, he's really pitiful."

“Maybe so. He and I don’t have any enmity between us, but my identity that I’m using right now certainly has a huge enmity with him. Since he has already harmed ‘myself’ before, he is my life’s enemy, so don’t sympathize with him, but let him go to hell, step on his foot again after he falls into hell, and make him fall into a bottomless abyss of eternal damnation.”

Ye Wu Chen casually said, Ye Ning Xue didn’t really understand and could only answer weakly.

They were in a huge square, the square was filled with people, and the center was spacious for the stages of the matches. The stages were ordinarily used when the freshmen are displaying their talent or for inner college competitions, and every year they were also used for these martial arts fights.

After yesterday’s screening, there were only less than 30 people that could enter the competition, and at this moment, the matches were already drawing to a close, but the audiences were still packed, because the matches were getting more and more exciting as the strong were naturally the last ones to enter the stage.

At first glance, there sat around two to three thousand people on the full ring, among them were numerous people who were ordinarily hidden in their rooms or college, a gathering place of young women and young elites, how could they endure staying in their rooms?

Ye Wu Chen and Ning Xue entered from a corner, but they couldn’t find any seats as they looked around, so they just stood where they were and watched from the sidelines. On the stage were two evenly matched persons fighting, a sword and an axe were whistling through the air, with burst after burst of cheers accompanying them. But Ye Wu Chen’s sight passed through the competition stage, he looked around until he finally saw the emperor, he was around 40 years old with a dignified look and an unsmiling expression, he faintly felt an invisible pressure from far away. On his side sat a person with graying hair and a cold looking old man, who sat motionless, they were the two heavenly ranked experts from the three, only when he had two could the emperor feel completely at ease.

It seems like, that person is Tian Long City’s emperor, Long Yin.

Not far from Long Yin, he saw Ye Nu, Ye Wei, and Wang Wen Shu sitting together, and as well as Ye Shui Yao with her face half hidden. But their eyes were only fixed at the stage and they didn't see him.

She actually came, Ye Wu Chen was slightly surprised.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 46

Chapter 46: Leng Ya

“Oh? Brother Ye and Younger Sister Ning Xue, you guys also came.”

Ye Wu Chen turned to the voice, he found Long Zheng Yang sitting on the last row with a smiling expression. He waved and the two persons who were sitting on his right immediately left their seats respectfully. Ye Wu Chen were also blunt, he took Ning Xue and sat down, after which he smiled and asked: “Brother Long is a noble, why would you go so far as to sit in a corner?”

Long Zheng Yang shook his head and said with a wry smile: “I hate myself for being so lazy when I was young, I’m very inferior in both literature and martial arts compared to these heaven favored geniuses, I’m so ashamed Ah.”

“I can’t agree with that, Brother Long you’re the crown prince, you will be far above them in the future. They can use their martial arts to defend themselves or use it to kill others, but Brother Long has thousands of people to protect, with just a word, you could easily deprive or save thousands of lives. Brother Long shouldn’t be ashamed.” Ye Wu Chen said.

“Even though that is so, but if I were an ordinary person..... Ah, better not to talk about it. Brother Ye, with your abilities, why don’t you try to participate in the competition? I think that with Brother Ye’s skill, you’d definitely shine.”

Ye Wu Chen shook his head and said nothing.

With this world’s classification rules, the strength of the two persons on the stage should be about rank 7 or even rank 8, having such abilities at was extremely rare at such a young age, and was indeed worthy of standing out among the powerful youths of the nation.

A “Dang” loudly sounded, the axe-wielding man had been knocked to the ground. The sword wielding youngster pressed the tip of his sword against his

throat with obvious pride on his face. Most youngsters with strength were proud and arrogant, which gradually changed as they matured.

“So then, the last three persons have been decided. Everyone knows that final winner wouldn’t be likely to be someone else. Lin Xiao, even though he just turned twenty, he already had a strength of rank 10 last year, and he’s recognized as a peerless genius. He must have definitely grown again this year, so it shouldn’t be a surprise.” Long Zheng Yang said.

Someone with a rank 8 strength could already be counted as an expert, but someone with a rank 10 strength was an expert among experts. If he could reach the spirit level, it would be enough to establish a school. And a heaven ranked expert could become a respected teacher for generations. With his rank 10 strength at only 20 years old, perhaps he could reach the spirit level in a few years, and reach the heavenly stage before his middle ages, and he would be admired by everyone besides from a sword deity. Currently, there were 7 publicly known heaven ranked experts and they weren’t extreme geniuses, but six of them were far from comprehending the heavenly dao.

Rank 10..... his [Wu Chen spell] was now at the second layer, he would finally be able to see how high his powers have reached in this world.

At this time, a shadow appeared above the arena, a man clad in black clothes jumped on the stage. As soon as he entered the stage, the fervent atmosphere suddenly became strangely quiet, because compared to the other competitors whom released fighting spirit, he was actually releasing a deadly energy which was cold and sharp as if it was corporeal, even some people who didn’t understand martial arts felt a chill.

It’s him! It seems like I was right in coming. Ye Wu Chen’s eyes turned to the arena.

“Who is this person?” opposite of him, Emperor Long Yin calmly asked, his expressionless face had suddenly showed clear interest.

“This person is called Leng Ya, but it might be a pseudonym. He showed an extraordinary performance yesterday, but he was excessively cruel, he left 20 people half-crippled after he fought them yesterday.” An old man in front of Long Yin turned around and said with a solemn expression. He was the dean of

the Royal Academy, and he was a heaven ranked flame sorcerer, Ling Yan. He was also the younger brother of the master of the Lin family, Lin Kuang, and he was also the manager of the competition.

Long Yin slightly nodded: “No matter how this match goes, just the strength of his Qi is a reason for us to keep him. If he is unwilling..... then we’ll double the rewards, and we’ll leave him alone afterwards. This is an extremely poisonous snake, if we can obtain his loyalty, then we’ll be able to turn him into a sharp sword, but if we try to force him, he would rather bite us than surrender.”

“This servant understands.”

The complacent sword wielding youngster became timid under the pressure of the black-clad youngster’s Qi, and he actually took a step back in front of so many people, but at this moment, the black-clad youngster suddenly thrust forward as fast as lightning, a cold light flashed from his hands and pierced through the sword wielding youngster’s body.

The sword wielding youngster cried out miserably as his sword and his right hand fell to the ground with a “clang”.

The surrounding people immediately burst into clamor, a few girls screamed in horror, and a few were even so scared that they tightly covered their faces with their hands, not daring to look again.

The youngster clad in black didn’t even turn around as his sword chopped off the sword wielding youngster’s hand and pierced through his body, and he was without the slightest change in his expression, as if what he had done was just a trivial matter. A loud heart-rending miserable cry came from behind him, but the sound eventually stopped, the sword wielding youngster had fainted from extreme pain and terror.

However, there weren’t many rebuking voices within the surroundings. Because it was clearly written on the rules that: “Casualties during the matches are inevitable, therefore it is forbidden to hold or seek revenge.”

Several people went up to carry the sword wielding youngster’s body and to clean the blood covered stage. Ye Wu Chen secretly sighed: is this selecting talent, or destroying it.

Would true experts really participate in this kind of competition? Ye Wu Chen shook his head: Of course not! This kind of competition only brought fame and status, and these only causes distractions in a person's heart, making it difficult to truly succeed. Even this black-clad youngster, if he weren't forced by circumstances, also wouldn't participate.

Even that always laughing Chu Jingtian, even if he were here, he also definitely wouldn't participate in this kind of competition. And with true experts, there are only a few of them that are willing to sacrifice their freedom and devote themselves to the imperial family.

"Very powerful! That instant of explosive power is extremely astonishing and it's also difficult to block. But he's too cruel, after all this is only a competition." Long Zheng Yang said with a sigh.

"No, he had already acted leniently because this was a competition. If not, he would have cut off his neck." Ye Wu Chen said, he was a bit disapproving at Long Zheng Yang, if he couldn't even handle this level of ruthlessness, how would he become a successful ruler.

"..... this person shouldn't be a nobody, why haven't I heard of him before."

"His name is Leng Ya." Ye Wu Chen said. He had heard Lin Yan and Long Yin's conversation without missing a word, and they weren't even aware of him.

"Does Brother Ye know him?"

"I don't know him."

"....."

The final two people left were, Lin Xiao of the Lin family, and the other was.....

"I am Nangong Zhen, I ask this brother to be lenient with me."

He was a tall man that looked over 20 years old, after he finished speaking, he waved his hands and two red flames ignited on his hands—— he was actually someone who could use fire magic.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 47

Chapter 47: Lin Xiao

Leng Ya remained expressionless, but his slightly narrowed brows showed that he was being cautious. Faced with the nearing flames, he couldn't avoid them, so he held a short pitch-black sword and raised it lightning fast, he stabbed towards the man's heart as he welcomed the flames, he had actually made a double-edged move, as if he were sworn enemies with this man even though they had just met.

Nangong Zhen was greatly shocked and he hurriedly stopped his hands, he began to retreat but he had already lost the deciding moment of the battle, Leng Ya sent wave after wave of sword lights and he was forced to retreat little by little.

"At a very young age, he actually already has strength of a rank 10 primary stage, and furthermore his Qi is also astonishing, who is this man....." Lin Yan softly muttered to himself. In his mind, the outcome of the match had already been decided, Nangong Zhen was truly a magic genius, he already had the strength of a rank 9 of the primary stage, however the energy undulating from his opponent was at the rank 10 of the primary stage, together with his powerful Qi, his strength was completely comparable to a rank 10 or even higher.

"Nevertheless, Xiao'er will never lose to him."

"Rip", a bone deep cut appeared on Nangong Zhen's arm. Had he been a little bit late in retreating, his entire arm would have already been cut off. While he gasped, Leng Ya forced open the flames on his right hand in an instant, while clutching his left arm he said: "Sure enough, there is always someone better than someone, I admit defeat."

He stepped down while clutching his left arm, his tone and demeanor weren't the least bit sloppy, and his face also didn't show any signs of dismay. Ye Wu

Chen evaluated him: “He might become somebody in the future.”

At this moment, a loud shout suddenly came out from the corner of the square, and a white silhouette soared through the air at the same time, the white shadow gracefully spun several times before floating down the stage as though it were a feather, the movements looked effortless and elegant.

His appearance made the surroundings immediately break into chaos, the arena became filled with the mixed cries of men and women, the shouts were so deafening that they even ignored the presence of the emperor. Even the straight-faced emperor showed a slight smile towards the extremely loved and legendary eldest son of the Lin family.

He was dressed in white and he was seven feet tall, he had a jade-like face and he had a gentle look, the corners of his mouth were raised into a smile as gentle as the clear sky, yet his appearance didn't exude any arrogance, therefore he easily gave people a favorable impression.

“It's finally Young master Lin's performance.”

“Who can rival Young master Lin.”

“Ah! If my son was even one-tenth of Young master Lin, I could die in peace.”

“Young master Lin go, go!”

“The Lin family had produced such a genius, it's truly his ancestors fortune!”

The air was filled with words of praises and admiration and there weren't a single word of slander, Ye Wu Chen said in a low voice: “A very dangerous man.”

“Xiao Lin is recognized as a genius in both martial arts and literary studies that is difficult to see once in a hundred years. He has much more prestige in Tian Long City than me as the crown prince.” Long Zheng Yang said with a sigh. His mother, the empress, were the younger sister of the master of the Lin family, therefore Lin Xiao was naturally his cousin, but he haven't interacted with Lin Xiao for many years now.

On the seats, the master of the Lin family, Lin Kuang, sat together with Ye Nu as he enjoyed the sounds of praises and cheers around the arena, and afterwards, he put on a fraudulent smile and said: “Old General Ye, I heard that

your grandson has returned, why didn't you take him to accompany you here?"

Ye Nu snorted angrily and he just kept his mouth shut. After seeing Ye Nu's speechless expression, Lin Kuang felt so elated that he could almost fly. Everyone in Tian Long City knew that his grandson was an incredible genius and that Ye Nu's grandson was useless.

"Hahahaha! My sweet daughter, this is the husband that I've found for you, pretty good right? Hahahaha!"

The extremely rough voice echoed like a thunderclap and suppressed the noises of the audience. Even Ye Wu Chen's gaze were drawn over, after a look, he saw a dark middle aged man with a bearded face and a smile. He was already about fifty, his clothes were messy and had holes all over it and exposed his dark colored muscles. At this moment, he was sitting with his legs crossed and he was laughing heartily, revealing a mouthful of yellow teeth.

"Dad..... don't be so loud." At his side, a gentle and delicate figure shook him and talked with a soft and delicate voice. Ye Wu Chen's eyes shifted to the side and his gaze immediately became scorching hot.

There was a charming girl who was only about 15-16 years old, but she had beautiful eyes that were like deep pools of translucent water. She had a gentle and beautiful face matched with tender, cherry-red lips which made her look sweet and beautiful, her pure and breathtaking beauty, together with her jade like face, could truly make other beauties feel ashamed, she was just like a fairy descended from the heavens, untainted by the mundane world.

There were a cyan colored bird perched on her shoulder, it was just a normal sized bird with a long beak and it didn't look any different from an ordinary bird.

Ye Wu Chen gaped for a moment. The small and delicate beauty were sitting together with big and tall men which made her seem all the more delicate and aroused feelings of cherish and affection from others.

"That man is Hua Zhentian, he's the Hua family's master, and beside him is his only daughter, Hua Shui Rou, she should be turning 16 this year, I didn't think that pigtail wearing little girl would grow up into such a fairy-like woman. But it

won't be long before it's time for her to marry." Said Long Zheng Yang.

"She was betrothed to Lin Xiao right?" Ye Wu Chen asked, but his eyes were still fixed on Hua Shui Rou's body while he carefully watched every action that she made.

"That's right. It's well known in Tian Long City and they're praised as a very good match. So even though she's had countless admirers during the years, there weren't anyone who tried to propose a marriage. Hua Zhentian had also said that his daughter must at least be 16 years old before he could marry her off, which should be happening later this year."

Ye Wu Chen were silent but his lips were raised into a mysterious smile.

"Well then, since my lovely daughter doesn't like me being so loud, I'll keep my voice down. Anyways, how was it my daughter, are you satisfied? You'll be turning 16 in seven days, how do you want to handle the wedding?"

"I'll leave it all up to daddy." Hua Shui Rou replied with a very weak voice, she was already used to being submissive and obedient little girl, not mentioning that the other side was a handsome prince, even to her middle aged uncle she would only reply "I'll leave it all up to daddy."

"Haha! Well, in short, daddy likes this youngster a lot, he's a very good match for my lovely daughter."

Hua Zhentian was now 49 this year, he only had his daughter when he was around his thirties so he couldn't avoid spoiling her, for her, he wanted to pick the stars off the heavens and give them to his daughter. But, even though she grew up being pampered, Hua Shui Rou didn't have the slightest air of being a spoiled young lady, and she was incomparably gentle and kind instead, she was extremely shy and rarely went of her house, and she were afraid of going into crowded places. She was truly as delicate and supple as water and she easily aroused feelings of love in the hearts of men.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 48

Lin Xiao's hearing was excellent, and with deliberate attention to the sound, heard Hua Shui Rou's answer, with fondness in his heart. He faced Hua Shui Rou faint smile. Hua Shui Rou looked away in surprise and pulled her head down, a cherry colored blush painted itself on her cheeks.

Lin Xiao's reacted to the girl's shyness, his heart filled up with endless satisfaction. He could not help himself since the first time he noticed Hua Shui Rou's infatuation because not only does she have beauty that could bring a country to ruin, but also the feminine gentleness that men could only dream of. For years now, he would go secretly every few days to see her without her knowledge. Hua Shui Rou had known for a long time that her future husband is the eldest son of the Lin family, yet today was their first meeting.

A small plaintive sound could be heard. Hua Shui Rou was stroking a bluebird perched atop her shoulders. In a small voice she said, "Little Qing seems a bit hungry too."

This younger brother is quite skilled but still beneath my own. "Young brother just had two matches, is there a need for you to rest?" Lin Xiao courteously said.

He replied with a straight thrust from his sword.

Lin Xiao smiled, his right hand extracted a flexible sword from his sleeve, have no trouble brandishing, to obstruct the short blade of Leng Ya: "Since it is this way, I, Lin Xiao will pick up this small advantage."

Though vigorously holding his sword in parry, the vibrations that reverberated throughout his short sword almost caused him to drop it. He declined to retreat even one step, and his complexion shifted to something grave and stern. His strength lay on his superior speed, an expert at lightning fast movement who excelled in undermining the defenses of his opponent which lead to an instant killing blow. However, the opposing side created a situation in need of an open

confrontation, he didn't have the favorable position he needed to utilise his strengths.

Lin Xiao smiled slightly, his right hand wilfully swinging his sword. The sword in his hand already wove into a closed and tight network of blades that captured Leng Ya's entire body, the whole audience unanimously cried out in surprise as well as in cheers.

At the side where the descendants of the Long family were, two old men were intensely surprised, one of them exclaimed: "Young Master Lin already has the strength of a middle rank 10, now he has reached the peak rank of 10. Furthermore, there wasn't even the faintest signs of his reaching his limits, he has truly unbelievable talent."

"Good Power!" Ye Wu Chen's eyebrows wrinkled, his eyes wandered completely away from the body of Hua Shui Rou and locked itself into the sword inside of Lin Xiao's hand, following each movement of the blade.

Within the span of several breaths, Leng Ya already been transformed to such a state, his body suddenly jumping a few meters high over Lin Xiao. Lin Xiao's sword was there awaiting his arrival and thrust at him. Leng Ya's body abruptly twisted upwards, the blade of the sword almost cutting through his chest. After his foot hit the ground, he rapidly fell back, separating himself from the reach of the sword and coldly looking at Lin Xiao with pitch black eyes that flashed dangerously.

Leng Ya gripped both of his hands into his blade's hilt, shifting from a single-handed grasp to that of a dual-handed one. Lin Xiao once again waited, his long sword pointing forward, his face showing a flat smile. After a moment of silence, Leng Ya's feet abruptly slid through the ground; the movement of the blade in his hand was like a rapid dance, and his blade completely disappeared, locking his opponent tightly in Qi. Moving his feet rapidly forward, his movements had no discernible pattern, and a shadowy silhouette swiftly breezed through and it seemed like Lin Xiao was being charged at from multiple directions.

Lin Xiao tightened his hand, his eyes narrowing, his body made no other movement. The swiftly moving silhouette suddenly vanished, and a silver bright light exploded into a line that shot out at his right rib.

Lin Xiao's feet made no movements, his hand lightly trembled, and his long sword suddenly transformed into a flurry. Afterwards, there was a soft sound, "Ding", the point of his sword accurately piercing the top of the short blade. In an instant, Leng Ya broke off, then retreated five steps back and then stood firm. The black short blade dropped from his hand, "ding", onto the ice cold floor.

Above the arena there were immediately sounds of exaggerated cheers following echoes of praise. Lin Xiao somewhat regretful said: "You study assassination skills, which rely on speed and hidden stabs, its power in the face of frontal attacks becomes useless. Now in open confrontations you have no advantage. I won in this competition over you because of an unfair advantage and not because of my martial arts. The outcome of the battle is already clear."

Lin Xiao observed Leng Ya suddenly give out a murderous air which surrounded his body densely. He lowered his head and gave a roar, unexpectedly with his bare hands he charged at Lin Xiao, Lin Xiao gave an expression of intense focus, without choice he brandished his sword on his shoulder, but his eyes immediately shrunk because in the hands of Leng Ya arose a strange green twinkle. In a moment of absent mindedness, the movement of Lin Xiao's hands momentarily stopped. In that moment the green light passed through the sword that he held, and thrust itself towards his chest.

Lin Xiao was almost unable to escape this danger, although his body was unhindered, the front of his clothes were scratched and riddled with small holes. In his hand, the long sword was already chipped, the only thing remaining was a broken sword.

Earlier, when Lin Xiao used his sword which shook Leng Ya's entire body and even made his Qi and blood churn. Now once again he exploded with power, but he couldn't take advantage of the opportunity to unleash an attack. Leng Ya was a man whose pride couldn't allow him to lose, but there wasn't even the slightest injury on Lin Xiao. On the contrary, he deflected Leng Ya's flying weapon, but he wasn't willing to give up.

Lin Xiao sighed and felt regret after seeing the sword his hand breaking. "What an incredibly sharp weapon, it should have a famous name."

Leng Ya, though the short sword inside hand was only five inches long, all over

the body was a strange cyan color, flickering under the sunshine in cold rays of light. At this moment, the Chairperson suddenly alarmed said, “Shattering Wind Blade!”

Very few people knew the name Shattering Wind Blade, but the words of the old man created confusion within the entire arena.

“Who is Feng Zhaoyang!”

“Feng Zhaoyang? The Gale Nation’s War God Feng Zhaoyang!”

The arena was in a uproar. Who didn’t know this name within the Tian Chen continent? Who did not fear this name? During that time, He and Tian Long’s Sword God Chu Cangming were both exceptional talents, not even touching his middle ages he already reached God rank, and even entered the God realm earlier than Chu Cangming. The people of Tian Long country were not hostile upon hearing this name. It was because the Gale Nation once brought help to Tian Long country when facing disaster, several times they were almost close to drowning in disaster. It was well known by everyone that Feng Zhaoyang was the protector of the Gale Nation.

“The War God Feng Zhaoyang on one hand held the Beheading Wind Blade, on his other hand he held the Shattering Wind Blade. Now why is his Shattering Wind blade in your hands, Who are you? What do you wish for in my Tian Long City!” said one of the earlier old men beside the Long Yin.

Leng Ya kept silent, both hands holding firmly over his blade, faintly shivering.

“Are you from the Gale Nation?” Lin Xiao asked with furrowed eyebrows.

“it’s no wonder your attacks were so fierce, it seems your purpose for coming to my Tian Long City isn’t so simple, Humph!” Lin Yan abruptly stood up, his complexion grave and stern, his posture showing he wanted to jump inside the fighting arena.

Long Yin’s complexion began to sink: “Let us first ask what is his relationship with the Feng Zhaoyang!”

“Yes, I will wait first before seizing him”

“Wait a moment!”

Lin Xiao waving his hand towards their direction, then narrated: “Your Majesty, Second Grandfather, at this moment there has been no result to this competition. Is it possible to allow me to defeat him first. If the competition of Tian Long were to suffer and discontinue because of one person from the Gale nation, wouldn’t outsiders laugh at us. Besides, earlier he injured a number of people from our country, if we cannot beat him fairly, wouldn’t people look down on Tian Long country. After defeating him, your majesty and second grandfather can once again continue dealing with him any way you want.

Lin Yan fell quiet while Long Yin nodded and smiled: “What you have said is right, we shall depend on you then!”

The voices of the audience echoed throughout the arena: “Young Master Lin, you said it right!”

“That’s right, we want to defeat him by showing our strength fair and square, let the Gale nation know of my Tian Long country’s godly might! Let them be sincerely convinced of our strength!”

Ye Wuchen secretly sneered: “Borrowing the wind to take the opportunity, with a few words, this meaningless competition has changed into a fight for the dignity between countries, and if he prevails over this afterwards he will receive several times over praise and popularity for his victory.”

It seems he would have to figure out a way to get to the stage since this opportunity has presented itself to him. Hahahaha, he chuckled mischievously.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 49

Lin Xiao pointed the sword on his hand at Leng Ya and said: "Let's begin. Regardless of your purpose, let's finish this match first. This might be the last match of your life. After all, you people from the Gale Nation are not welcome here in Tian Long. You shouldn't be here!"

Their swords unleashed from their sheathes, and sliced through the air without contact. Then both swords clashed heavily against each other. The collision produced a clear ring in the air, the sound of both swords interlocking. This time none of the swords snapped off, and the clash only left a deep notch. Lin Xiao rebelliously waved his wands, the tip of the sword suddenly flashed into a faint white beaming light, shooting straight up to the unprepared Leng Ya's right chest. Leng Ya backed off two steps and quickly sealed the blood to prevent it from flowing out.

Realising he had been defeated, Leng Ya felt great remorse. He felt regret that he flashed out his sword too soon and had to suffer this consequence. This time, he would not have the chance to escape.

"Sword... sword energy! He must have used his spirit level strength to flash out sword energy!" an elder beside Long Yin exclaimed.

"Even though it was faint and not fully formed, it was still sword energy. He might just ascend to a spirit level in a very short time. His strength will surely surpass all levels!"

"Brother Long, please help look after Xue Er."

Ye Wuchen took a last grasp at Ning Xue's little hands. He got up smiling under the astonished gaze of Long Zhengyang, then proceeded to the tournament stage in a steady pace.

"Victory and defeat has already been determined. If you continue your wound

might rupture, and based on the location of it, this may even endanger your life.” Lin Xiao simply remarked, then turning around he said, “Your majesty, second grandpa, victory and defeat has been set, please issue your order.”

Everyone fell silent, but while anticipating the cheering sound of the surrounding people, the voice of a young man suddenly echoed.

“Wait.”

The voice was hardly audible, but it seemed like it had the strength to penetrate into the ears of each and every person present. Everyone’s gaze focused on one moving shadow slowly approaching the tournament stage because it was obvious the voice came from this person.

“That’s...”

“Seems like the young master of Ye family who had just returned home recently... Oh! It’s him!”

“Is it the sick son of Ye family?”

“That’s right, but I heard he disappeared for a year, after he returned his illness has been cured.”

“What is he doing? Doesn’t he know what’s the situation here?”

Discussion erupted all over the place, most of the people looked in interest for someone who dares to interrupt this kind of situation. How would this end if he didn’t really have reasonable grounds to disturb this situation?

“Chen Er!? Why is he here!” Wang Wen Shu stands up in excitement. Ye Shui Yao, who had been serene all along, flickered a tearful wink in her eyes.

Ye Wei and Ye Nu looked at each other, their facial expression were exceptionally identical, but at the same time they restrained themselves not to say a word.

Ascending to the top of the tournament stage, this was Ye Wu Chen’s first time to appear before a large crowd. The young master Ye before had difficulties going out, so much that for a long time he had been totally forgotten. This time he was smiling while standing in front of the crowd and triggered a large amount of whispered conversations. Because no matter what, his appearance and

personality traits have evidently surpassed Lin Xiao in such a short time. A perspicacious person would be able to see that every time he set his gaze on Lin Xiao, there was always an implication of discrimination.

Is this person really the young master of the Ye family who was despised by everybody before?

Before anyone could ask questions, Ye Wu Chen already faced Long Yin, and said first, “Wu Chen is here to see Your majesty the emperor. Wu Chen has returned home for 3 days but hasn’t had the luck to meet your majesty. Finally, I have my wish fulfilled. Please forgive me if I have acted rudely. I have some questions to ask Your majesty and master Lin.”

Long Yin didn’t react in anger and instead chuckled and said: “The Ye family has been loyal to the country, but almost lost their beloved son. Now that you have been found then that’s worthy of a celebration. I’m extremely happy and was planning to personally visit you. There’s no harm if you have questions to ask.”

“Wuchen thanks Your majesty’s kindness.” answered Wuchen in a very courteous manner, then he asked: “Wuchen just wants to ask, for this competition, is there a rule not to allow participants from other states?”

Long Yin shifted his gaze to Lin Yan, and Lin Yan replied: “There’s no such rule.”

“Then is there a rule in the competition wherein if there are casualties, then there’s a need to investigate?”

“There’s no such rule!”

“Then has this person caused any harm to our Tian Long nation?” Ye Wu Chen’s gaze shifted to Leng Ya.

“ ... ”

“That’s strange. What crime does this person named Leng Ya commit that you need to take him away?” Ye Wuchen asked in a puzzled look.

The Lin family and Ye family did not get along very well, and naturally Lin Yan didn’t give Ye Wuchen a friendly look. He raised his eyebrows upon hearing and said angrily: “What the meaning of this young child of Ye, is it possible that

you're providing a cover up for this person from the Da Fong nation? What's the matter with you, Ye family?"

The statement sparked anger from Ye Nu. He stood up, but before he could react, Ye Wuchen expressed his anger ahead: "What's the meaning of this master lin? We Ye family has been loyal to the nation ever since and have provided heroic contribution. Everyone in the Tian long nation can attest to that. Who doesn't know that we the Ye family has been loyal for countless of generations. In those year, it was we the Ye family that has saved the Tian Long nation from deep calamity. In those years, we stood guard in front of the entire nation. We killed the most peopel from the Da Feng nation. In those years and even until this day, we the Ye family is what the Da Feng people feared the most... and not your Lin family! Who are you to doubt us Ye family, you don't have the right to question us! I respect you as an elder, but I have to ask you... What is your motive? What hatred do you have that permits you to utter such malicious words!"

Ye Nu's anger completely disappeared in an instant. He stared blankly at Ye Wuchen for a moment and then sat down slowly.

"Chen (son), that's good!" Ye Nu's face rarely exposed a smile.

After 20 years of peace, people easily forgot about the war of the past. They forgot the outstanding military service that the Ye family had provided. These words caused Ye Nu to recall the blood-soaked battles from the past, his own lack of fear for death. The corners of his eyes were moist, and as people noticed they started to recall the catastrophe Tian Long had endured. The Ye family pledged their lives to save the nation, repeatedly using their powers to rescue the nation. Their military service reputation was unquestionable, no one had the right to doubt! If there wasn't a Ye family, no one would know if Tian Long could still even existing in the present. And also because Tian Long had the Ye family, the Da Feng nation had been defeated time and again by them and couldn't easily offend the Tian Long nation for a period of 20 years.

Ye Wuchen's words which demeaned the entire crowd left no trace of this, but instead from the recounted outstanding merits the Ye family contributed, people concluded: Tian Long exists because of the Ye family. The Ye family is the Tian Long nation's pillar. What is the Lin family to compare? Who are they to judge

the Ye family!

Some people in the crowd shot an angry gaze to Lin Yan.

“You...” Lin Yan has a finger pointed to Ye Wuchen, his beard stood up (he felt shocked), and he was left speechless.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 50

Lin Xiao smiled and said: "Master Ye, my second grandpa has an impetuous character, he didn't mean to rebuke Ye family, I'm here to apologize to Ye family on behalf of my second grandpa. But this person is from the Gale Nation and people from there are the ones who repeatedly offend us from Tian Long, which caused so many disasters around us. The people have no way to make a living. Generally, every person from the Gale Nation is our enemy, we can't let them get away so easily."

"Are you afraid of the Gale Nation's people?" Ye Wuchen turned his head and asked.

"I am proud as I'm born in Tian Long. How can I be afraid of merely people from the Gale Nation!" Lin Xiao knitted his eyebrows and said.

"In that case, this person hasn't caused any harm to us Tian Long nation, why should he be arrested? On one hand, this might seem as if we from Tian Long has very little tolerance towards other nations. On the other hand, this will also seem like we are afraid of the Gale Nation people. We arrest one when we see one! Let me dare ask, have you heard any person from Tian Long who went to the Gale Nation and was arrested by their people without any reason?"

"You are right, master Ye, but you haven't seen the extraordinary capability of this person. If you have to wait until he commits a crime to arrest him, it might be too late. People will treat it as a joke." Lin Xiao answered unyieldingly.

"Then master Lin, you mean to say that your capability have surpassed him? Do we need to also arrest you to prevent any disasters from happening?" Ye Wuchen laughed and said.

Lin Xiao seemed to show a grudging demeanor while shaking his head: "I am a Tian Long man, and he is Tian Long's enemy, a man from the Gale Nation!"

“Master Lin, I dare to ask, do you have any proof to confirm that he is from the Gale Nation?”

“Master Ye, you must have heard, the sword in his hand is called Shattering Wind Blade, was formerly from the Gale Nation’s God of War Feng Zhaoyang. If he’s not from the Gale Nation, then how could he have a weapon from their God of War Feng Zhaoyang.

“Oh, that’s the way it is, I understand now!” Ye Wuchen nodded humbly, as though he suddenly realized the truth. Then he walked towards Leng Ya who was sitting on the floor, His left hand lightly patted Leng Ya’s shoulder, then his right hand lightly took away the Shattering Wind Blade from his hand.

“Now, he doesn’t have his Shattering Wind Blade now so that means he’s not a person from the Gale Nation anymore. Right now the sword is in my hand so am I someone from the Gale Nation who should get arrested?” Ye Wuchen played with the green sword in his hand, pondered and said.

Leng Ya amazed and raised his head to see Ye Wuchen. The area on his shoulder where he received a pat have a strange warm circulation, which have caused the wound bleeding on his right chest to stop.

Lin Xiao’s voice stopped, shook his head and said: “Master Ye you are making false arguments.”

“Identifying one’s identity with the use of a weapon. Speaking of false arguments, I myself have conceded to master Lin”

“Master Ye’s words makes sense, but his identity is very extraordinary, because the Shattering Wind Blade has involved Gale Nation’s Feng Zhaoyang.”

“Master Lin, may I ask if Feng Zhaoyang had followed Gale Nation to invade Tian Long in those days or used any other method to violate us.”

“This never happened.”

“In that case, Feng Zhaoyang and Tian Long nation really don’t have any hatred towards each other, but rather, he dedicated his loyalty and freedom to the Gale Nation, protected what he needed to protect, yet he never used his power to help the Gale Nation’s to act oppressive. Is he to be respected or to be hated? Should we ought to pinpoint against Feng Zhaoyang, and trigger his

anger?”

“...”

“Also, not only you master Lin, but there’s some other elders here who can easily arrest this man called Leng Ya. If he really has dangerous motives, he wouldn’t have come here and showed off his Shattering Wind Blade so easily. He doesn’t really have any other motive beyond participating in the competition, that’s why he used Shattering Wind Blade without any worries. He is being open and candid, and if we treat him like this and if this news spreads out, are we as Tian Long men to be praised, or to be laughed at?”

Both men wearing white wore smiles on their faces. They argued with equal harshness, but both wouldn't concede. The whole stage became very silent, and everybody was stupefied upon hearing their arguments. What they refused to accept is that Lin Xiao stooped down from his higher position to engage in the non-stop argument of Ye Wuchen.

He really is Ye family’s good-for-nothing young master? Or has he been hiding his true identity after all these years, preparing to amaze the world with a single brilliant feat.

Wang Wenshu repeatedly rubbed her eyes, sort of stunned and talked to herself: “Is that... really my son?”

“That Leng Ya is from Gale Nation, hated by all, I felt quite appropriate to execute him on the spot before, to free him from any extreme bad conditions he ought to face and suffering from everyone’s reprimands. However, because Wuchen has a tongue like reed, every word went straight to the point and avoided the contradictions between Tian Long and Gale Nation. This successfully lead along everybody’s thoughts, including Lin Xiao’s. Right now, even I feel that executing Leng Ya will be the worst thing to do. Son, you are not the Wuchen that we used to know anymore.” Ye Wei said flatly, the side of his mouth showed a faint smile.

He lost his memory, but obtained a new vigor and life. This probably is one act of grace bestowed by Heaven.

The fire wizard’s bad temper was as violent as flame. He was being criticized by Ye Wuchen, and has been holding back his bellyful of anger. Upon seeing Lin

Xiao's position going downwards, he couldn't stand it any longer. "Ceng", stood up, pointed to Ye Wuchen and loudly roared: "Little son of the Ye family! You keep on protecting Gale Nation people, what are your inner intentions! I will arrest this person today. Even if I offended Feng Zhaoyang, then what? I'm not afraid of a lackey of the Gale Nation!"

"Hahahaha..." upon hearing, Ye Wuchen laughed wildly, then he flung his jade fan and said: "Chairman Lin, I think you are very old, not only do you have hearing problem, but your brain is also starting to malfunction. I'm born in the Tian Long Ye family, and I haven't been to Gale Nation. How can I protect Gale Nation? I protect the reputation and dignity of my Tian Long nation! I, in exchange, have a question for you, you said you wouldn't hesitate to provoke the anger of Feng Zhaoyang. He is called a God of War, his strength is earth-shaking, who can resist him except Tian Long's God of War Chu Cangming, can you!? If you really provoke Feng Chaoyang's anger from Tian Long, for you to die in your age is nothing, but how about the safety of our emperor His majesty! How about Tian Long nation's safety? It would stir up the Gale Nation's invasion of Tian Long... Don't tell me it's just because of your personal spite that you have to make Tian Long suffer!!"

"You"

"Moreover, Feng Zhaoyang has been loyal to his nation and ought to be respected. Right now he has been called a lackey by you. Do you mock all the loyal officers and general as lackeys!?"

One by one large basins of feces seemed to land on Lin Yan's head, Lin Yan almost threw up blood on the spot. He pointed to Ye Wuchen, his whole body trembled and was unable to make words, all his white hair stood up and between his hair sparkled flickering flame.

Some of the audience looked at Lin Yan with ill gaze, some of them were irritable and began showing anger. Master Ye was right, even though Feng Zhaoyang is from the Gale Nation, there's no right or wrong, he was being loyal to his master. Moreover, he dedicated all his life to his nation and to being a great model to their officials. This faithful official has been cursed as a lackey, and that would also mean he was cursing the faithful officials of Tian Long with the same title, wouldn't it?

Heavenly Star - Chapter 51

“Enough. Do not speak any further.” a monotonous voice echoed, Long Yin Who had been silent all along started talking: “Although what President Lin said was inappropriate, still he did not have bad intentions. President Lin, sit down first.”

Lin Yan, who had just now almost collapsed in his own anger, had to forcibly suppress his own anger in order to sit down heavily. His gaze was still fixed on Ye Wuchen, wishing he could Wuchen into a sea of flames and burn him into ashes.

After the sparring of words, Long Yin didn't even show a trace of anger. Instead he smiled happily and said: Ye and Lin family's youngsters are both extremely talented and outstandingly brilliant and can be pillars of our Tian Long nation in the future. I am extremely delighted! What Wuchen said was right, very similar to my own thoughts, our Tian Long nation will never be afraid of Gale Nation. We must never target any person for the Gale Nation without reason so as not to cause other nations to despise us. I also considered Lin Xiao's thoughts on Tian Long's safety, we should not allow a moment of negligence turn into tragedy. Besides, I gave the order, the ruler must not joke and I can't take back my own words, and this puts me in a difficult situation.

The emperor has spoken. The surroundings went silent. Ye Wuchen didn't answer back. Still, he was wearing an innocent smile on his face, he knew what the emperor meant “Difficult” was purely some nonsense, he must already have thought of some way to torment those people.

“How about this, since it's the right time and place, and both of you are here, might as well use this opportunity to compare your skills. Let's battle instead who determines who will win or lose. I will comply with the one who wins the duel.”

After Long Yin's suggestion, the surrounds went strangely quiet. Nobody dared

to interrupt or to agree; however, this method was clearly unfair! This time even a fool can determine that Long Yin was obviously siding with Lin Xiao. Not only will he win comfortably, but the emperor can also take this opportunity to insult Ye Wuchen and the entire Ye family.

Young master Ye not only has no martial arts skills, but was also a formerly bedridden and sickly person. Even if he is now in good health, how could he possibly be Lin Xiao's rival. Some people who have practiced martial skills and enchantment were secretly shaking their heads in disapproval because Ye Wuchen's body doesn't even contain any trace of energy waves. He is neither someone who has mastered martial skills nor enchantments.

Lin Xiao's eyebrows wrinkled slightly and was about to tactfully decline because he has this lofty and unyielding character. To compete with someone who has no power might wound his reputation, but before he could even open his mouth to speak, Ye Wuchen already replied smiling: "Emperor's order, how could Wuchen refuse to obey."

Lin Xiao quickly withdrew his thoughts and replied: "Lin Xiao shall comply."

Once he treated this young master Ye with disdain, and didn't even have the interest to meet this person, but this was their very first confrontation. After the arguments, his standing went downwards, but he didn't react with shock. Right now judging Ye's relaxed composure, his heart couldn't help but secretly stay vigilant. A very straightforward answer, could he have possibly come prepared? But judging by his breath, he clearly wasn't someone who had any powers.

In the contrary, Ye Wuchen's straightforward answer has brought about some murmurings in the surroundings, but no one believed that he had any strength to win over Lin Xiao. Some sighed, some secretly criticised.

"This... can't be. Don't let Chen compete with him. Don't say martial arts, Chen can't even harm a mosquito. How can we manage if he got injured?" Wang Wenshu stood up with great alarm, but Ye Wei dragged her arm and sat her down, comforting her: "Don't worry his facial expression is confident, clearly he has planned ahead of time. And based on the current situation, Lin Xiao wouldn't dare really harm Chen."

Wang Wenshu didn't even resist for a heartbeat. Firmly restraining herself not

to shout, her whole body was obviously restless and impatient. A son will always be a mother's favorite. If Ye Wuchen suffered any harm, it will be more painful than using a knife to cut her heart.

Ye Wei calmly watched Ye Wuchen. For someone to be chosen by the Sword God senior, could he really appear to be so powerless? Let's see what is hidden inside of him.

Lin Kuang has been beaming with joy for the longest time, Long Yin obviously sided with them. He crooked his head over, with consoling face he said: "Old General Ye, don't worry. My son Xiao will show mercy."

Ye Nu let out a very cold "humph", and didn't feel like paying any attention to him. His innermost being intensely raised up, but on the outside he was as serene as stagnant water. His intense opinion and calm temperament were equal opposing forces.

"Hahahaha, I suppose this guy from the Ye family doesn't want to live anymore, how dare he challenge my future son-in-law. My future son-in-law could just stab him to death with his little finger. Oh!! hahahaha!"

A sound similar to a thunderclap resonated, every corner heard it very clearly. Hua Zhentian had this delighted facial expression, as if seeing his future son-in-law hoisting power was the most joyful thing to observe. Beside him was his daughter Hua Shuirou, who then softly whispered in his ears: "Dad... lower down your voice".

Hua Zhentian covered his mouth at once, then facing his daughter smiled in embarrassment.

Both people positioned on stage, facial expressions were similarly light and gentle. Leng Ya had retreated off the stage, covering his chest while sitting down in competitors' area. His complexion was still very cold, but only a few noticed him because he was no longer the center of attention. The focus point has been shifted to Ye Wuchen. He couldn't run away. Not that he can't, but even if he could, he couldn't possibly do it.

Lin Yan grudgingly stared at Ye Wuchen, then said in a low tone: "During the competition, swords have no eyes. If there's an accident blame it on the skills and not on the person involved. Even if the person became handicapped, there's

no grounds for investigation!”

This sent secret signals to both Lin Xiao and Ye Wuchen, Ye Wuchen twisted the corner of his mouth and stared at Lin Xiao and said: “Master Lin, you have used up some of your energy in the competition a while ago. To be fair, I’ll fight you without weapons, how’s that?”

With these words, came uproar in the crowd. Most of the brothers even covered their stomachs and laughed, almost like hearing the greatest joke in the world. Hua Zhentian also smacked his mouth and said: “This young man from Ye is even more arrogant than his old man, interesting, very f*cking interesting.”

“Dad... don’t say bad words.” Hua Shui Rou gently pushed him with a voice as soft as a fly.

Hua Zhentian immediately went silent.

“He deserves to be called the grandson of Old General Ye, it’s very interesting, hahahaha.” the red faced Lin Kuang laughed arrogantly.

Lin Xiao got distracted, smiled shaking his head: “Don’t bother, I just used up a little energy a while ago. Now my strength has fully been regained. Young master Ye just use your full strength. May I know what weapon you are most experienced with.” after speaking, he lifted up the sword on his hand, prepared to use it to fight against Ye Wuchen.

“Okay, since Mr. Lin used his sword, then I will just use my fan.” Ye Wuchen’s right hand confidently flinged. Closed the jade fan in his hand, then pointed to Lin Xiao.

“Let’s begin” Lin Xiao didn’t want to comment any further, stroking the sword’s sharp end, hinting him to start the attack.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 52

“Elder Liu, what do you think about his strength?” Long Yin asked, using his gaze to hint at Ye Wuchen.

“Neither did he have martial skills, nor does he know any enchantments” the old man from the right side said, the other from the left also nod his head.

“Oh? Is that so?” Long Yin looked astonished. He could believe that there was no martial skills, but if there’s not even any enchantment involved... Based on the information he gathered, Ye Wuchen can not only use enchantments to connect with the wind, but also has the ring from the God of Sword. Also, Long Yin made his choice of siding with Lin family in front of the whole crowd just to test Ye Wuchen’s powers.

And he apparently did not have any desire to hide anything; instead, agreed instantly.

The jade fan came in contact with the broken sword, sending out an ear-piercing sound “Ding!”, a very large force burst forth from the point where both ends meet. Ye Wuchen’s arm slightly became numb, successively retreated two steps, Lin Xiao did the same, astonishment flashed through both his eyes.

“Crap! He successfully resisted!”

A rough voice loudly resonated through the crowd, that was Hua Zhen Tian’s signature voice. And this loud voice expressed the same surprise felt by everybody.

“What’s...” the elder beside Long Yin sounded alarmed: “What’s going on here? Young master Lin had used half of his power with one blow, how could he able to resist that? Totally no energy wave was detected, don’t tell me his body itself has high power to such an extent?”

Long Yin flashed his gaze, his vision firmly fixed on Ye Wuchen.

“Master Ye really is the sage presented as a normal person, likewise, be careful.” after a moment of surprise, Lin Xiao’s face had that self-confident smile again. He brandished the broken sword in his arm, and momentarily formed a dazzling shadow from his sword which overshadowed the whole body of Ye Wuchen. After what happened in his first attempt, he was decided not to hold back this time.

He only used half of his strength before. But Ye Wuchen also only used half.

Lin Xiao’s sword speed was very fast, but Ye Wuchen’s strength of vision and hand speed was also extraordinary. With just a simple fan, he had resisted the sword. Then, with a simple flick of his wrist, he opened the jade fan. The thick edge of the fan carried a sharp energy slash towards Lin Xiao’s chest.

Ding... Ding... Ding... Ding...

The sound of the sword and jade collision repeatedly echoed, the two men fighting on stage both showed serene complexion, but the people outside the stage were flabbergasted, couldn’t believe their eyes.

Lin Xiao jumped high and struck with his sword. The power went from faintly traceless to outstandingly strong and had been directly resisted by Ye Wuchen. “Boom” a sound echoed, a marble stone below Ye Wuchen’s feet suddenly shattered into small pieces, both his feet sunk through deeply into the ground.

Lin Xiao jumped back by means of his strength, and retreated a few steps after touching the ground and then stood firm.

A very deep dent mark had emerged in the jade fan in Ye Wuchen's hand, and this was almost snapped off because of the hit. The power that was able to break the fan like this, proved that Lin Xiao's strength was in no way beneath his own.

The second degree of Wuchen's power is equivalent to this ordinary world's tenth level power, how about the third, the fourth... and the highest seventh degree locked within his blurred memory?

Lin Xiao absorbed a deep breath, his contemptuous intent disappeared without a trace. He didn't stop. He concentrated on his sword with eyebrows furrowed and then dashed forward while his two faint sword beams flashed while approaching its target. Ye Wuchen used the jade fan to push them aside in

succession, resisting both beams, then directing his fan towards the approaching sword.

“My son... when did he become so powerful.” Wang Wenshu sound excited and surprised, partly didn't sound so convinced, but mostly had let go of her worries. Beside her, the once emotionless Ye Shui Yao now looked surprised.

“Sister, Chen is being considered as the descendant of God of Sword, it's impossible for him not to receive any teachings from God of Sword. He simply did not reveal his true powers” Ye Wei said, the usually serious face this time turned into one filled with excitement, he could no longer control it.

“Is he really is Ye family's sickly young master?” still many people asked this question over and over again.

“He is younger than Mr. Lin, yet his strength was enough to resist Mr. Lin, indeed the young master of Ye also is an overall genius.”

“If I weren't able to witness this in my own eyes, I absolutely won't believe it.”

“This surely means that if the father is a distinguished person, the son will surely do well, Ye family would not produce a useless person. To endure silently for so many years... they finally revealed this youngster's talent today.”

.....

There are endless discussions going on the stage right now, but Ye Wuchen and Lin Xiao's confrontation had already continue for several minutes. Still it couldn't be determine who won the engagement, both had their advances and retreats.

Let's just bring this to an end, this should be his entire strength... Apparently the second degree of his power might be somewhere between the ordinary world's tenth level and the spiritual realm.

But, Wuchen's strange and unpredictable power was really unimaginable.

Yet again there was another true direct strike, the raging power had caused the broken rocks under their both feet to flutter around, finally the jade fan in Ye Wuchen's hand broke apart from its middle. Still he had no intention to yield, but suddenly he sped up his body, with his bare hands grabbing Lin Xiao's neck.

Lin Xiao used his sword to directly stab backwards, but his vision blurred up. Ye Wuchen's body suddenly sprung forward in a right angle. Like a ghost, he appeared by his right side -- his actions contrary to cognition of an ordinary person, proceeded straight forward but quickly shifted to the side. "Inertia" -- this word could not be applied to his actions.

His hand grabbed the wrist but was shifted into another direction. Lin Xiao thrust his sword but before his powers could take effect, he realised there was not enough time to decide whether to pull back or go in reverse. The wrist had been precisely grabbed by Ye Wuchen, his palm was forced to flip upwards.

"Ka-cha" sounded loud and clear, his wrist was dislocated, and his sword was taken by Ye Wuchen, then struck at the direction of Lin Xiao.

Lin Xiao hurriedly retreated back, but the silver sword beam became nearer each time he blinked his eyes.

"Chi!"

The blade of the sword cut through the left side of the once perfect face of Lin Xiao, leaving behind a very long blood-colored scar.

Whoah!

A huge wave of noise, many young ladies who had crush on Lin Xiao let out a loud scream. Lin Kuang and Lin Zhan both stood up, eyes bulging from their sockets, shouted worriedly: "Xiao-er! (Son!)"

"Haha! Good, nice! Hahahaha!" in the middle of the noise, old master Ye clapped his hand while laughing heartily, wishing he could dance wholeheartedly. Because of his grandson, he had been worried for a long time, and had been sullen for more than ten years due to the comparison between both youngsters especially with Lin family. But now... a moment of revelation! The word "pleasure" was not enough to describe what his heart felt at this moment.

"You disgraceful youngster of Ye, how dare you hurt our Xiao-er!". This time Lin Yan's five senses had been twisted together, evidently his anger reached its pinnacle.

"Oh? Then moments ago who was the one reminding me that 'swords have no

eyes during a competition, if someone was inattentively injured... even if handicapped there should be no investigation', are so old so as to have forgotten your own words? Do you mean you are talking rubbish?" Ye Wuchen said mockingly. The broken sword in his hand was as bright and clean as before and didn't leave a single trace of blood.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 53

“Don’t be angry second Grandpa, it’s me who did not perfect my skills, don’t blame it on young master Ye” Lin Xiao said while covering his wounds. Then, facing Ye Wuchen, somewhat carried a bitter smile while saying: “Mr. Ye really has good skills, I’m sincerely convinced and I concede. I guess I acted ignorantly.”

“Hurry and lead Xiao-er to treat his wound!” shouted Lin Kuang.

“Hehe, elder Lin please don’t worry, our Chen-er had already shown mercy. It’s just a small wound. If a while ago Chen-er slashed through his neck, then we would have made a fuss.” Ye Nu consoled with these words.

The muscles on Lin Kuang’s face twitched continuously. He sat down heavily, and let out a cold groan. Ye Nu felt leisurely invigorated upon seeing that expression.

Lin Xiao went down the stage, a wizard who was seated behind Long Yin had left his seat hurriedly and went out to treat Lin Xiao.

When you strike someone you don’t aim at the face, let alone mark the face. This is akin to giving Lin family a ferocious slap on their face in front of numerous influential officials.

Everybody stared blankly at Ye Wuchen on the stage, after today, who would call the young master Ye a sickly person.

“You disgraceful young man!!”

This huge roar spread widely like a song. Along with this roar, came leaping a man with a solid and thick image, standing roughly 10 meters high and landing on the competition stage. Upon his landing, Ye Wuchen faintly felt the faint trembling of the stage.

“Ah.... dad!” Hua Shui Rou cry out in surprise. But her voice was too small, Hua Zhentian couldn’t hear her since he had already landed on the stage.

“So it’s actually Senior Hua, looking forward to receive your enlightenment” Ye Wuchen said, his face filling with smiling expression.

For anyone to be so impudent in front of the emperor, no other would have dared other than Hua Zhentian. Long Yin wanted to say something but hesitated and finally chose not to utter anything and also had no indication of anger. Evidently, he was already accustomed to Hua Zhentian’s attitude a long time ago.

“Enlightenment nonsense! How dare you muddy youngster hurt my future son-in-law’s face, let me teach you a lesson!” Hua Zhentian’s eyebrows furrowed, his eyes seem to have puff out flames. He loved his daughter more than his own life, and also loved everyone connected to her. Naturally, he would also protect his daughter’s future husband whom he clearly witnessed the face being marked and wounded by a sword. He exhausted much of his will restraining his anger, but finally he threw himself at the stage, his repressed anger crumbling his restraint in violent eruption.

Along with his anger, a whiff of violent breath had been released and pressed into Ye Wuchen’s chest like a huge rock. His heart felt frightened... This master from the Hua family really had a spiritual level of strength.

His grandson who had demonstrated extraordinary skills made him feel pride, which had now been tarnished by the defeat. If Ye Nu could still withstand this kind of attitude, he will not be called “Ye Nu”* anymore. Standing up with a “Ceng” sound, he pointed to Hua Zhentian shouting: “Hua Zhentian, Lin youngster does not have the skills to match you. It’s not our Chen-er’s fault, don’t make trouble without any reason, other people might laugh at you.”

TL: Ye Nu also means Anger

Hua Zhentian turned ferociously, then using his thunder-like voice roared: “Old man Ye, I saw him hurting my future son-in-law’s face. How could my precious daughter handle this! Although he is your grandson, I will still hold him responsible.”

With Hua Zhentian’s fiery temper, he could scold any person, even the emperor is not within exception, and definitely not even Ye Nu.

“It’s really none of my business even if your future son-in-law is killed. If you

dare touch a single hair on Chen-er, I'll burn down your Hua house tomorrow!"

"Bah! I'll smash you until your mother will not be able to recognize you anymore. If you don't burn our house down tomorrow, then you are a cuckold and a bastard!"

"Do you think I won't? In those days when I was fighting in a battlefield, you were still a child seeking milk!"

"What's the use of fighting in a battlefield, I, your father, can use a single Vibrating Sky Thunder that can surely wipe out your entire Ye family!"

TL: 老子 - I, your father/superior - word used in anger to connote that you are superior. We've used this before but just putting a note for it in case not familiar to you.

Both of them fumed with anger, their elegance and composure completely lost. They both wished they could start a fight right away. Long Yin shook his head with a bitter smile, yet speak a word, and Lin Yan's lips were sealed, but he felt happy inside. He really hoped the relationship of Ye and Hua family would deteriorate.

Hua Shui Rou grasped both her hands tightly, nervous tears emerged abruptly. If any young man saw her lovely, pitiful posture, they would be stunned by her beauty and feel sorry for her.

"Enough, shut up!" Ye Wuchen shouted as he couldn't tolerate any longer.

His voice had caused Hua Zhentian to shift his focus, he twisted both hands, replied very fiercely: "After scolding the old one, let's teach this young one a lesson, I'll beat the crap out of you later."

"Wait a moment Elder Hua, could you please listen to the us youngsters for a few moments?"

"Spit it out."

Ye Wuchen smiled indifferently, all of a sudden bent low his body, used the damaged sword in his hand to cut through the ground, his body movement shifting into high-speed. During few small breaths, he had draw a 5 meter diameter circle on the floor. When Ye Wuchen moved back to his original

position, the circle happened to be surrounding him and Hua Zhentian.

“Hurting the elder’s future son-in-law, that clearly is the fault of this youth. But Hua and Ye family both have made their contributions to the Tian Long nation and both are pillars of this nation, how could a small matter affect the harmony of both family. To avoid the casualties caused by the lack of harmony, let’s compete by means of literary, whoever comes out of this circle first loses, how about that?”

“You’re talking nonsense, I’m here to teach you a lesson, if you jumped out of that circle, who am I to compete with? Don’t treat me as a fool!” Hua Zhentian roared in rage.

“Elder Hua are you afraid?”

“Nonsense!”

“If I lose, you can do whatever you want to do, how about that? Elder Hua... can you do it!”

“Hey... This is what you’ve said, why can’t I!”

“Then Elder Hua are you willing to gamble with me?”

“What bet!”

“Whoever come out of the circle first loses. Winner should agree to the three conditions of the loser, Elder Hua can you accept that?” Ye Wuchen explained clearly.

“Yes! Why not, since you youngster wants to die, let me help you fulfill your wish.” Hua Zhentian agreed without thinking, fiercely lifting his two fists and aiming at Ye Wuchen. His martial skills and power relied mainly on transformation. After applying Chi his whole body seemed like it was covered by a layer of copper wall. He has confidence that even if he stood motionless in front of Ye Wuchen, he wouldn’t be easily defeated.

“Alright, then let’s begin Elder Hua, be careful.” the corner of his mouth revealed a smile as if he had prevailed in a conspiracy.

Some of the people in the crowd finally reacted, but hadn’t gotten the time to shout in response as suddenly Ye Wuchen gracefully leaped out of the circle.

Hua Zhentian looked distracted, and then pointed to Ye Wuchen and laughed wildly while saying: “As it turns out, young boy like you has soft bones. Now that you have been defeated, give me immediately...”

TL: Soft bones means cowardly

“I’m already defeated, please follow our bet Elder Hua, agree to my three conditions.” Ye Wuchen chuckled.

Hua Zhentian stared for a moment, almost went violent: “You young man, are you out of your mind, I was the one who won this bet, you are the one who should agree to my three conditions!”

“I think you must have heard it wrong, Elder Hua. What I meant is --- the winner -- should agree to the three conditions of the loser. You are the winner, and I’m the loser.” Ye Wuchen laughed amiably, face looking innocent.

Hua Zhentian opened his eyes wide, his big mouth formed a circle, and he fiercely inclined his head to look towards the audience.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 54

“Hehe, General Hua, Mr. Ye said moments ago that the winner will be the one to agree to the loser’s three conditions, and not the loser responding to winner’s three conditions.” an old official said.

“My beloved official Li, you are right.” Long Yin said.

Even the emperor had seconded the statement, so it was impossible for it to be untrue. Majority of the people from the audience had committed the same mistake of hearing the statement in reverse, even they were unable to make certain of it. Only the minority had heard the statement correctly, and they have seen the proof just by looking at Hua Zhentian’s eccentric and pitiful face.

“Daddy... what he said... it is indeed that way.” echoed a very soft and timid voice. Although it was soft voice, Hua ZhenTian was able to hear it clearly.

Even his daughter had said the same thing, was it still worthy of doubt?

Hua Zhentian kept on changing his facial expression, then suddenly facing up laughed out loud like a crazy person and walked briskly in front of Ye Wuchen. He used his dark hand to pat Ye Wuchen’s shoulder while laughing out loud, and exposing his teeth, his tears from the laughter nearly overflowed from his eyes.

“Good! Good! Good! Hahahaha! Well, young fellow, you went as far as to trick this old man. Very well, very well, hahahaha!”

“After all these years you are the first one who dared to trick me! Well, pretty good! You have a bright future! Hahahaha... I’m really convinced. Alright, what conditions do you like me to agree upon, do I simply have to wrinkle my brows or write my own family name backwards!”

Ye Wuchen separated from Hua Zhentian’s hammer-like arm and said: “My first condition is to request Elder Hua not to investigate recent events.”

“Of course I don’t have any plans to delve into the past anymore. For someone

who could trick me like this, what does it matter about Lin family's young son, he incurred wounds that just serves him right. You have two more conditions." said Hua Zhentian straightforwardly.

Ye Wuchen's head beaded with sweat ... What's the logic in this?

"Then approach me once you have them... young fellow, you deserve to be called the young son of Ye family. I think highly of you! Hahahaha!"

Hua Zhentian turned around, swaggering to return to his seat. His anger had disappeared completely, replaced by a whole face of contentment and looking exactly like a patron leaving the brothel.

"I'm finally being tricked ruthlessly. Great! So fucking great!"

Feel great after being tricked? That's nonsense... had he suddenly gone insane? Majority of the people thought the same thing.

Ye Nu, who had exploded in rage, went back to his seat, gritting his teeth inwards.

"Daddy, you... are you alright?" Hua Shuirou asked in a worried tone when Hua Zhentian returned to his seat since Hua's reaction was so strange

"Hmm... that young fellow is pretty good. His appearance is better than the young fellow of the Lin family - his martial skills are also better than the young fellow of Lin; furthermore, even dares to trick me... Why did I reject the marriage proposal from Ye family before. Certainly I've lost my mind." Hua Zhentian seemed somehow upset patting his head. Looking at Ye Wuchen, his gaze was quite reluctant to part from him, oddly wishing he could just let Ye trick him again.

"..."

Hu Shuirou secretly looked at Ye Wuchen, then all of a sudden, she lowered down her head, her heart beating very fast.

Ye Wuchen had caused Hua Zhentian to reveal the distinct feature of his characteristic and flaws through his extrinsic performance, and consequently, Hua Zhentian was fully defeated.

Originally, this competition was supposed to be a great show but it's

conclusion had reached a point where the ending was not something anybody expected. Hua Zhentian not only got unlucky, but moreover the Ye family also got their great bargain -- two conditions! Judging by Hua Zhentian's character, he would surely keep his words and that is what makes it a valuable prize.

All things shall come to an end, but some people in the contrary don't want it to end.

Yet another man hopped onto the stage, then, completely without poise, pointed and shouted at Ye Wuchen: "Young child of Ye, you're not only shielding a people from the Gale Nation, but also using your despicable and shameless acts in front of Your Majesty the emperor and the people to treat General Hua as an idiot! You are so presumptuous, you don't even respect the emperor and his rules!"

Lin Yan originally had bellyful of flaming anger, but then it burned stronger, and appears as if it would explode at any time. How can he just let Ye Wuchen slip by so peacefully after this. As a result, he made up a so-called unknowing accusation to press on - letting the people twitch their lips and say.... just say it out loud when you want to vent out your personal spite - why would you have to include the emperor and us.

Ye Wuchen hadn't gotten the time to respond, Hua Zhentian angrily interrupted, standing up, pointing finger and scolding: "Old man Lin, what do you mean! I'm sincerely convinced that I lost and I conceded in a straightforward and upright manner! Ye youngster defeated me with his own ability, winning fair and square, it's none of your business. Damn you. How can you curse me as an idiot, would you believe that I'll make your house explode by tomorrow?!"

Although Lin Yan was just using Hua Zhentian to resolve the situation, there was somewhat a reason to exonerate him, but he didn't expect to provoke this kind of tongue-lashing. The veins in Lin Yan's neck burned in red. Ye Wuchen waved facing the direction of Hua Zhentian: "Elder Hua please don't be mad, this is an affair of the younger generation, only we can resolve it."

Hua Zhentian did not say anything further, and just sat down. The people were taken aback by this.

"Head Lin would you also like to have a competition with me?" Ye Wuchen

rubbed his shoulder and asked indifferently.

“That’s right! You hurt my Xiao-er (son) and won against General Hua, let’s see if you have the ability to beat me. If you win, I not only won’t investigate on the incident where you hurt Xiao-er, but will also give you three kowtows with my head banging on the floor, would you dare or not!?”

A wave of light hissing sound echoed. One of the seven Heaven Level masters of the Tian Long Nation would dare compete with a normal tenth grade power level youngster, and to question intensely whether the opponent would dare take the challenge --- was he not ashamed?

But these words no one would dare ask. Because behind Lin Yan there was not only the Lin family, but he was also the head of Tian Long’s Imperial Educational Institute - several influential officials have their children in this institute.

Even a fool can see that, Lin Yan’s shameless request for a competition was fake. The true reason was to use this opportunity to vent out his personal spite. Due to his high position he hasn’t been this sullen before. But... the emperor didn’t even intend to stop him, instead his face seems leisurely contented. Many people still didn’t realize that today the emperor only spoke very little and only observed in silence, as though enjoying a stage full of marvellous shows.

Ye Nu fiercely stood up and was about to rain curses, but instead heard Ye Wuchen sneered: “Why not?”

Ye Nu suddenly stared in amazement and wasn’t able to speak any further.

“Judging by your old age and weak body, I’m afraid of being not able to control my powers, Accidentally killing head Lin would be awful... How about this, I’ll stand here to let you beat me. Oh, I heard you can play with fire, right? Then I’ll stand here to let you beat me with fire three times. If you can injure me, then I lose, I’ll do whatever you want. But if the three flames are unable to hurt me, then Family Head Lin loses. Kowtow is not necessary, because for me those are worthless, if Lin lose, then from now on whenever you see me just call me “grandpa” three times, would you dare?”

The whole audience went absolutely silent, now they have witnessed the most inconceivable incident in this world. Ye Nu and Ye Wei’s face color changed, Ye Nu stood up and roared: “Chen-er (son), don’t make trouble! Although he might

seem like a half dead old man, he has Heaven Level power! His fire can even melt steel!”

“What!? Ye Wuchen startled upon hearing, eventually his face color changed, looked at Lin Yan with a gaze brimming with fear.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 55

The sudden change in face color of Ye Wuchen had caused Lin Yan to laugh grimly, he lowered his tone while laughing: "Well, you speak very well, how can I not do it! Haha haha!"

Lin Yan's voice dropped. Because he had taken the bet, there was wild uproar within the audience. Lin Yan was the strongest fire wizard in the whole Tian Long nation, there's no way a youngster would be able to resist him. It would be fine if it were just a simple competition, at most he will just be simply defeated by Lin Yan and get burnt in a battered and exhausted manner, but in no way would he get murdered because Lin Yan wouldn't dare do this. Even if he defeated his opponent it would be just an everyday experience; on the contrary, Lin Yan will get despised by other people if he lost. This idea had been suggested by Ye Wuchen, but in any case he would just suffer from the consequences of his actions and be consigned to his eternal damnation.

Could it be that this astonishing genius of the Ye family would just like that get destroyed by the hands of Lin Yan? Anyway, the Ye family wouldn't allow this kind of thing to happen. After a while, there would be an unavoidable episode of riot.

Ye Wuchen turned around, facing towards Ye Nu and Ye Wei he revealed a relaxed smile but quickly concealed it. Ye Nu and Ye Wei simultaneously took it all in, and then glanced at each other's face.

Don't tell me he is luring Lin Yan into something?

Although they could tell what method would be used, the two men calmed down at long last. Ye Wei patted Wang Wenshu to calm down her nerves, and signaled her not to panic.

Ye Wuchen suddenly clenched his teeth fiercely and turned around as though he weren't afraid of dying. Facing the location where the emperor was seated,

he yelled every word solemnly: “We, the Ye family, are absolutely not ones who would break our promise. Since I, Ye Wuchen, have already agreed on this bet, then there’s no way I’m backing out. Let Your Majesty and all the friends and elders seated here be my witnesses. If I lose, I will be punished by Clan Head Lin without any resistance. But If I luckily defeat Head Lin, then he should call me “grandpa” three times whenever we met.

After a moment of silence, a flat powerful voice echoed: “Fine! Since you’ve insisted, then I am going to be your witness,. You started this bet, have you pondered on the outcome if you are defeated?”

“We from the Ye family, when we lose, we lose with dignity and fairness. Absolutely we never grow fat eating our word else we would be ridiculed by other people.” Ye Wuchen remarked in a serious tone.

TL: Idiom alert, grow fat eating our words means not to live up to one’s promises.

Long Yin nodded his head: “Now we begin... but... I really hate seeing a talented young man get ruined by this. Sometimes admitting one’s defeat is not a shameful thing - to blindly pursue one’s dignity is a behaviour of an impertinent person.

“Wuchen thanks Your Majesty for the concern.”

Ye Wuchen turned to face Lin Yan, his face is calm and his attitude that of facing death with equanimity: “Superior Lin, please go ahead. Just like we agreed, you can only use flame to attack, or else you lose, and I cannot evade, or else I’ll lose.”

“Hmp! I don’t need your reminders!” Lin Yan let out a cold groan of disdain, then his expression turned to sorrow. He firmly believes that Ye Wuchen’s power would never be able to resist his flames. He lifted both of his hands, and then both palms ignited a red colored flame. The flame color went from a red-yellow hue and gradually turned to a dark scarlet red. A small portion of heat became stronger and stronger starting from his palm then quickly spreading to all the directions.

But at this moment, the originally angry Ye family should have yelled “Hey old Lin Yan, if you dare hurt my Chen-er, even just a single strand of his hair, we Ye

family will make you pay". Instead, completely out of everybody's expectation they had completely maintained their silence, but their foreheads continuously broke out cold sweat showing their inner nervousness.

Wang Wenshu's heart almost jumped out of her mouth, Ye Wei grabbed her hand to comfort her: "Believe in Chen-er, we must believe in Chen-er, if we interfere without careful consideration this might in turn bring harm to him."

Would Lin Yan really use his powers to kill Ye Wuchen?

Of course not. Even though Ye and Lin families could not get along, they didn't have any major grudges beyond their rivalry. If Lin Yan had really caused Ye Wuchen to be handicapped or even to cause him to die, then there will be absolute irreconcilable hatred between these two families. The Ye family would take their revenge against Lin by all means, and there'll be no such bullshit regarding there being a bet. What kind of bet would cost them their son. Moreover, people would criticize Lin family for being cruel, and they wouldn't say anything wrong against the Ye family.

Lin Yan at most only wanted to injure Ye Wuchen, possibly cause him to be confined on a bed for a month or two to vent out the accumulated anger within his own heart. This way, people wouldn't blame it on the Lin family, and would only mock Ye Wuchen for overestimating his own powers - and to go so far as to make bets with a person with Heaven Level powers without knowing the background of his opponent. To get what he deserved for the injury - one could not blame Lin Yan for delivering this. Also, Ye family would not be able to seek any vengeance afterwards, at least regarding the outcome of the bet.

Furthermore, Long Yin's words just a few moments ago were aimed at persuading Ye Wuchen not to do anything stupid and for him to concede to save himself which should have given enough of a hint to dissuade him.

On the side of the audience, Hua Shuirou and a majority of the people began to be anxious. She pulled Huan Zhentian's clothes and said in a low-voice: "Daddy, will something bad happen to him? Looks like the old Ye Ye is more powerful."

TN: Ye Ye is grandfather

This old fellow when he encounters me only runs away, this youngster does

really play big now. Perhaps this will be the time of his ruin.” Hua Zhentian said pitifully yet with a grin.

In a corner, Long Zhengyang’s inner being was also anxious. He leaned his head only to find Ye Ningxue’s peaceful face. In the corner of her mouth hung a faint silly smile, and he couldn’t help but ask: “Sister Ningxue, aren’t you worried of your brother?”

“No worries.” Ye Ningxue answered.

“But my grand uncle... that Lin Yan is the most powerful fire wizard in the Tian Long Nation, would he have any method to take his attacks and not get hurt?”

“Of course! Because brother simply is not afraid of fire.” Ningxue said full of smiles.

Lin Yan waved both of his hands and two identically sized fireballs burst out as though they were two red colored dragons flying towards Ye Wuchen’s chest, all the while twisting and rotating. The corner of Lin Yan’s mouth exposed a sneer. With this hit, he only used 20% of his powers, he was confident that Ye Wuchen could only resist at most a few seconds without getting seriously burnt. Yet, as everyone had expected, Ye Wuchen didn’t even use any powers to resist or isolate the flames. He only stood there without moving, his expression strangely calm and he even stuck out his chest in preparation to receive the two approach flames.

The two flames knocked against Ye Wuchen’s body at the same time... the audience platform immediately echoed with the screams of women. Some women even turned around to cover their eyes, but this was immediately followed by a surprised and shocked cry.

After the two scorching, fiery dragon flames hit Ye Wuchen’s body, it was indeed like two flames falling into the water. Between a few breaths it disappeared without any trace. No splash of fire, no white smoke, just like that it completely disappeared. Not only was Wuchen’s body unharmed, but his clothes didn’t receive any damage as well. Ye Wuchen was still standing quietly on the same spot, as though nothing happened.

In disbelief, people rubbed their eyes again and again, they looked cautiously at Ye Wuchen’s body and attempted to find any traces of the burn, but could not

find any. They could not help but think, did Lin Yan only mean to frighten his opponent by throwing out flames only to extinguish them or were the flames he threw simply flame-like fire lights? Beyond this, there was nothing that could have explained this inconceivable incident that just occurred.

But the extreme surprise that could be found in Lin Yan's face surely could not have been faked ----- then by using what method did Ye Wuchen completely resist such flames?

Heavenly Star - Chapter 56

Wang Wenshu's face went pale as she returned to her seat, her heavy feeling slowly turned into relaxedness. Her forehead already full of cold sweat, she remarked: "This kid really scared the crap out of me, his mother." When Ye Wuchen got struck, she almost stood up as if she were in electric shock, her heart almost jumping out of her throat.

"I already told you, just trust Chen-er." Ye Wei said in a mischievous laugh. At the same time, he wiped off the cold sweat out from his own forehead and left no trace behind. His heart was similarly pushed to its maximal limits. He was surprised as to how a while ago he was able to keep most of his composure.

After all, this child who came back after having been lost for year had brought them a great deal of shock... or rather pleasant surprises.

"That's the first attack." Ye Wuchen said simply while facing Lin Yan with an exposed and mocking grin across his face that provoked his opponent. He seemed almost nonchalant about the situation.

Inside his mind, a new memory emerged.

"... Your body possess water, fire, wind, thunder and earth - the power of death from the five dark elements of the holy Qilin. Qilin's blessing. You will not fear the ice nor the snow nor the bitter cold throughout your lifetime. You will not fear the fire nor the burn nor the torrid heat. Not the fear-twisting wind nor the crushing boulder. Not the thunder nor the lighting splitting from the sky nor the breath of death. Your body helps you empower these six channels of forces - water, fire, wind, thunder, earth and death - for you to have immunity and control over these six channeled elemental power..."

Holy? Qilin's blessing... because of it, can one never fear of water, fire, wind, thunder, earth and death and even harness these forces?

Lin Yan strongly suppressed his anger and surprise and said in a lowered tone: "I was unable to tell that such a little fellow as you had such skills. In that case, if you have guts, then don't hide it! Ha!!"

With one loud shout, Lin Yan's hands clasped together onto his chest, a strong dazzling red light rose up from the surface of his palms and then expanded rapidly. In that same moment, a scorching heat grew gradually more powerful until it shrouded the entire public area. The crowd felt as though, for a moment, the scorching sun of a hot summer was cast upon them.

For a person's strength to be Heaven Level was quite rare, but once they became a master this was sufficient enough for them to go against the whole world. Nobody could stop them, and no one would dare provoke them. They even earned the respect of the emperor, so even though Long Yin was present, Lin Yan could freely show off his powers like a raging inferno. Since Heaven Level masters were rare, few could really contest them, and witnessing their true strength became a very rare and fortunate event.

But today Lin Yan used up 70% of his powers to condense the flame power that already caused the audience to tremble in fear - even Ye Wuchen's facial expression displayed astonishment.

This was Heaven Level strength... and as powerful as this was, this still wasn't his full force. A while ago the energy of Hua Zhentian was extremely astonishing and would already have been difficult to resist. This time, given the strength that Lin Yan put on display, it was clear that the magnitude of power was incomparably superior to that of Hua Zhentian's.

Spirit Level and Heaven Level seemed as though they were just one level, but their difference was like the distance between sky and earth.

Ye Wuchen arrived in this Heavenly Star continent for just a short period of time, and still could not thoroughly understand the different levels of the worldly powers. If the level was high, it would be more difficult to upgrade and almost axiomatic in every aspect. From the Tenth Level to the Spirit Level was a very large gap that few could surmount. Then from the Spirit Level to the Sky Level was another larger gap that, once surpassed, led to the recognition of a power so great that the owner was attributed as having a Demi-God state as called by

the human race. But the Heavenly Star continent had Spirit Level masters everywhere, yet the Heaven Level masters were a rarity because it was really hard to step across that gap - power, luck, perception and opportunity, these were all indispensable.

“Forbidden Fire --- Red Lotus Arrow!”

A loud voice cried. This casted half a meter of red light that transformed into a rough and long flame arrow and was then followed up by a luminous and terrible heatwave of shots across Ye Wuchen’s front chest.

Wang Wenshu once again stood up fiercely, and for a moment her heart raced faster by many multiples.

Such terrible attack, could the miracle happen once more?

Countless heartbeats rose up in speed - perhaps that of all the people watching with the exception of one calm Ningxue

Boom!!

The scarlet flame exploded into a crackling and radiating fireball - and then extinguished itself in almost an instant. The temperature on stage rose up into something impossible to withstand, but then dropped suddenly and then slowly the temperature returned into its normal state.

When the flames exploded, Ye Wuchen’s body flew out, his body flipping into the air and receding seven to eight steps after falling to the ground and the finally he stood still upon reaching the other side of the stage. His face was flushed. Ye Wuchen bravely inhaled, then forcibly swallowed the fresh bloody that was just about to rush from his throat.

If Lin Yan were simply using his flames, it wouldn’t have mattered given how strong Ye Wuchen was. But this kind of tremendous flame attacks were definitely not something he would really like to face. Although Lin Yan had high magic power and low competence skills as a wizard, the applied force of impact could not be compared to the same level of Martial Skill type of masters, but it was still something impressive from a Heaven Level master. Wuchen almost got full defeated if he hadn’t fully guarded his chest.

Pacifying his internal wounds, Ye Wuchen leisurely walked towards the

stunned Lin Yan. With his posture set up on high, he said: “Master Lin, apparently your flame wasn’t good enough - not a strand of my hair or even a cloth on me was burnt.”

After speaking, his face was filled with loathing as he patted the clothes on his chest, as though being touched by the flame just a while ago was akin to humiliation.

In front of Lin Yan, a long black line extended all the way up to where Ye Wuchen was which wasn’t originally present. This was the mark that was left when he had chanted “Forbidden fire -- red lotus arrow” and the awfully scorching hot temperature burned through the marble floor. This was a terrible flame that was impossible to fake.

But Ye Wuchen who had been directly hit without any shield appeared not to have the slightest injury. If they had not actually witnessed it, they would never have believed it even though if they were to be beaten to death.

What method did he really use! Or it may mean that his strength has reached a point where Lin Yan’s flame can’t even harm him... Is that even possible?

“Daddy, you are awesome, seriously... really, really awesome.” Hua Shuirou said unable to restrain herself. From time to time she secretly looked at the young man on stage who had caused everyone’s incomparable surprise.

“Yes... really fucking awesome.” Hua Zhentian stared with his bull-like eyes, then speaking in a low muffled voice: “Fuck, why did I even reject this fellow to be my son-in-law! He’s even more pleasing to the eye than that Lin youngster.”

“Dad... don’t say bad words!” Hua Shuirou said softly, her face turning red.

Long Yin’s face was as still as water, but both eyes flickering with acute radiance. He said in a low voice: “Elder Li and Elder Lao, could you have resisted like him?”

“Definitely impossible!” both shook their heads without hesitation.

“If I were the one to face Clan Head Lin’s attack, I would have simply avoided it in the first place. Directly withstanding his force, even if full strength were used... the injury still cannot be avoided. But to bear the attack without any defense... even if it is the God of Sword, one could not have resisted without receiving any

injuries.” the old man said, is faced filled with surprise.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 57

Heavenly Star Chapter 57: Flame of Anger: Burn the Entire Eight Desolation

“Then... what kind of person would possess such great power which cannot be detected by any of you?” Long Yin asked.

“Not unless... that person’s power is one level higher than ours and is deliberately hiding his strength.” the old man said, suddenly his face changed and he remarked in a surprised tone: “Ye Family’s young master was able to fully endure the flame, his is a power that we cannot see and we cannot even feel its presence. Don’t tell me he has... he has God level power!? This...”

“No!” Long Yin shook his head, his eyes full of vitality as he started at the stage: “He is very young, and possessing such strength to defeat Lin Xiao who is already a gifted genius. It’s already impossible for him to have God level powers, otherwise he would not previously use the kind of method he used to defeat Hua Zhentian and would also unlikely make this bet with Lin Yan. Elders, what kind of method would enable a person to hide his breath? Is there a way to make a person fearless of fire?”

“This... In my ninety years of existence I have never heard of it... perhaps it exists but we cannot say for sure.”

“Of course, it’s impossible for a person to naturally possess this kind of amazing powers!” Long Yin said.

“I heard Clan Head Lin is regarded as the greatest fire wizard of Tian Long Nation, don’t tell me that he can only throw the kind of funny flame that can’t even hurt a single strand of hair? Oh, hehe... excuse my rudeness, my words are too extreme. Please don’t put my word into your heart and please be generous Clan Head Lin. Since you are the greatest fire wizard in Tian Long, then

your powers must be able to shake the world and scare the supernatural beings. You must have shown mercy to younger generations like mine, I'm really so grateful, but I hope Clan Head Lin will take it more seriously. Don't make any tricks that even a three-year-old would not think of doing. Please do not forget Head Lin, if you lose, you must call me grandpa three times. I don't mind if I have another grandchild, but being a grandpa without getting married, what would people say..."

"Shut up!!" Lin Yan went violent as though hovering between a life and death situation and wishing he could tear him up into pieces. After all these years, there wasn't anyone who didn't praise him, respect him, fawn over him and never has anyone dared humiliate him before. However, this time, it wasn't just because it was done by a young man but also because it was in front of all the aristocrats of the Tian Long Nation. At this very moment, under the influence of violent rage, Lin's rage lead to a motivation to kill. The apprehension and consideration he once had was fully engulfed and consumed by his anger.

TL: To hover between life and death - the idiom used here was A Buddha being born, another Buddha ascended to heaven.

With open eyes flaming in red, he shouted loudly, his whole body immediately ignited in raging fire... the color of the flame shifted to a shade of blue, which was even scarier than the red and scarlet flames. At the same time, a heat that was extreme and hard to bear momentarily shrouded the entire audience, causing suffocation and even producing excruciating pain - as though one were being burned alive.

"This Clan Head Lin's most powerful skill: Forbidden Fire -- Burn the Entire Eight Desolation! Oh no!!" Howled Elder Li who was seated beside Long Yin.

Long Yin abruptly stood up, pointing at Lin Yan and shouted: "Stop it! Stop your actions at once, are planning to burn alive all the people here including myself!?"

Upon hearing Long Yin's cry, Lin Yan blocked his ears and didn't heed the words, both his eyes stared firmly at Ye Wuchen -- he could lose, because if he lost, there will yet another humiliation waiting for him! Accumulating the power of his entire body, most of his senses had been sealed off. Even if he had heard

Long Yin's voice, it was now too late because once started, it was impossible to stop. If anyone tried to stop it by force, that person would have burned himself alive and have died as a consequence.

The blue flame in his body constantly expanded - that burning hot sensation became more and more dreadful and the frightened shouts that became more chaotic could be heard echoing through the entire arena. However, the surface under Lin Yan's feet was not burned, but instead it slowly subsided - indeed it seemed to be melting away!

Ye Wuchen's posture was still calm and unruffled. In the midst of the chaos, he was the closest to Lin Yan, but he didn't feel any scorching heat, only a kind of warmth.

There was an obvious disturbance erupting in the competition area, a group of people situated near the stage even started to cover their heads while leaving the area, making their own way to retreat. At this time, two yellow shadows leapt out, landing separately at both the left and right side of the stage. They both shouted and waved their hands, and suddenly, two streams of air as vast as the ocean were dispatched from the left and the right side, fusing together in middle. With its tremendous power, an opaque barrier was formed, blocking out the scorching heat.

The temperature outside the stage quickly returned to its normal state. The disturbance settled down. The crowd originally came to attend this event just to witness some young talent, but quite unexpectedly because of the appearance of just one person it suddenly became a series of twists and turns eventually reaching this pinnacle where the two in front of them were each showing their true powers.

Long Yin sat down with a gloomy face, a bit enraged, but looking at Ye Wuchen he discovered an expression still as normal as before - his heart was amazed.

Ye Wei and Ye Nu already had a huge shift in the color of their faces because the two people had offered protection - soon it will be certainly followed by Lin Yan's universally devastating attack. Even if Ye Wuchen's composure remained calm - he still could not keep from trembling from within with fear. This was not imagination nor game -- that Lin Yan had lost his rationality to the flames of his

anger and use this kind of terrifying attack against a young man -- what's more is that the target is Ye family's one and only son!!

By the time Lin Yan had accumulated his powers, everything was too late. Even if they wanted to interfere it was impossible to approach. The two individuals risked themselves to rescue all the people, but they have blocked Ye Wuchen and Lin Yan, permanently sealing off their escape route.

Lin Yan's body disappeared in the midst of that blue flame, but this time, the blue flame finally exploded. The entire competition hall was immediately covered by the blue flame, turning it into a dreadful sea of blue flame. At the same time - its range continuously expanded, almost breaking through the barrier set by the two protectors.

Seeing Ye Wuchen submerge completely in the sea of flame, the competition hall burst out in a cry of surprise. Wang Wenshu's eyes immediately turned white and then she collapsed. Ye Wei responded in time, quickly helping her. Acting hastily he pinched her philtrum fiercely until she swung wide awake.

Note: Philtrum is an acupuncture point - the vertical groove between the base of the nose and the border of the upper lip.

"Chen-er... what happened to Chen-er!" Wang Wenshu struggled to get up. Ye Wei said promptly: "Shu-er, believe in Chen-er, he will be alright. Haven't you seen his fearless expression a while ago - it's nothing. It will be alright.

He was comforting his wife just as much as he was comforting himself and his father, Ye Nu, whose body was indistinctly trembling.

The sea of flame still flaring up - the sound of surprised cries rose and fell in succession. Some of them were without experience in martial skills nor enchantments. Even those young men and ladies who rarely left their homes were having doubts as to whether they were dreaming -- this so-called power of sky level masters... is this really considered within human capability?

If they only knew that Lin Yan had compressed the range of his power to its smallest form. This Burn the Entire Eight Desolation was enough to extend up to a hundred meters wide, and people will surely be engulfed in fear.

Desperately searching through the sea of flames - where could she find her

own son. Once again, Wang Wenshu's eyes turned white and her body collapsed.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 58

“Daddy... I’m scared. Is he already...”

“Clever daughter, don’t say anything. Please don’t say anything.” Hua Zhentian opened his eyes widely and fixated his eyes to look into the stage that was submerged in a sea of flames. That very short moment of focused and concentrated expression was as though he were looking at a naked woman with only bubbles covering her body.

Li and Lao - the two elders were sweating as though they were rainclouds, but once the sweat evaporated through the scorching heat, their clothes didn’t have the slightest evidence of moisture. Even though there was a barrier, the heat still hit their face, and they still needed to exert effort to protect their clothing else their clothes would have burned to pieces - revealing their bodies in front of all the people and ruining the reputation they took a lifetime to build.

This kind of fire even a Heaven Level master would not dare directly touch. That young master of Ye might already have been burnt to ashes, or...

The blue flame burned for a total of more than ten seconds, but finally there was indication that it was subsiding. The pressure had decreased and the two protectors heaved a sigh of relief simultaneously. Then what happened next caused the two earnest elders to almost let their eyes jump out of their sockets from surprise.

As the blue flames slowly dropped, two shadows appeared at the same time. The first one was Lin Yan’s whose body was still burning in blue flames, the other was... Ye Wuchen who happened to be yawning. He stayed within the blue flame, yet his body didn’t incur any wounds and his expression did not betray any fear, and it seemed he even had an expression of wishing to continue on. It seemed as though he resented the duration of the fires for being so short that he didn’t even have a chance to express any pain.

“Why was it extinguished so fast? Hey! What a huge letdown.” Ye Wuchen muttered in a low voice. The voice reached the ears of the two protectors and almost made them fall apart.

At that moment, the expressions on the people’s faces were of extreme wonder. Some opened their mouth, but forgot to scream, some rubbed their eyes with all their might as they couldn’t believe what they had witness. Some even secretly clutched their necks, testing whether they were just dreaming.

The word ‘genius’ did not seem sufficient enough to describe this person; this time he was practically a monster... devil!

When the fire was completely extinguished, they witnessed another surprising scene. The stage which was originally one meter tall had completely disappeared... not only did it disappear, but the area had obviously descended. That jade fan which had fallen to the ground and the sword had both disappeared without a trace. They didn’t even leave any marks... all were incinerated into ashes.

After such terrible flame, he was still safe and sound and his clothes did not get burned by even a bit.

Ye Wei almost jumped in excitement. He patted the back of his wife, and with a blameful face he said: “See, I said we must believe in Chen-er, this time we are relieved. Our Chen-er (son) is not the Chen-er from before. He worships the God of Sword as his master, maybe he will become a minor God himself.”

Wang Wenshu only nodded her head, speechless after being pleasantly surprised.

Ye Nu abruptly turned around and firmly slapped Lin Kuang’s shoulder, followed by a few more slaps, he said laughing: “Hahahaha! Elder Lin, you people from Lin family are indeed not that simple. Burning that kind of flame but still not even burning a single strand of my grandson’s hair, bravo, bravo ah! Hahahaha!”

Lin Kuang’s complexion was ashen, he couldn’t even conceal the surprised look of his face.

“Daddy, he’s actually...”

“Good fellow! Good fellow! Somebody I admire this much has never shown up before... Today I have really fallen head first for this fellow. Since he will not be able to become my son-in-law, then at least we might be sworn brothers!” Hua Zhentian once again interrupted his daughter, clicking his tongue non-stop.

Hua Shuirou jumped with fright, saying urgently: “How is this possible. He is very young, how can he become sworn brother with daddy.”

“Who said young people cannot be sworn brothers with your dad. Even if those old men kneel before me to become my sworn brothers, I wouldn’t do it.”

Hua Shuirou behaved and didn’t say anything further. She knew when her father’s tough temperament came up, even a hundred bulls wouldn’t be able to drag him out.

The two protectors pulled back, almost suffering from heat exhaustion. The blue flame in Lin Yan’s body was finally extinguished. But both of his eyes were spiritless, his body slightly trembled. This was the aftermath of not only using up all his magic power but also experiencing inconsolable shock.

“Impossible... this is impossible...” he mumbled in a low voice as if it were a dream while looking at Ye Wuchen who was without even the slightest of injuries.

Long Yin stood up and said with an angry face: “Head Lin, because of your personal spite you even used this trick called the Flame of the Eight Desolation, and you didn’t even consider the life of the people and my own!”

Thousands of angry gazes shot at Lin Yan. Thinking of the terrible heat wave, there was still lingering fear inside their hearts.

“Please don’t be angry Your Majesty. He had already compressed the power of Flame of Eight Desolation to a minimum range, or else the whole surrounding would be in sea of flames, even we two wouldn’t be able to bring Your Majesty out. President Lin already relaxed a bit when exhibiting his Flame of Eight Desolation because he knew we were here to protect. He didn’t have any intention to harm Your Majesty.” Protector Li said half rising out of his chair. He clearly wasn’t planning to exonerate on behalf of Lin Yan, but because if the emperor had taken one step further, Lin Yan might only have gotten further enraged.

Long Yin let out a cold snort, sat back, then said in a low voice said: “Then this matter is settled!”

Long Yin was definitely not a very lenient person, wishing he could just tear the retarded Lin Yan into pieces. Lin Yan was usually boastful and hot tempered, looking down upon people, but this time his anger was provoked repeatedly, and under this rage he would seem to do crazy things. But Heaven Level masters can be forgiven, better to go with the flow as they should not be provoked. Once provoked, the power of a Heaven Level master could easily bring out disasters. Lin Yan could continue to be enraged because of his impulsive personality, moreover the Lin family was present to back him up.

Lin Yan pretended not to hear Long Yin’s voice and still foolishly stared at Ye Wuchen. He couldn’t believe his own eyes. Ye Wuchen quite enjoyed his facial expression right now, smiling while extending out three fingers: “President Lin, according to the bet, you need to call me grandpa three times. His Majesty and all the people here are witnesses. Alright, obedient grandson, you can now call me out.”

The pupil of Lin Yan’s eye momentarily enlarged, he opened his eyes wide, shaking while slowly lifting his arm, a finger pointed towards Ye Wuchen, but in his heart the humiliation and fury made him feel as though he wanted to burn all his internal organs to pieces.

Ye Wuchen sneered at him. Depleted of magic powers, rapid fury striking at his heart, losing his dignity to the greatest of extent, even getting berated by the emperor like that...

Ye Wuchen extended out three finger then took them back one by one, unhurriedly saying them gently: “three... two... one... “

“One” being said, Lin Yan’s eyes both turned white. The world seemed to be spinning in front of his eyes, and then directly he collapsed onto the ground unconscious.

The Lin family head master’s brother, one who held a position in the Lin Family not lower than that of Lin Kuang, one who was Head of Tian Long’s imperial education institute and one that held the title of Tian Long Nation’s number one fire wizard - yet just like that he collapsed in front of Ye’s young master.

Lin Xiao had been fully defeated by Ye family's Wuchen. Then Lin Yan was also defeated in an even more miserable manner. After this day, news of this event would spread across the city, and the Lin family will never be able to lift their heads in front of the Ye family again.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 59

“Second brother!”

“Second uncle!”

Two sorrowful voices sounded amidst the chaos, Lin Kuang dashed forward to lift up Lin Yan. His face was ashen as he looked up at Ye Wuchen saying: “Young child of Ye, you have gone too far!”

“Too far?” Ye Wuchen said in a puzzled face, he said: “Master Lin, I cannot understand what you mean, a while ago who was the one who volunteered to compete against me. Who planned to kill me without considering the safety of His Majesty and all the people here... From beginning until the end I didn’t fight back nor flip any of my fingers, then you’re saying I’m the one who had gone too far? Master Lin, I would like to ask you boldly -- are you blind?”

To be able to scold Lin Family like this in public.. Besides Ye Wuchen, no other person could do the same or even dare. Even those experienced and knowledgeable aristocrats were dumbstruck.

There was indeed nothing wrong with calling him blind.

Seeing the situation turn rigid, Long Yin finally opened his mouth to say: “General Lin, Clan Head Lin used up all his strength. If it’s not too hard, please bring him down to rest.”

Any person with a discerning eye would be able to see, depletion of power was just a secondary reason. When he fainted, the primary reason was that the anger had lead to a heart attack, and he also used it to walk away from the humiliation of his failure.

The first to suffer such humiliation, and in the hands of a younger generation of the Ye family, Lin Zhan couldn’t easily give up. If they just walked away with this, the Lin family would not just lose their respect, but for the rest of eternity

they will never be able to lift their faces in front of the Ye family again. He pointed to Ye Wuchen and said in a hateful voice: “But Your Majesty, this young son from the Ye family indeed forced my second uncle to call him... He was the first one to hurt my son (Xiao-er), and then to humiliate my second uncle like this. Insulting us Lin family, how can I agree to this!”

“Hoho, Master Lin, this event was not only provoked by you Lin family, but when me and Head Lin made the bet and Lin didn’t even oppose, you Lin family didn’t even advise against it. His Majesty and the people here and the people here can prove it. This time, I, Ye Wuchen wins honorably then you’re saying that I humiliated your Lin family... that’s extremely ridiculous. As it turns out, the majestic Lin family is an untrustworthy and shameless group of people. I once respected you as the Master of Lin, but now... your second uncle still needs to call me grandpa. They can prove it. I will then regard you as my great grandson. How about that?”

“You!!”

“Great father, please don’t be angry.”

A clear and sonorous voice sounded, and all of a sudden, the owner of that voice soared gracefully through the air and landed in front of Lin Zhan who went to heal Lin Xiao of his wounds. The long scar was still present in the latter’s face, but it was already being taken cared of. Because the cut was only at the surface and because it was a fresh wound, one could simply heal it using light enchantment. After a week or more, the wound will be completely without any scars. This was the reason why the Lin family did not fully react with violent rage when Lin Xiao was injured by Ye Wuchen. If Lin Xiao’s perfect face was really destroyed by Ye Wuchen because of the competition, Lin Xiao would not have easily dropped the issue.

Together with Lin Zhan, they lifted up Lin Yan. Lin Xiao calmly said: “Father superior, for this matter our second grandpa is wrong in the first place. I, your child, being injured is due to my lack of skills and we could not blame Young Master Ye. I would Great Father to leave with second grandpa.”

Lin Xiao said those words as though he were putting his own prestige in the line, but this caused people to nod their heads in agreeance. Being broad-

mindful at his young age, Lin Xiao was sure enough he was respected by the Tian Long Nation as the number one rising talent, his achievement in the future might probably exceed his father's.

Lin Zhan strongly suppressed his anger, nodding his head at Lin Xiao and then left with Lin Yan without saying any word. Intensely proud of his elder son at the same time trusting and understanding him, he knew Lin Xiao already had his own way of thinking.

When he was leaving, Lin Xiao clearly saw his meaningful glance... that look made him want to redeem the Lin Family's reputation by all means within the same day.

Silently standing at a distance, this Young Master of Ye who had caused him disdain within contempt at this moment brought mountainous pressure on him. In the past, everywhere he went, he was the more dazzling person and was the target of everyone's flattery. But today, while standing side by side Ye Wuchen.... He could feel it in people's eyes that the latter's brilliant rays had overshadowed his own.

"Young Master Ye, my father and second grandpa's words might have sounded irritable, if they had offended you, please be lenient. Be understanding on their part as elders and do not take them seriously. In addition, I'm giving this shameless request hoping you can take back your bet. After all, my second grandpa is from the older generation, all his life he valued reputation more than his own life. It's really difficult for him to accept that his reputation is ruined. Even if he has so many discomforts, if you treat him this way it may be too much for him. So I'm earnestly requesting Young Master Ye to take back his words, we Lin Family will surely compensate you in other ways.

Lin Xiao's words were reasonable and fair, and the tone was also sincere. Outsiders might think that if Ye Wuchen didn't agree and take the honor because of his past incident with Lin Yan, this kind of bet would be going too far.

Ye Wuchen somehow felt helpless when he said: "Master Lin what you said is right, I really don't want to disrespect Clan Head Lin and very much wanted to take back the bet. However, me and Head Lin's bet has been witness by His Majesty, the emperor, and all the people present here. If we really dropped the

bet at this point, wouldn't it mean that we're playing tricks on the emperor and all the superiors here. This kind of thing I will never do. Hay... in the future, I will do my best to keep away from Head Lin, not only to save Head Lin from embarrassment but also to avoid the awkward moments. People will probably forget this incident after a while.

He went through this explanation with a face of mercy, but any person would easily figure out that he only meant two words -- no way! Moreover, he even included the emperor and all the superiors from the imperial families as well as the officials, sealing off Lin Yan's way to reason out further he explained in a confident and generous posture, as though letting the opposing side take the better bargain. Lin Xiao was unable to retort and he more likely needed to thank him with gritted teeth...

"If that's the case... then I'll thank you Young Master Ye." Lin Xiao Said, forcing a smile. Second grandpa lost the bet to him, which meant it was compulsory to call Ye Wuchen grandpa. Then it was evident that generations of Lin Family will be his grandchildren, even great grandchildren, or great great grandchildren...

"Don't mention it. This is what I must do." Ye Wuchen said generously.

Lin Xiao: "..."

After the exchange of words, Lin Xiao still couldn't get the upperhand, but instead dropped downwards. Seated in the side of the audience, Lin Kuang was so greatly angered that his mustache was shaking continuously. Ye Nu's heart was feeling rejuvenated, even asking Ye Wei and Wang Wenshu not to say anything further, and not to interfere. It was all under control of Ye Wuchen, and the Ye family would take full responsibility if disaster were to happen... After all, Ye and Lin family had never been friends.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 60

Lin Xiao said facing Long Yin, "Your Majesty, this competition should have ended a long time ago, but Lin Xiao would just like to shamelessly request some of Your Majesty's and the audience's time, and make a request."

"How is your wound?" Long Yin asked instead in a concerned tone.

Lin Xiao said with a grateful face: "Thank you for your concern Your Majesty, it is just a flesh wound, nothing serious. It will heal completely after a few days."

"Then I feel relieved. What is your request, might as well be forward with it."

"Yes!" Lin Xiao answered in a respectful manner then said, "I, Lin Xiao, for a long time have been a confident master of pen and sword. I am respected as Tian Long's most gifted scholar and Tian Long's best talent. But these are meaningless titles. Thinking myself the greatest among my generation, consequently has made me arrogant, immeasurably proud, but also lonesome. Today, after competing with Young Master Ye, I realized that there is always someone greater and more powerful than me. Before, I was ignorant and narrow-minded. Now, I am both ashamed and secretly delighted, seeing the others go hunting, one is excited by the thrill of the hunt. Young Master Ye not only has extraordinary skill, but also has incomparable wisdom, with sharp words and superior martial skills as well as great literary talent. In martial arts, I have been completely defeated, so I would like to compete in literary skills. I hope Your Majesty and Young Master Ye would agree."

TL: Seeing the others go hunting, one is excited by the thrill of the hunt - one gets inspired by seeing others practice their craft/do what they love

After speaking, his eyes looked brightly at Ye WuChen, his expression implying provocation.

Suddenly there was an exchange of whispered conversations. Who among the

Tian Long Nation does not know of Lin Xiao's "Tian Long Number One Gifted Scholar" title? Even though his martial skills has reached great heights among his peers, considering Tian Long Nation's myriad of older generation masters, he is only regarded as an above average talent. But his wisdom greatly surpasses his martial skills, so much so that a number of great scholars from the older generations conceded their defeat in front of him, proclaiming that they have not witnessed such talent in their whole life and that there is definitely no other person like him. Whether the four arts (zither, Go, calligraphy, painting), verse, songs, or poetic essays, all of them he has highly perfected. His skill level simply reached an unimaginable degree of talent.

Obviously, he was using his highly regarded talents to save the face of the entire Lin family. Could the Young Master of the Ye family meet him head-on? In front of His Majesty and the people, declining Lin Xiao's invitation for challenge would mean victory for Lin family by default. If he accepted the challenge... would there be any hope of victory for the Young Master of Ye?

Long Yin nodded his head, "Two great talents testing their skills against each other would be marvelous to beyond beyond comparison. Even I am itching to get on with it. How can I not permit it. Everybody is aware of Lin Xiao's talents, and Wuchen's skills might also be out of the ordinary. Have you come to a decision, Wuchen?"

Ye Wuchen considered carefully for a little bit, then said in a helpless manner. "Since Your Majesty is expectant, I shall accept the literary challenge of Master Lin."

Judging by his expression and tone, it looks like the challenge was accepted not because of lack of better option, but because...of the emperor's eagerness. He appeared to have no interest in the challenge.

After giving his consent, the atmosphere around them became more enthusiastic. After all, an interesting spectacle was about to begin. Majority of the audience were excited to personally witness the great talent of Lin Xiao.

"Master Lin, how would you like to compete?" Ye Wuchen asked.

"I would like to know where Young Master Ye's expertise lies" Lin Xiao asked in return, with a moderate tone, yet anyone could hear the conceited implication

of this tone. He really had full confidence in his own talent. Not only among his generation, but even among the entire Tian Long Nation. He believed it would be difficult to find another person his own equal.

“I’ll follow as you wish. Since you are the one who suggested the literary challenge, you should be the one to decide.” Ye Wuchen countered the air of arrogance by standing his ground. A lesser man would refuse to give his competition any sort of advantage. If one intends to win, at least let their opponent be sincerely convinced to concede without any complaint.

“If that is the case, then let us allow His Majesty to make the decision?”

Ye Wuchen nodded, expressing his consent.

Lin Xiao turned around and said, “In order to be fair, Lin Xiao would like to boldly request His Majesty to host the competition between the two of us. Verse, songs, poetic essays, or the four arts (zither, Go, calligraphy, painting), are all acceptable!”

“Hoho! This was my intention. I will decide your competition. Literary challenge is different from martial skills challenges, numerous factors are involved. A single challenge couldn’t simply determine the winner and loser. I will give you three stages of competition, the one who wins two stages is the winner. Is that acceptable?” Long Yin said laughing, showing great interest in the competition to follow.

“As Your Majesty commands.” Ye Wuchen and Lin Xiao said at the same time. At this time, they both had the same unusual thought --- two stages would be enough. It will not likely proceed to the third stage.

“OK!” Long Yin nodded, slightly knitting his brows, thinking deeply for a moment and said, “My original plan after witnessing this competition was to go to the lakeside of the West City for a tour, then make a painting there as a passionate pastime. I happen to have brought two complete set of painting tools. Since this is the case, your first stage of competition is painting!”

Long Yin clapped his hands. The two attendants seated behind him immediately stood, each of them holding a very huge painting board made of sandalwood as well as different kinds of tools. They proceeded towards Ye Wuchen and Lin Xiao, raised the painting board, spread across the painting

paper, painting brush and all kinds of inks, then left them to the two gentlemen before stepping down and retreating to their seats.

Painting in public...The people extended their necks, patiently waiting. Their thoughts secretly praising the emperor for having the forethought of bringing painting tools in his journey.

“This... this can’t be right, Chen-er had been sickly since he was small. He has never learned painting.” Wang Wenshu once again got anxious, she never cared about competitions, but she could not bear seeing her precious son lose his reputation in front of so many people.

Ye Shuiyao wanted to say something but halted. Fixing her gaze on Ye Wuchen, waiting for him to reveal his true colors. Today, she was once again trying to understand her brother, the one who she knew since birth.

“Don’t worry. No matter how crushing his defeat will become, after today, his fame will surely spread across Tian Long Nation! How’s that for defeat. We of the Ye family do not need those conventional poetry and essay anyway.” Ye Wei said confidently, his face bore no signs of being anxious but instead showed pride.

“You said it right.” Ye Nu also nodded. He evidently believed that Ye Wuchen was not even the least bit well-matched with Lin Xiao for literary competition. But, so what? Allowing Lin Xiao to take initiative suggesting literary competition clearly means that they’ve been pressured to rely on this last resort to regain their reputation. For Ye Nu, who had been fighting in the blood-soaked battlefield for many years, he looked down upon those scholars who had been nesting in their homes, reciting poems and essays. Heavenly Star was a continent that highly respected martial skills.

“The competition has not even started yet, and you’re already trying to absolve your grandson. If that’s the case, why don’t you admit defeat beforehand, isn’t that better?” Lin Kuang sneered at him.

“Your second brother is my grandson’s grandson, which also makes you my grandson’s grandson. When the elder is speaking, the younger generations have no right to interrupt.” Ye Nu snorted coldly.

“You!” Lin Kuang was furious. As he was about to stand up to argue, but he recalled the current situation. He forcibly suppressed his anger and refused to

look at Ye Nu.

“There’s no limit on the content of the painting; you can paint whatever you like. But the time will be just for a quarter of an hour! After a quarter, whether you’ve completed or not, you must stop painting.” Long Yin said.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 61

A quarter hour!? Seeing the square, meter long painting board left the audience completely amazed. For someone to complete such a large painting, moreover Ye Wuchen, who had no knowledge on painting. But even Lin Xiao, who was blessed with such talent in painting required great effort to accomplish one.

Both of them didn't even make any objection, but instead responded respectfully. When each stood in front of their respective painting boards, which were supported by large wooden frames, their faces were equally calm. The serene expression on Ye Wuchen caused Lin Xiao to be more vigilant. Yet he believes that even if Ye Wuchen truly had such exquisite painting skills, he still could not be matched.

"Then, you may now begin. After a quarter of an hour, the winner will be decided by those present here. Elder Li, please begin the countdown."

"Yes!"

When Long Yin lowered his voice, the whole audience went silent. Many pairs of eyes quietly watched the center of the stage which had been destroyed by the flames. None of them dared to make a sound, fearing they would startle the two men.

Lin Xiao gently closed his eyes, hand grasping the brush over the paper, hovering inches above. He seemed to be visualizing the picture inside his mind beforehand. But Ye Wuchen inclined his body, fixing his gaze on Lin Xiao, looking at him with interest. Not having any intention to start himself, he appeared to be observing how Lin Xiao would paint.

Everyone could see clearly, some with disappointment, that the Young Master of Ye decided to give up. This competition will solely focus on the performance of Young Master Lin.

Finally, after approximately a minute, Lin Xiao opened his eyes. His brush connecting with the paper, his right hand moving rapidly across the paper. It was almost impossible to keep track of the movement of his hands due to its incredible speed, and one could only see moving shadows.

This time Lin Xiao had a concentrated facial expression, eyes not glancing sideways but directly fixed onto the painting board. Ignoring the stares from audience and the abnormal gaze of Ye Wuchen, he entered a state wherein his eyes only saw the painting scroll and nothing else.

Another half a minute passed, he suddenly closed his eyes again. Still moving his hand, swapping out brushes and ink midway, never a moment of mistake nor pause.

“Daddy, he even closed his eyes while painting! How is he doing it?” Hua Shuirou asked in a low voice.

“How am I to know? Even in my free time I wouldn’t even dream of doing something this bothersome.”

Hua Shuirou regretted the moment she spoke, because painting notwithstanding, her daddy was not the most literate or cultured.

The green bird on her shoulder let out a soft cry of resentment. Hua Shuirou cupped it in her hands, soothing it while saying: “Ching-er please behave, after a few while, we can go home. I’ll give you whatever you want to eat.”

To paint with eyes closed...Ye Wuchen furrowed his brows. Apparently this “Tian Long Number One Gifted Scholar” is a well deserved title.

He remembered in the beginning of his world, there were few people who could paint while closing their eyes, but for someone to reach this extent, was unheard of --- of course, himself being the exception. To attain this level of skill, one had to blend his heart into a subtle painting place, achieving the picture in his central point. This way, even if one’s eyes were closed, one’s hands could freely paint the picture in their heart. But to be able to reach this phase, no ordinary person could even hope to attain such an unimaginably difficult level.

Everyone had been dumbstruck. Closing his eyes in spite of everything, his current state was enough to make people exclaim in astonishment. What more

amazement would the outcome provide .

Time passed by little by little, Ye Wuchen had yet to move his brush and was still staring blankly at Lin Xiao's hand movements. That originally clear white paper already has some portrayal of sky and white clouds, willow tree in riverside, and also the place where Long Yin had long been wishing to visit.

Based on his speed, a quarter hour wasn't really necessary, even ten minutes would suffice, Ye Wuchen thought.

Seems like this young master of Ye had really given up. The audience has this same thought once more. It's really not surprising that, while facing this extremely brilliant painting talent of Lin Xiao, the opponent would lose all their courage to move their brushes. He might as well concede in a neat and tidy manner.

Sure enough as Ye Wuchen had expected, just as the clock struck ten minutes, Lin Xiao made one final stroke, opened his eyes, and laid down his brush. He didn't even look at his painting, instead looking at the direction of Ye Wuchen who was still gazing at him, the corner of his mouth turned up in a smile.

Judging by his blank paper, he realized his win; moreover, it was a complete victory.

"Your Majesty, Lin Xiao is already done, please have a look." Lin Xiao said as he stepped aside to present his recently accomplished painting for the audience to view.

Immediately, exclams of admiration sounded from the audience.

Azure sky, sprinkled with a few white clouds. Beneath the sky situated a clear lake, the light emitting from the lake water was clear and crystalline. Fish puffed out bubbles. A boat sailing. On the lakeside, a willow tree hung low, on one of its branches a cicada cried joyously. Below the tree showed a young woman leaning against it, her face showing the happiness of being enchanted by the beauty of the lakeside scenery. On the ground, was a mess of willow branches and leaves, some dried up and yellow.

A very ordinary kind of painting, its image did not contain any special meaning, but the incomparably exquisite painting skills caused the people to be delighted

without exception, some exclaimed with great admiration.

“Your Majesty, doesn’t Mr. Lin’s painting look exactly the same as the place Your Majesty has intended to go? It’s practically an exact copy.” an attendant behind Long Yin exclaimed.

“That’s right! Lin Xiao knows my thoughts very well. Great! Great painting! It’s indeed a great painting!” Long Yin exclaimed loudly, not the least bit stingy at all in his words of praise.

Lin Xiao personally rotated the frame that held up his painting slowly, enabling the people in the audience to get a clear view, the surprised voices sounded along with the movement of the painting scroll. The exclamations said it all.

Even Ye Wei and Wang Wenshu could not help but admit that the painting skills of Lin Xiao has really reached great heights.

“This painting will be called Clear Water Lakeside, it is an ordinary scenery painting. A moment ago Lin Xiao had heard Your Majesty wish to visit the Clear Water Lake to preserve the memory in his thoughts. It inspired me to do this. Lin Xiao’s humble talent and shallow learning might receive ridicule from his poor performance.” Lin Xiao said, greeting his surroundings with courtesy.

“What do you all feel about this painting?” Long Yin asked. His heavy, dignified voice penetrated through the whole area.

“Great! This painting makes a person feel as if he is actually in that place, with absolutely no flaws. I have been painting for many decades, believing that there’s always a limit in a person’s capability, but for today there’s something I really need to say, and that is ‘I’m convinced’!”

“To be able to make such unique painting in a very short time, is really quite a feat.”

“This painting is multiple times better than the one that Master Lin made few days ago in another competition. Apparently Master Lin still had restrained some of his talents at that time.”

“To portray a painting to this extent by just using a simple scenery image, he is deserving of his title of “Tian Long Number One Gifted Scholar”, What an eye opener.”

“For Lin Xiao to have such high level of painting skills, truly it’s rare.”

Heavenly Star - Chapter 62

-A+

Voices exclaiming their admiration across the hall continued on. Even though Lin Xiao's facial expression was calm, his eyebrows revealed how pleased he was. For this painting, he did not hold back the slightest bit of his skill. Bare in mind that the simpler the painting, the more it is able to reflect a person's painting skills.

Long Yin nodded his head contentedly, then voiced out and asked, "Wuchen of Ye, what do you think about this painting?"

The crowd quieted down, all the gazes were fixed on him, waiting for his "step down gracefully" speech..

Ye Wuchen's eyes flatly swept across Clear Water Lakeside at once, then said: "Not bad...but if master Lin only had this level of talent, then he cannot even compare to me."

Putting forth this kind of extremely arrogant words stupefied all who were present, even the expression on Long Yin's face appeared to be astonished for quite a long time. Sounds of confusion erupted from the crowd, some criticizing, some reacted with disdain, some sneering. None of them showed any signs of expectation. Based on their thoughts, Ye Wuchen's arrogant and pretentious words were only to safeguard his reputation. A man dressed up like a high scholar even step forward and yelled, "How dare you insult such astonishing work, how shameful!!"

Ye Wuchen glanced at that person and said, "If this painting is the so-called astonishing work in your point of view, then that shows that you've never seen a genuinely great painting. This painting, in my opinion, regardless of painting skills

or scenery, only deserves to be called a rough and excessive piece of art!"

These words are no doubt was even more arrogant than the previous comment, even more ruthlessly mocking Lin Xiao. Lin Xiao's face turned green, then momentarily restored his tranquility and calmly said, "My painting certainly does not look pleasing to your magical eye, I'm requesting young master Ye to please give advice and counsel."

"I'm flattered, since Master Lin sincerely asked for guidance, then I'll provide some."

Lin Xiao's facial muscle twitched a little bit. The people's eyes grew wide, observing how this arrogant young master Ye will give his advice and comments.

Ye Wuchen approached in front of the Clear Water Lakeside painting board, inclined his eyes and asked, "I dare to ask if master Lin has been to Clear Water Lake before?"

"Of course I have."

"Then this painting depicts the scenery of the Clear Water Lakeside from which season?"

"Autumn"

"Is that so? Then...where is the autumn wind?"

"...Autumn wind?"

Ye Wuchen shook his head disappointedly: "Did you consider this in your painting? It seems that the picture is lifeless and dull with no trace of lively movement. The place in the painting is worn out to a pitiful condition. It must be borne in mind that for the lakeside willow tree, a lake without wind is stagnant, and a willow without wind is a dead willow. The wonderful lakeside cool breeze is not even present in this painting, even just a tiny bit of its reflection. In the end, it is just rough and excessive work."

Before Lin Xiao could answer, the previous scholar yelled again, "You say it so simply! The graceful autumn wind cannot be seen, and also cannot be touched. How could you paint it. If you have the ability to do so, why don't you show us!"

Lin Xiao also nodded smiling, "That being said, master Ye, please show us how

to do your lakeside cool breeze.”

Ye Wuchen smiled indifferently, saying, “Then watch carefully!”

Ye Wuchen scooped up a painting brush, lightly dipped it in the ink, then traced some strips of the inclined willow branch. Deliberately decorating them with fluttering willow leaves.

“The so-called ‘Willow leaves on the willow branch sprouts on the west but faces the east’, this is not a painting style for a true willow. While unable to depict actual wind on paper, one relies on the willow branches to demonstrate, this is using the willow to describe the wind, the wind simply cannot be seen, but the wind blowing on the willow tree is clear!”

(Author’s Note: This seven character quatrain comes from Jiang Ti’s Accomplished Dash Painting Willow and Swallow)

Grinding the brush once more, the focus point of the paint brush shifted to portray the surface of the lake, showing several faint traces of moving water ripples.

“This is using the water to depict the wind. Without wind there are no ripples. Using the ripples to show the cool breeze’s direction and intensity, master Lin does not even know this common fact?”

“.....”

Lastly, Ye Wuchen’s paint brush aimed at the woman below the tree. Lightly swaying the brush, he stoked some strands of fluttering hair. He then stopped the paint brush and turned around.

“Traces of hair are similar to the traces of willow leaves, both can be used to describe the cool breeze. Clearly there are many things that can be used to describe the wind, but Master Lin painted such a lifeless picture, what an affront.” He lightly shook his head, with a sighing face.

The scene momentarily went totally silent, shocked into speechlessness. Ye Wuchen’s brush moved rapidly with no less skill than Lin Xiao. Furthermore, with just a few strokes, lasting only a few seconds, a huge difference occurred in an instant that changed the mood of the painting. This time by looking at that painting, people could clearly have the feeling that they were present in that

image. Seemingly watching the wind brush through the willow tree, water rippling, even imagining the feeling of a cool breeze brushing through their face, bringing waves of refreshing wind.

Shock, incomparable shock. With just a very few strokes, a unique painting transformed into one of higher level. Through this painting Clear Water Lakeside, the audience began to realize what Ye Wuchen meant by the “painting condition” before.

The middle aged scholar faced the painting blankly. Feeling ashamed, he cupped his fist in the other hand to salute and said respectfully, “I’m ashamed. I offer my respect!”

“Great! Although the strokes were few, it is truly a brush that brings life to the painting. What I am really convinced of is that your artistic attainments have already reached this far. I am reassured!!” Long Yin exclaimed emotionally.

Not only other people, but the entirety of the Ye family, except Ye Shuiyao, Ye Nu, Ye Wei, Wang Wenshu all had identical astonished looks. No one expected Ye Wuchen to give them such a big surprise without prior indication. Ye Wei whispered to himself, “Don’t tell me that this God of Sword not only reached perfection on sword skills, but also on painting skills?”

Long Yin continued. “This Clear Water Lakeside painting completed by these two outstanding talents; I will surely treasure it personally. Although due to Lin Xiao’s negligence he wasn’t able to portray the cool breeze, his painting skills can be regarded as almost reaching perfection, everybody can clearly see it. On the other hand, Wuchen through sketching in light shades, can greatly raise the condition of the painting, truly a wonder!”

“Your Majesty!” Ye Wuchen turned around, then glanced at the complicated expression of Lin Xiao, said, “I couldn’t agree blindly at a statement made by Your Majesty. Although Master Lin’s painting skill are exquisite, there’s still a big difference between our skills.”

“This...” Long Yin wrinkled his brows, somewhat speechless.

“I dare to ask Master Lin, what is the peak of one’s painting skills?” Ye Wuchen asked.

“The peak of painting skills, naturally, is to be able to have exactly the same portrayal of the real thing, not possessing the slightest difference!” Lin Xiao answered.

“Oh...” Ye Wuchen walked in front of the painting, observed for a while, then using the tip of the brush pointed to the green worm on a branch of the willow tree: “Then may I ask, does this little worm feel satisfied about his image on the painting?”

Lin Xiao swept his gaze, then said with an air of arrogance, “Although I have but humble talents, regarding painting skills I have unquestionable qualification. Though this green worm was used as a decoration, it’s as realistic as a real worm could possibly be.”

“Oh, really?” Ye Wuchen smiled disapprovingly, then dipped the brush in the green ink. He moved the tip of the brush to painted a similar size green worm on another willow branch, then he moved aside, the corners of his mouth revealed a smile. He did not comment further.

Since the green worm was newly painted, the ink had yet to dry. It slightly reflected light under the sunlight and from a distance it appeared to wiggle. Before anyone could react, a warbling sound echoed, followed by the sweet voice of a young lady. “Xiao Qing!”

A green shadow quickly flew across until it reached the center. It dove down from the sky, long sharp beak pecking heavily on the surface of the Clear Water Lakeside painting.

A small voice sounded and the painting board swayed for a moment, then the green feathered bird fell to the ground from its violent impulse, struggling to flap its wings. Ye Wuchen picked it up, quietly infusing some of his powers, easily restoring its minor injury.

The Clear Water Lakeside painting now had a small hole pecked into it. The location of that hole was exactly the spot where Ye Wuchen drew his green worm. While he was gently caressing this docile green bird, he said unhurriedly, “If Master Lin’s painting skills had already reached a realistic level, then what would we call mine?”

Heavenly Star - Chapter 63

“This... this....is really unbelievable!”

“My God, I simply don’t believe my eyes.”

“It’s really unimaginable! Up until now, I finally realized what genuine painting skills are.”

“To be able to make a bird believe that it is the real thing, that’s what we call genuine painting skills!”

“I want to be an apprentice, I want to be his apprentice!”

“That’s enough, he is the young master of the Ye family. How can you, the head of a small academy, be his apprentice; moreover, you are too old.”

.....

Various exclamations and inconceivable shouting voices could be heard. The enthusiasm at this moment far exceeded the praise Lin Xiao received beforehand. This kind of painting skill is truly brilliant. They have neither seen nor heard anything of this calibre before.

Looking at the hole, Lin Xiao realised he had been defeated...Ye Wuchen had only made use of a few seconds to effortlessly draw a green worm. And yet his all-out effort, which consumed more than ten minutes worth of work was defeated so thoroughly. His previous self-confidence and arrogance had been smashed into pieces. What he said a while ago about his “domineering qualifications in painting skills”, has now come back to hit him ruthlessly like a slap on the face.

But since the green bird had pecked out a hole, it was now equivalent to a completely destroyed painting. He couldn’t help but secretly sigh while thinking: if this was planned by Ye Wuchen beforehand, then his shrewdness was really formidable.

What he couldn't believe was that his thoughts actually had much truth in it. Ye Wuchen had such a meticulous mind. Paying attention to Hua Shuirou, how could he not notice the green feathered bird or detected its hungry state. As a result, during the time Lin Xiao finished painting Clear Water Lakeside, Ye Wuchen had already sentenced this painting to its death penalty.

Completed by two people? Did it even qualify!? Ruined! How could the emperor include it to his collection? Collection my ass! With a hole pecked through it, let's see if you still want to keep it.

"Respect, respect to highest point. Whether on painting skills or painting condition, I, Lin Xiao, concede my defeat!" Lin Xiao said letting out a sigh.

Ye Wuchen nodded, peacefully accepting it. Then he commented in a serious tone. "Okay. If that's the case your foundation is not bad, just put some more effort to it, perhaps you might reach master level painting in the future."

Lin Xiao: "....."

"Great! Great! Your painting prowess even surpasses that of Tian Long's Number One Gifted Scholar and causing him to step down gracefully, it seems that I had underestimated you. But..." He glanced at the blank painting board at Ye Wuchen's side. "Based on the rules that I've set, a quarter hour to determine winner, you didn't even make anything. As a result, for the first stage, you still lose."

Anyone could see that Lin Xiao had been defeated, even he admitted defeat. Ye Wuchen had been defeated Lin Xiao by using the green worm he drew in the painting of Lin Xiao. But what the emperor said was the truth, if he were to judge the participant based on their own individual painting on the board, who dared contradict him?

So whoever the emperor wants to win will take the victory. Judging by this situation, the emperor still favored the Lin family. Ye Wuchen's defeat was official even though the results were contradictory.

"Wait a moment." Ye Wuchen waved his hand, saying: "Based on Your Majesty's rules, the time limit is a quarter hour, and upon my calculation, it has yet to pass."

Behind Long Yin a yellow clothed attendant said, “Your Majesty, young master Ye is correct. Right now, there is still a minute remaining before it reaches a quarter hour mark.”

“Oh? So what are you saying? You would like to use the remaining minute to complete it?” Long Yin questioned.

“Yes!”

“Good! Now let me be enlightened once again, let’s see how you can complete this size of a painting in just within a minute.” Long Yin who had been distracted, his face now full of expectation.

Ye Wuchen turned around, raised both hands. “Go find your owner.”

The green feathered bird circled around him for two rounds, then reluctantly parted with him and returned to Hua Shuirou. Although it was a base animal, it still had some intelligence, able to remember kindness and hatred. A moment ago when it incurred a slight injury from the impact , but got healed by Ye Wuchen in an instant, and this kindness was immediately engraved within its memory.

His gaze followed the movement of the green feathered bird, seemingly ignorant to the passing of time. Seeing Hua Shuirou cupping the bird in both her hands, he faintly smiled towards her, causing the girl to immediately lower her head in a rush, refusing to lift her head for quite a while.

Ye Wuchen stepped in front of the painting board, picking up a brush dipped with ink, then closed his eyes and, clearing his mind, directly brandished the brush to spread the ink. Brushes were switched, inks were dipped into, brushes swept, flowing smoothly. The movements of his hands obviously surpassed that of Lin Xiao’s. It was impossible to make out the white moving streaks that were his arms, which dazzled the crowd. Although they already knew his artistic attainment greatly surpassed that of Lin Xiao’s, the audience still couldn’t help but feel amazed by this spectacle. This kind of hand movement not only belonged to one with extremely high painting skills, but also required a very high cultivation of the martial art skills.

Ye Wuchen stepped to the front, his stance was flawless, and the unconstrained movement of his hands were like traces of the wind making

people unable to see clearly what he was painting at the moment. The only exception was Lin Xiao who was standing right beside him, but his vision wasn't focused on the painting, but was rather at the hands of Ye Wuchen. The content of the painting was not that important to him anymore, judging by the technique and the speed, he already knew he had been hopelessly defeated.

Generally a person who practiced martial skills only focused on the martial aspect, the same applied to a literary person. If one held both skills, one tended to focus on one thing and lose sight of the other, then fail on both. But Lin Xiao had relied on his extremely high gifted martial and literary skills to reach the peak level among his peers, both skills complementing each other. The speed of his painting made people speechless. If it wasn't for his powers and martial skills, it would have been impossible for him to become someone who had reached the peak level of painting skills. And because of this, Lin Xiao was under the impression that his painting capacity were incomparable.

Why did he take the initiative and suggest a competition with Ye Wuchen? During the martial skills competition, he won two times in a row after all. While at first he had the popular opinion of the people backing his number one rank, in the end he was sorely defeated by Ye Wuchen. Up to this moment, he still couldn't swallow the fact that he had been defeated, even as he bore the scar on his own face. Succeeding him, Hu Zhentian who tried to help him win back his reputation was also defeated. Finally, with the exclusion of the God of Sword, his unparalleled second grandpa Lin Yan also lost his bet to him, battered and exhausted.. Losing with unfathomable mystery, yet was not only defeated but also lost his reputation - being laughed at as a joke and even suffering an extraordinary shame and humiliation that could not be refuted.

The Lin family had never sunk so low. In just a very short duration and in front of the emperor and the aristocrats, they were defeated under the hands of a single opponent: the only son of the Ye family.

So, in order to regain their reputation, he was made to voluntarily suggest a literary competition against someone who was younger than he was. Originally, he wanted to break his spirits and regain his family's reputation, but he hadn't expected to add another layer of glory for his opponent, nor become the means with which his opponent achieved it.

He regretted it. Before, he had full confidence and high ambitions - now these were smashed without a trace. He even lost his confidence for the next stage of competition.

How could Ye Wuchen have such great power...he is even younger than me! And more than ten years ago, there had been a rumor that he was a monotonous "incurable sickly young master". Could it be that Ye family deliberately concealed the truth? Then what was their purpose in doing so? Why would they suddenly exposed it all today. If there was any truth to the rumors, having disappeared for a year only to resurface... then within that year, what mysteriously shocking adventures must he have experienced? Could it be that he was perhaps someone else altogether?

Glancing at the distant expressions of the Ye family, he secretly denied the extremely outrageous notion.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 64

Time passed second by second, and the scene was unusually silent. No one dared to make noise for fear of interrupting. The whole crowd grew expectant for an exceptional piece of work.

In a minute's time, what could he achieve? At first, people secretly jeered at him for being arrogant, but after several surprises, they realized little by little that he had the skill to back up his own arrogance. And this time he even so boldly declared being able to complete within one minute --- perhaps he really could!

The once dazzling Lin Xiao was now being cast out of the limelight, and hardly anybody was paying attention to him right now.

Ye Wuchen had calculated his maneuvers in silence. Before coming to this world, his painting skills were not inferior to that of the Lin Xiao's. At that time he was only on the cusp of what could be called the first level of his power, but as of then it was still lacking. Right now, Wuchen was at the second level of his power but he didn't reveal the limits of his speed. Just this would be enough to shock the world and cause people to be stupefied.

Finally, as everybody expected, when the time came to an end, he ended the motion of his brush and it lay still on his hand. At exactly the same time, the yellow clothed attendant who had been holding a weird looking timer yelled. "The quarter hour is up."

Finishing exactly at the right moment revealed the amazing precision of his sense of time. Only a few people in the world had the same capability.

Ye Wuchen threw away all the painting tools in his hands, and then stepped aside to put up his completed work and present it to the audience. What he was met with were not sounds of surprise but that of total silence. People at the scene mostly looks at each other with faces filled with confusion.

Anyone would have been able to identify the painting as one that depicted a lotus. A twin blossomed pinkish white lotus - one facing obliquely to the left, the other to the right. The twin buds were not yet in bloom, but the twin lotus did not bring out an aesthetic feeling, but instead reflected the coarseness of its heavy color. Below the flower, the green stem and leaves were painted with exquisite delicacy, brimming with lifelike realism. Between traces of the strokes, one could almost vaguely smell the fresh fragrance. Below the lotus stem was water, but the water was painted very oddly. Because there was no outline on the water's surface, it depicted either an impossibly deep or vaguely shallow pool. Light green colored speckles dotted the water surface along with a slanted reflect of the same twin buds - all painted in the same manner as one would see in real life.

At a quick glance, this painting had nothing special about it. Examining carefully, one could notice that it was just an extremely ordinary piece that contained many faulty strokes.

No words came out of Lin Xiao, his gaze was affixed at the twin lotus flower painting. He believed that prior to this, Ye Wuchen already had an attitude full of self-confidence. It was unlikely of him to use this kind of painting as a joke, certainly he will have his own mysterious principles applied to this painting. But no matter how he observed the painting down to the smallest details, he still couldn't find anything magical about it. No matter how he looked and from every possible angle, this painting still could be considered as a masterpiece compared to Lin Xiao's Clear Water Lakeside, the difference was more than a hundred and eight thousand miles.

"This painting is called Twin Lotus Flower on One Stalk, an improvised work. Other works with the same suber are certainly innumerable. But I humbly consider it sufficient enough to be included among the well-known pieces." Ye Wuchen said smiling.

Long Yin knitted his brows and looked for quite a long time and turned. "My beloved officer Wen, what do you think about this painting?"

"This..." a white haired old man, exceeding sixty years of age, dressed formally as a government official said respectfully, "I'm an old man who has a pair of dull eyes and cannot point out any marvelous points on this work. Based on my

perception, this is just an inelegant piece of work.”

His evaluation caused majority of the people to simultaneously nod their heads. The remaining group of people still attempted to search for the marvelous principles behind it. Based on Ye Wuchen's previously excellent performance, it was impossible for him to make such inferior work. Moreover, judging by his fresh and unstressed facial expression, it does not seem like he was disappointed with himself.

“Beloved Officer He, how about your opinion?”

“My opinion is exactly the same as that of Officer Wen’s.”

“How is compared to Lin Xiao's painting?”

“Unable to compare.”

Long Yin nodded his head and looked at Ye Wuchen. “This is also what I think. Wuchen, although your painting skill is highly perfected, this time you painted such a trifling matter, so for this stage of competition it's...”

“Wait a moment, Your Majesty. Wuchen has something to say.” Ye Wuchen said with a gesture.

“Oh? You have something to say? Might it be that there's really a mysterious principle behind it?” Long Yin asked with a face full of expectation, but seemingly unsurprised.

“If there's no mysterious principle, how could I present it.” Ye Wuchen smiled faintly, then turned around and said in a clear voice, “I would like to ask you elders, brothers and sisters if any one of you have brought wine?”

People looked at each other, one by one they shook their heads. Who would bring wine to this kind of occasion? But suddenly, thunder-like voice echoed. “I brought some. Catch it, young fellow!”

As though afraid of Ye Wuchen’s failure, Hua Zhentian removed the wine sack hanging from his waist and directly threw it at Ye Wuchen's direction. Hua Zhentian loves wine as though it were his life. In his lifetime he valued two things — First was his daughter, and second was wine. This wine sack made by Hua Shuirou was indispensable. Once emptied it is refilled itself again immediately.

Ye Wuchen extended his hands to catch it, and said smiling, "Thanks for the wine, Elder Hua, some other day I'll invite you to drink to your heart's content.

Originally, this was just an answer out of courtesy, but Hua Zhentian took it seriously and shouted. "Great! Young fellow, you better keep your word! If you dare not drink with me to our heart's content, then you are not a man! Also, elder or not, it is awkward hearing it, you must call me Old Hua!"

"Then... that's a deal!" Ye Wuchen answered, ignoring the latter part of his statement. He already noticed before that there was something hanging from his waist and believed that it was contained wine.

For those who don't know the character of Hua Zhentian would have been stunned upon hearing the conversation between them two. This Hua Zhentian previously wanted to teach Ye Wuchen a lesson for hurting Lin Xiao, but in turn he had been tricked using "despicable" methods into agreeing to three conditions. Not only did he not get angry, but was laughing upon his defeat. This time he was too enthusiastic, based on his tone. It's almost as though he wanted Ye Wuchen to become one of his sworn brothers that very second.

Maybe Hua Zhentian just had a very odd personality of enjoying getting deceived?

"Everybody, please have a look."

Ye Wuchen removed the lid, the fragrance of wine spread all over the place. He lifted his head and took one long gulp before facing the painting and spurring out a mouthful. Liquid mist evenly sprinkled all over, dampening the entire painting. He lifted his head and swallowed another gulp, doing the same thing three times after which he finally stepped aside, his face was adorned with a smile.

Nobody had been able to understand his extremely strange actions. One by one they shifted their attention to the painting. Then, several people opened their mouths wide, their jaws almost falling to the ground from surprise. Many people unwittingly dropped what they were holding. An old scholar's glasses fell to the ground with a loud "bang".

Not only was the crowd surprised, but the once calm and composed Lin Xiao opened his eyes so wide his eyeballs almost bulged out. As for Long Yin, his face

revealed a rare unresponsiveness that hadn't been seen in many years.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 65

Heavenly Star Chapter 65: Literary Competition - Twin Lotus Flower on One Stalk Part 3

On the painting, the buds of the twin lotus flower slowly began to unfold their petals - blooming like a rare miracle and gradually revealing the small yellow buds within. The “reflection” beneath also bloomed, both sides altering in coordination. The people could not help but think that it was a real reflection. The lotus flower was the only magical element of the piece - the formerly coarse water surface and its light green dots spread out through the watermarks becoming evenly distributed and transforming into a perfect light green water surface. The watermarks faintly reflected the sunlight and from a distance the water surface looked clear and crystalline, as though one were facing a clear pond in real life.

What caused people the most awe was truly the reflection of the lotus. Since the water surface was the last to be painted and through the reflection of sunlight, it became intensely similar to a real reflection. Inverted images in the water was one of the most difficult scopes in painting because the creative concept was really difficult to grasp, but in this case, the painting was really made to perfection.

When the twin lotus buds bloomed to its full, they burst open into two cupped pinkish white lotus flowers frozen in time. Had it been early or late by just a bit, it would not have achieved such perfection. Everybody was still caught up by such a mesmerizing image and have yet to come back from their trance.

Could this really be just a painting? No... They preferred to believe that this was a real twin lotus flower, and that under it was the actual reflective lighting of light green pond water. Before all this, who could have witnessed the entirety of a lotus flower transforming in its bloom? No one.... But today they have clearly

witnessed this incredible wonder within this painting.

This cannot really be called a painting.

Looking at their reactions, Ye Wuchen smiled his soft smile. The principle behind the blooming flower and water surface display was actually all very simple. Using water to cause the ink to spread before adding alcohol could turn a painting volatile in order to accomplish this process. Although the principle was obvious, the actual execution of this at this quality was close to impossible. Whether on the amount of ink used, the places that needed to be touched by the ink, the well-proportioned distribution of liquid wine, and the timing... a tiny mistake at any one of these points would cause severe damage to the end image.

Ye Wuchen stepped in front of the painting board, blocking his magical Twin Lotus Flowers on One Stalk, snapping the people back into reality after their witnessing the spectacular miracle.

“Wonderful! Wonderful!” This time, Long Yin’s voice, within just two words, expressed his clear and decided amazement.

“After all these years of my existence, only now do I truly know what a real painting is...”

“This... This indeed is a magical work! If I did not witness it first hand, I wouldn’t really have believed that this kind of wonderful art really exists.”

“Hubby! We came to Tian Long City at just the right time. In this world, such spectacles are quite rare. I fear no one would ever believe us when we tell of it though.”

“Unexpected, really unexpected. I already had one foot in the grave. I’m really lucky to be able to even witness this before I close my eyes for my final breath. God really treats me right... Even though I could die at any time, I really have no more regrets!”

.....

.....

Lin Xiao swore that he had never heard this much praise and such copious

amounts of exaggerated surprise in his entire lifetime. Even the sum of the praises he received in his life thus far could not compare to the praises Ye Wuchen received at this very moment. No matter how good his painting was, it was still man-made. But this Twin Lotus Flowers on One Stalk, he must admit, it was truly a piece of art made by a God. No mortal could manage to create such a tremendous work of art.

The difference, in spite of everything, was huge. No one could possibly surpass it. Lin Xiao took a deep breath; he could hardly calm down his thoughts. Being accustomed to popularity and praise - his position had been at its very peak. For the first time, he now had the perspective of a person looking up, but the person he looked up towards was positioned as high as the highest peaks, which were enshrouded in heavenly clouds, while he, stood at the foot of the mountain, not even able to see its shadow even with his head lifted upwards.

This time, a very old voice sounded. "Everybody please listen to what I'm going to say."

The owner of this voice had great influence. Just a few spoken words could cause the noisy atmosphere to gradually calm down. It was from an old man who was quietly seated at the back row. His age appeared to be beyond sixty, and he wore a green suit stretching from head to toe. He had kind brows and pleasant eyes with a body that seemed immortal. Every person who gazed at him had a very distinct look of respect, even Long Yin's expression reflected his deep and proper respect.

Ye Wuchen immediately guessed the identity of this old man.

"Hoho, young man. This old man takes responsibility for lacking scholarly knowledge. I never reached this path in my own painting techniques, but today I have really witness a work of art that could have only been made by a god. This kind of art ought to be possessed only by the heavens, and does not belong to this mortal world..."

People who knew this old man would know that for someone to have received such praise from him truly rare, and that Ye Wuchen might have been the first.

And yet... he was truly fully deserving of such praise.

But the way he addressed Ye Wuchen was...

“...Please excuse this old man’s presumptuous manner, but I would like to boldly ask. Which God was your teacher?” The Old Man slowly asked, his mouth slowly turning into a gentle smile.

This question attracted the curiosity of all the people, including the Ye family. All their gazes fixed onto Ye Wuchen.

Ye Wuchen let out a mysterious smile. “Old gentleman, you are correct. My teacher is indeed a God. My teacher has no intention of hiding his identity, so there’s no harm in telling you.”

The people lifted their brows. They originally thought that this kind of skilled disciple could only have learned from a God-like teacher, yet such abled masters always hid their identity, even refusing to let people know of their existence, so they did not have high hopes. However, unexpectedly, Ye Wuchen had no intention of hiding this, even going so far as revealing this to the entire audience.

“My teacher is...the owner of this ring.” Ye Wuchen took out the God of Sword’s ring then put it on the finger of his left hand lifting it high for everybody to clearly see. While the corners of his mouth secretly pulled into a smile while thinking: Grandpa Chu, let me use your fame once more. This ring you gave me has really made everything easy for me in my road to Tian Long Nation.

He was greatly indebted to Chu Jingtian. The old man had unconsciously made Wuchen owe him on purpose.

That cunning old fox.

The people barely managed to react when the two servant beside Long Yin yelled. “The God of Sword’s Ring!!”

These words spread across this entire public square like a thunderclap, triggering a flare of loud reactions.

“The God of Sword’s Ring! It’s the ring he wore back in the days!”

“That’s right. That’s really the Ring of the God of Sword... the heavens have taken pity on me for allowing me to witness the God of Sword’s Ring.”

“The young master of Ye... he really is the descendant of the God of Sword! No wonder he has such amazing martial skills and talent at such a young age. As it turns out, this was the reason!”

“God of Sword is from the God Generation, to have such disciples is not impossible.”

“God of Sword’s Ring... he’s indeed his disciple! He was rumored to have disappeared for more than a year. As it turns out, he was being sheltered by the legendary God of Sword; the Ye family is truly blessed by the heavens.”

Translated by: Fatty_Uncle

Edited by: patrick_the_father_of_dragons

Heavenly Star - Chapter 66

Heavenly Star Chapter 66: Literary Competition - Emperor Teacher Wang Bo

Great exclamations of surprise, admiration and excitement... majority of the old men and middle aged men stood up from their own seats to excitedly look upon the God of Sword's Ring within Ye Wuchen's hand. Their faces were filled with respect and enthusiasm. For most of the younger people, the existence of gods were but a mere legend, an imaginary entity, and for them, the name "God of Sword" was an integral component of the belief. This was previously one of the core pillars of belief of the the entire Tian Long nation.

At this moment, Long Yin stood up, his facial expressions ecstatic and filled with respect. He then said in a loud voice, "I didn't expect that Wuchen really was the disciple of the God of Sword. For someone to obtain this ring means that he is the one and only descendant of the God of Sword. This descendant has now finally appeared before us; he who is the son of the Ye family of Tian Long City! This means that the God of Sword has not forgotten us. This is truly worthy of a celebration, worthy of a celebration! Hahahaha!"

Long Yin laughed loudly, spreading his infectious laughter across the entire area. Yes, the God of Sword did not forget them at all, moreover he had selected the son of the Ye family as his disciple. This signifies that the next God of Sword would be just like Feng Chao Yan of the Gale Nation, who provide his lifelong loyalty and services to the Tian Long Nation and who became the guardian deity of the Tian Long Nation. At this moment, their view of Ye Wuchen completely changed. Since he was the descendant of the God of Sword, then he will surely be the next God of Sword!

"Wuchen, I believe that your achievements in the future will surely surpass those of your teacher's!" Long Yin said seriously.

Surpassing the God of Sword, is there any other higher praise than this!? Judging by his prior performance, no one would dare say that the evaluation was excessive. Even the people of the Lin family, whose faces turned greener and greener each time, subconsciously held the same thoughts in their minds.

“Your Majesty has unfairly praised me” Ye Wuchen said smiling.

“Hoho, so that’s how it is. Your teacher has already taken you to the path to be a God. Apparently, not only with his sword, but also with the four arts have you already entered the same path. We couldn’t have imagined, no wonder!” The old man stroked his white beard and continued on. “Young man, I would like to shamelessly make a request. Can you give this Twin Lotus Flower on One Stalk to me? I might remove all the other ordinary and unworthy arts from my wall in order to leave this one alone, and I will certainly observe it daily with three sittings to comprehend the real concept of painting.”

Ye Wuchen was with not much choice. This painting didn’t really have any so-called “God-like” features, it clearly depended heavily upon the extremely clever support from the theory of physics. Furthermore, the watermarks had already dried up and it could now be considered a good painting. There couldn’t be a repeat of the breathtaking performance he had just displayed a few moments back. Also, this painting had its own purpose.

He said respectfully, “Old mister, this painting already has an owner. In fact, it doesn’t suit you. If you do not mind, I will personally visit you at your home some other day and paint three paintings. So please do not take any offense, old mister.”

“Are you serious? Good, good!” the old man nodded gladly, then he had second thoughts for a moment before laughing loudly. “Hahahaha, so that’s it. I was carried away by my excitement seeing this marvellous work that I forgot the underlying meaning of twin lotus flowers. I almost made myself a laughing stock.”

These words sparked a moment of realization for the people. Merged stem twin lotus flowers is a metaphor for a mutually devoted couple. He had also said

that this painting already had its owner...Could it be that his heart already belongs to another person? Thinking this, many single women frowned with sadness. Appearance, personality traits, past history, martial skills, talent, a great teacher, none of them were inaccessible for him, he is without any flaws. This kind of a wonderful man, one wouldn't be able to meet a second one in within one's entire lifetime. What kind of woman would be able to fortunately capture him.

"Chen-er, don't call him old mister, he is your maternal grandfather!"

This loud voice belonged to none other than Wang Wen Shu. This time she was grinning from ear to ear. In the eyes of a mother, her own son was always the best. Because her son had previously failed to live up to expectations, every time people mentioned her son, her facial expression never light up, and instead she felt a deep sense of failure. But today, after the astonishing performance of Ye Wuchen, her heart had felt the joy and pride that no words could describe. This time, she could really feel proud of being a mother because her son was truly this excellent, as though he were a bright pearl becoming the dazzling focus of one's eyes, pressing down the brilliant rays of all other persons of the same age.

This old man was actually her father - Emperor Teacher Wang Bo. Seeing them addressing each other as "young man" and "old mister", she hardly knew whether she should laugh or cry. In the end, she could not help but yell out.

"Eh?" Ye Wuchen's expression went stiff, then his face full of surprise.

"Hahahaha!" Wang Bo comfortably laughed out loud, caressing his long beard as he said, "Chen-er, grandpa had heard that when you were rescued by the God of Sword, you had lost your memory and even now you are still not be able to sincerely recognize your close relatives. This is behaviour is natural, and I won't force you to call me grandpa, but you already agreed to make three paintings for me, so you must not back out on this!"

"Uhm, I won't break my promise!" Ye Wuchen answered with a smile.

For all these years, Wang Bo rarely met Ye Wuchen. He occasionally visits the Ye family only to be able to have short chats. He could only shake his head in disappointment upon leaving. But now, he saw a legendary dragon soaring high in the sky. Not everything in this world was permanent. These words especially

applied to his grandson.

People in the crowd who felt confused had a sudden realisation: they felt strange witnessing them address each other this way because of their relationship with each other.

“Okay! This time grandpa is relieved. Chen-er, I’m curious as to which young woman you are going to give this Twin Lotus Flower on One Stalk to.” Wang Bo said smiling, boldly asking the question in public since Ye Wuchen had made this painting in public as well, even revealing that this painting already had an owner. That meant that he had plans to publicly give this painting to someone, and Wang Bo was taking the advantage of the situation to ask this question.

With these words, he caused some of the young ladies to be agitated. Whether sitting or standing, they nervously grabbed the corner or their clothes, both eyes looking around like some flickering lights, anxiously waiting, as if hoping for a huge surprise to drop from the sky.

Ye Wuchen didn’t answer. Instead, he stepped in front of the painting board and carefully rolled up Twin Lotus Flower on One Stalk into a thin roll, covering this magnificent piece of work which caused a lot of exaggerated surprise. Then, picking up the wine sack that Hua Zhentian gave him, he said in a clear voice. “Today if it wasn’t for the Elder Hua’s wine, this kind of painting would be impossible. So, this painting could be considered as our collaborative work. Therefore, it is only proper for Elder Hua to have this painting...”

The people were stunned at once, some even almost threw up blood...The owner of this twin lotus flower painting is actually this rough old aged man. This can’t be...

Translated by: Fatty_Uncle

Edited by: patrick_the_father_of_dragons

Heavenly Star - Chapter 67

“I do believe that Elder Hua is a person who loves wine more than paintings. So,” his gaze switched from the wide-eyed Hua Zhentian to Hua Shuirou beside him. With a gentle gaze and a light smile, distracting her, “I present this painting to young miss Hua Shuirou.”

Hua Shuirou’s whole body trembled, clenching her hands, forgetting to move. Her gaze met with Wuchen’s, and they were now face to face.

All of a sudden the scene went silent. People looked at one another in dismay, not expecting such an outcome. They started to covertly observe Lin Xiao. Everybody from the Tian Long Nation already knew that Hua Shuirou had been promised to Lin Xiao. Their wedding day would be on her sixteenth birthday. The man with such brilliant talent and the woman with such gorgeous beauty, this was what everybody regarded as the perfect couple. That was also what cowed other handsome and talented men who admired Hua Shuirou from having any improper intentions.

But now, the young master of Ye family even dared to give the Twin Lotus Flower on One Stalk painting to the young lady of Hua in front of everybody. Was this not a clear indication that he is digging Lin Xiao into a deeper pit? What kind of man would tolerate this offense?

Two things incited the most hatred in a person. One is for killing one’s father, the other is for taking away one’s wife...What will be the reaction of the young master of the Lin family!?

Although Lin Xiao had yet to say anything, his eyes emitted an innumerable level of anger. No matter how self-restrained or gentle the temperament, if it tarnished a man’s dignity, he will find it difficult to be at peace with himself.

“Young child of Ye, what’s the meaning of this!” Lin Zhan stood up, shouting. Using a painting to secretly express love to his future daughter-in-law in the

presence of Lin family and this number of people no less. Does he not have a shred of respect for the Lin family? This cannot be tolerated. If the members of the Lin family do not stand up for themselves after being ridiculed, then they would surely lose face. Only a fool would fail to grasp underlying meaning of the painting.

“Oh?” Ye Wuchen looked puzzled, then asked in return. “What is the meaning of your words?”

“Hmph!” Lin Kuang exclaimed heavily, wishing violence upon this man. “We Lin and Hua family have made our marriage arrangements. Young miss of Hua family was betrothed to my son Xiao-er six years ago. What is the meaning of you giving this painting as a gift?”

The audience nodded simultaneously, thinking Ye Wuchen should not have committed this act.

“Oh!” Ye Wuchen suddenly realized, but did not deign to look at him, still fixing his gaze on Hua Shuirou, causing her to turn away and hang her head low. He turned around. “I dare to ask if young miss Hua is already a part of Lin family.”

“Of course not right this moment, but in a week’s time she will become part of our Lin family.”

“Since she is still not part of your Lin family, then my giving her this painting is still none of your business.” Ye Wuchen give him a disgusted look.

Lin Zhan become speechless, for a period of time he couldn’t think of anything to retort back.

“I would like to give this Twin Lotus Flower on One Stalk to young miss Hua and not to any person of the Lin family. You have no right to hinder it! How mighty is your Lin family that young miss Hua, who has yet to be married into your family, is subject to your irrational and tyrannical behavior. Even going so far as interfering with her personal affairs. If she is really marries into your family...” Ye Wuchen did not continue further. Instead he exhaled, giving a pitying gaze at Hua Shuirou —purposely in view of Hua Zhentian.

Hua Zhentian disapproved at first, but upon hearing Ye Wuchen's final remarks he suddenly became angry and stood up to shout. "Old man Lin! As the father, I didn't even utter any words. What kind of people are you of the Lin family, meddling in my daughter's affairs! You listen carefully. I, Hua Zhentian, have only this one daughter. Anyone who does not treat her properly will be torn to your bones! If my daughter really likes this painting, even the emperor or gods should get lost!"

To curse both the emperor and the gods in front of the man himself, Hua Zhentian might be the only man who would not lose his life in that process. If any other person were to do so, then Long Yin would surely be mad, but for this instance he just smiled, paying it no mind. He was well aware of the Hua Zhentian's personality. He is very loyal to the imperial family, but his temperament is fierce; he is outspoken and straightforward. Never being restricted by rules, his actions were open and candid, he kept to his word, he loved wine as much as his life, and he was extremely protective.

Lin Zhan couldn't help but to swear profusely...I only care about the reputation of my Lin family, not your goddamn daughter, you brainless impertinent man seems easily moved by a few words!

Hua Zhentian was unaware that the words he used to protect his daughter implied him siding with Ye Wuchen, which only served to give the Lin family a big resounding slap to their face.

Lin Xiao observed the situation. Deciding that this might bring harm to both Hua and Lin family, he promptly broke the silence. "General Hua, father, please don't be angry. A sweet, fair, graceful, and wise lady is always being chased by men. Young miss Hua's beauty is captivating to even the birds and beasts, her admirers are countless. Young master Ye's actions are a commonplace. Even if young miss Hua and I are engaged, she is still not yet a part of Lin family, so everyone still has the right to seek after her. We of the Lin family have absolutely no rights to interfere. In fact, young master Ye just came back after losing his memory, so he might not be aware that young miss Hua was already engaged. There is no need to blame him.

Many people nodded surreptitiously. Lin Xiao's statement not only used Ye Wuchen's memory to cover the embarrassment of the Lin family, but also

showed off his broad-minded attitude which was highly respected by others, making them remark that this son will surely have a bright future.

“Good! Good! You said it right!” Ye Wuchen clapped his hand in approval, then he said beaming at Lin Xiao. “Indeed very remarkable words from a gentleman. Like being born from a successful court academician. Young master Lin deserves to be called a brilliant and capable individual, such wise opinion and high tolerance has earned my utmost respect. Speaking of tolerance, compared to me, the difference is quite huge.”

He then used a voice that can only be heard by Lin Xiao alone. “Such a high degree of forbearance. If I were you, I would really give two big slaps to any person who has real intentions towards the woman that I love.”

Lin Xiao gritted his teeth tensely, whole body slightly shaking.

Even without that remark, any sane person would be able to determine that these words were meant to mock him. If they only heard what Lin Xiao had said, they would feel that Lin Xiao has a very distinctive moral character and certainly bright future. If they had heard Ye Wuchen’s remark... they would think him a coward!

Still showing good will even though his future wife had been treated like this, if not because of cowardice, then what?

However, young master Ye had mentioned “court academician” what was that? One by one the audience asked each other the same question, but nobody knew the answer.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 68

Ye Wuchen grasped the painting, and then asked in a gentle voice. "Young miss Hua, pardon me for asking but would this Twin Lotus Flower on One Stall painting obtain your good graces? A good painting should be in the hands of a beautiful woman. If young miss Hua doesn't mind my inelegant painting skills, please accept it to spare my feelings. If this painting is not able to garner young miss Hua's appreciation, then it has lost its meaning of existence, and it would be fine to burn it.

The people fixed their gaze simultaneously at young miss Hua. Some men even seized the opportunity to unabashedly admire her. The more they looked, the more they saw that she was gentle and beautiful beyond compare. Thinking about Lin Xiao and then Ye Wuchen, their hearts dropped. Whether by appearance, family background, or talent...they would never be able to reach these two. Perhaps only this kind of extraordinary intellectuals can match with such beautiful women. Even those young women seemed to admire her, and some were even jealous. To be admired wholeheartedly by men from Lin and Ye, even to the point of fighting openly and maneuvering covertly just for her.... how could the other females not envy her? For those who loved painting as much as their own lives, their hearts alarmed and trembling with fear. Who cares about the engagement between Lin and Hua family, they only fear that Hua Shuirou would not be agreeable. They would be helpless to do anything if she wished to destroy the one of a kind painting. The feeling was so hard to bear that it was almost felt as if they were getting killed.

"Chen-er, has he fallen for the daughter of Hua family?" Wang Wenshu said softly.

"I think so. The daughter of Hua family is an outstanding beauty, Chen-er falling for her is absolutely normal. Not to mention, Chen-er is not a child anymore." Ye Wei said smiling, having no intention to blame Ye Wuchen for his

actions. But rather...if he can win over the future daughter-in-law of the Lin family and create a bond with Hua family, he could only imagine the livid expressions the Lin family would have. He would surely enjoy it. Besides, Hua Zhentian only has one daughter, and spoils her very much. If anyone married his daughter, it would also mean that they will inherit the entirety of the Hua family. In those days, the Ye family had tried their best efforts to convince Hua Zhentian to let his daughter be betrothed to Wuchen, but was repeatedly rejected. At the time Ye Wuchen had been a good-for-nothing. He was repeatedly mentioned to the Hua family, but when Ye Wuchen had reached the age of sixteen, he still had no marriage proposals from their family. Wang Wenshu had shamelessly taken the initiative to mention the marriage proposal to other aristocrat families, but they had always found an excuse to change the topic or even escape from her presence.

Based on Hua Zhentian's nature of keeping his word, making him cancel the engagement with Lin family was next to impossible. Ye Wei had the same thoughts in his mind.

"The young lady of Hua family is really attractive. If Chen-er really likes her, we should help him with it."

"..." Ye Wei was terrified by his wife's statement, cold sweat started to appear in his forehead.

Ye Shuiyao listened to their conversation in silence. Her gaze fixed at Hua Shuirou, but she could not understand what her heart felt, as though she felt suddenly uncomfortable. For some reason... she did not know.

Hua Shuirou felt her heart beating very fast. This can be considered the first time she was being stared at by so many people all at once, she wished she could escape then and there. After a long while, Hua Zhentian finally said, "Daughter, do you really like this painting? Please say something."

"I...:"

Even though Hua Shuirou had a very delicate nature, her thoughts were not as simple as white paper. She knew that she should be loyal to her future husband, since they were already engaged. Even if she really liked the painting—quite a lot actually—based on this situation she really needed to say no.

In the end she lifted her head, about to speak, but suddenly met Ye Wuchen's eyes. The smile on his face was so gentle, it slowly wiped the nervousness in her heart. His meaningful glance was gentle and deep, as if containing a deadly attractive force pulling her heart and all her attention - it was positively addicting.

On the verge of saying "no" she was suddenly unable to let her voice out. No matter how hard she tried she was not able to say it. And her heart started beating faster and faster...

"Do you want this painting?" He asked one more time, soft and gentle as the wind.

"I... want it."

Ye Wuchen broke into a smile from the corner of his mouth and nodded with satisfaction. A sharp cry broke the silence, the bird on Hua Shuirou's shoulder spread its wings to rise high into the air and flew towards Ye Wuchen. It landed atop his raised left arm, chirping cheerfully. Ye Wuchen rolled up the painting and placed it in its claws. The bird grasped it firmly with both claws, and then with another sharp cry, spread its wings and flew back towards Hua Shuirou, placing it atop her hands.

All eyes widened...Gasps of surprise, envy, denial...it was as if they had rehearsed this scene beforehand. For the green feathered bird to show its emotions and thoughts, this incredible scene played out so naturally, as if it were planned by God. It was as if this bird truly understood their wishes and used itself as a means to link it all together.

Holding the painting in her hands, Hua Shuirou had yet to awaken from her baffled state. Today's events would stay with her for the rest of her lifetime. Up to this moment, she still couldn't believe why she had agreed, perhaps it was the demons and gods at work. She was aware that she was going to say what she meant to say, any hesitation and worry had disappeared without a trace for that specific moment.

The whole Lin family's facial complexions became ashen, their gazes on Hua Shuirou were full of resentment, but Hua Zhentian burst into a loud laughter saying, "I knew my clever daughter would love this painting. Not to mention, even I, a person who doesn't know anything about painting, thought this painting was pretty good. It would be strange if she didn't like it. But what happened to this bird? Could it be that it likes this painting too and couldn't wait to grab it?"

He still wasn't aware that the three words from Hua Shuirou was exactly like giving the Lin family a violent whip using a rod. Hitting them to the point of choking and spitting out blood. In the middle of this situation it was compulsory to restrain oneself in order to help regain the reputation of Lin family. Just as Lin Xiao had mentioned before in a relaxed manner, "... after all she is still not yet a part of the Lin family, so everyone still has the right to seek after her!"

To be slapped straight at his face... he had yet to witness such a resounding slap like this. Lin Xiao originally thought that based on the character of Hua Shuirou, she would most certainly decline it, but to his surprise she accepted it. His heart felt like it was being scooped out by a lot of blades and twitched in pain.

No one had noticed, although Ye Wuchen's face was smiling, his eyes were closed.

When he finally opened his eyes, the sense of dizziness from a few moments ago had disappeared without a trace.

This was one type of the power of the "spirit", categorized as the first element of the ten major orders.

(The ten major orders include seven natural major elements and three major elements of fate. The seven natural elements were: water, fire, wind, thunder, earth, light and darkness. The three major elements of fate are: life, death and spirit.)

Spiritual power is miraculous and very difficult to manifest. It is a kind of the power element which was very difficult to apply and manipulate. Since he had a faint power of "premonition", it would suggest that his spiritual powers were inborn, and he tried to use it a few times before. However, today was the first

formal application, causing Hua Shuirou to shout out what her heart desired, and giving the green feathered bird a spiritual hint.

Applying this power to Hua Shuirou and the green feathered bird who both had no powers had already caused him dizziness, and he almost fainted on the spot. He thought of this with a sigh. Apparently, I must sparingly use this kind of power in the future. If I used it on a person with a little power, it might not only bear no results, but instead bring great harm to myself.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 69

The atmosphere suddenly turned incomparably awkward. Long Yin's booming voice broke the silence, shifting everyone's attention. "Lin Xiao, for this stage of the competition, the winner is Wuchen, do you concede?"

Lin Xiao bow his head and said. "I'm already convinced in heart and by word. I prostrate myself in admiration."

Long Yin nodded. "In that case, let us start the second stage of this competition!" pausing in thought, "Lin Xiao, I heard you always keep a flute by your side since you were a child and that your attainments on the flute have reached perfection. Is this rumour true?"

"Reporting to Your Majesty, this rumour is actually true. My name 'Lin Xiao' has the word 'Xiao', which is the same as 'Xiao' (flute). Since I was born, my fate has already been tied to the flute. When I was a child I loved the flute as I do my life. Everyday I would set my own rules to practice the flute. Anywhere I go, the flute will be by my side, not only to relax my mind, but also serving as my sword in times of crisis. Among all the things I've learned, the flute is what I am best at." as Lin Xiao said this, he pulled out a white jade flute from his sleeves. During this occasion and even prior to the previous competitions he had the flute on his person, proving that the flute indeed did not leave his side.

"Very well. Rumour has it that no one is better at the flute than you. That every time you play, even the birds in the sky or the crawling insects in the ground will gather around and listen. But excluding your family, no one has ever had the opportunity to enjoy your playing. Since you have your flute with you, the second stage will be a flute playing competition! And at the same time, let me also enjoy the so-called real sound of the flute. Are you certain that you can win this?" Long Yin asked.

Long Yin's words were not wrong. Tian Long Nation had an ongoing rumour

that Lin Xiao of Lin family has an attainment in the flute that has reached a supreme realm transcending worldliness and had attained holiness. Its sound is like something from the heavens. If the flute was played on the riverside it shall attract the geese and lure out the fishes. If played from the forest it shall attract different beasts to gather around by his side to linger. People talk about such incredible myth-like rumours, but none of them have actually heard it. Among the people present, excluding the people from the Lin family, nobody else has heard him play. That being the case, people were not only quite expectant, but were also very excited about it. As Lin Xiao had mentioned, among all the things that he had learned, this is where he excelled, and he is unlikely to be a man who is full of empty promises.

Lin Xiao held the flute lightly, gently stroking it as if it were his devoted lover. He said absently, "This flute is called A Dream of Worldly Affairs. It was a memento from my mother, and she loved it dearly. When I was three she had given it to me in her last moments before dying of an illness...This is the only thing she left me. After her death, I had cried for three days and three nights and swore never to abandon this flute."

He relaxed a bit, then held up the white jade flute. "Every time I remember mother, I would play this flute. For seventeen years, I have never missed a day. As the time goes by, my emotions got involved, my thoughts got involved, and two years ago even my heart got involved. It knows my heart, and I also know its heart. For this lifetime...I will never leave it. I haven't challenged anyone to a flute competition before because no one can match me. Bleak sounds from this world could not compare to the sound of my flute nor even deign to play alongside it.

The expression on Lin Xiao's face was of nostalgia and pride. The people did not think that he was exaggerating. His affection to this flute as well as his manipulation of it are known to be far beyond the realm of ordinary people.

"Today, for the sake of my Lin family's reputation, I, Lin Xiao will use this flute to compete." As he began to play, his surroundings began to shift. The sound of

the flute flowed into the air of the cold spring, suddenly like the sea waves pushing forward layer by layer, then like snowflakes swirling wave by wave, to a whirlwind bursting through the canyon, everything changing quickly before dripping through the quiet night sky of the Milky Way...

The sound once again changed its course, turning into a mournful yet touching sound, as if they were hearing the beautiful singing of a young lady. Their hearts slowly reflected a distinct figure. She seemed to be only seven or eight years of age, approaching slowly with graceful steps, but no matter how many steps she took, she did not move from her place.

A warm wind blew and sunlight shone. The sky suddenly erupted flower petals dancing through the wind, the grass under the feet of the young lady began to sprout wildflowers. From the earth, a dark green colour spread throughout the area, dotted with thousands of purples and reds. This is the beauty of the spring.

A cool wind blew as the young lady suddenly transforms into a twenty year old woman. The corners of her mouth curl up into a smile and she starts dancing lightly and gracefully. A scorching sun was up in the sky, all living things prospered, heaven and earth flourished. This is the breath of summer.

A bleak wind blows, the young lady transformed into a middle aged woman, losing her grace as she slowly drifted. She did not sing or dance, only walking forward silently, footsteps calm and unhurried. The earth had dried up, all living things started to ignore the heaven and earth's urge to retain its state, and slowly weakened. This is the depression of the autumn.

Cold winds blow, she is an old woman with temples covered in grizzled hair, she staggered with every step, eyes that were once beautiful now cloudy. The earth had lost its vitality, blanketed by pure white snow, covering what was once full of beauty and hope. Finally, the figure collapsed in the middle of the cold wind covering the body with snow. Her figure can no longer distinguishable. This is the conclusion of the winter.

The sound of flute stopped, freezing the people's thoughts to that last snowy world. That is the final destination of every person. No one can escape the final stage of life.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 70

As the song ended, Lin Xiao slowly lowered the white jade flute, eyes still sealed shut. His expression was depressed and lonely, like he was painfully recalling something from the past. But the audience was still immersed in the lingering sounds of the flute rising in spirals having yet to come to their senses... The sound of the flute, indeed appeared like an illusion emerged in front of their eyes showing the miracles of all living things, and also enabling them to witness the different stages of a human life, from young and immature, to beauty, to maturity, until life's end.

It was as if they were having a dream. From there, they watched themselves pass by each stage of life. That which brought them to dreamland is the boundless magical power of the flute's song.

The people were shocked. If it wasn't for today, they would have carried on thinking that the sound of flute only brought out pleasure to the sense of hearing and would not think that this sound would stir up their heartstrings. Deep in their hearts, it depicted scenes of touching images. Such sound is both magical and incredible, what an extraordinary kind of person to be able to play this kind of sound.

Besides total shock, they could not think of anything else.

A number of people still do not know that it was just a dream, and until this very moment have yet to wake up.

"The name of this tune is similar to the name of the flute, called A Dream of Worldly Affairs, this is the tune that I play everyday. Every time I play it, it reminds me of my deceased mother. The sound of the flute is like her gentle call, making me feel as if she has not left me, but is always here by my side, witnessing every stage of my life." Lin Xiao said softly, the corner of his eyes were wet with tears. This is the first time he played A Dream of Worldly Affairs in front

of a large number of people. He did not pay any mind to their exclamations, not even the least bit of arrogance, as if reactions like these were normal.

His voice was very low, but not enough to wake the people up from their stupor until Long Yin exclaimed his admiration word by word. “Great! What a nice tune A Dream of Worldly Affairs. How great Lin Xiao of Lin family is. I realized only now the true and real sound of a flute, and when man and flute unite as one we receive something that belongs to the heavens rather than the ordinary human world. I have listened to numerous types of wonderful music, but now comparing to A Dream of Worldly Affairs, the music I have heard before were intolerably bland. As you have mentioned before, these worldly sounds are nothing compared to your flute playing. I couldn’t accept it before, but now I am fully convinced. The sound of your flute and Wuchen’s painting skills are indeed not the skills that can be compared side by side with the skills from the secular world. For the Tian Long Nation to have these two is really a blessing from God; may the heavens protect my Tian Long!”

Long Yin’s voice was generous and fierce, hardly concealing his excitement, surprise, appreciation, and gratification. His words had woken up the people and also mirrored their thoughts. For a moment, an uproar resounded throughout the entire stage. The high officials and noble persons who normally don’t talk and smile and are normally very stingy when it comes to words of praise one by one started to praise the sound of the flute with every magnificent and flowery word that they could think of, admiring Lin Xiao. Some felt that their words of praise was still not sufficient, that their flowery words from this world were still not qualified enough to decorate the sound of the flute that belonged to the heavenly world.

Today, they had recognized Ye family’s Wuchen and now, also Lin family’s Lin Xiao — an outstanding talent who can play such heavenly music.

Everybody is convinced that for this stage, Lin Xiao was the winner. They could not think of anything else that can surpass his A Dream of Worldly Affairs, a fine tune that brought everybody to a strange illusion-like place, and that described

the stages of life in a dream like manner. His portrayal of the sorrowful memories of his mother and confused stage of depression in life were fully appreciated by all the people, showing empathy for him.

Among these people, surely including Ye Wuchen himself did not expect that Lin Xiao's artistic attainment on the flute had reached this shocking level.

"It's indeed astonishing!" Ye Wuchen said facing Lin Xiao.

"Flute...is the other half of my life." Lin Xiao answered, his face emotionless.

"Oh? Huh... for me, flute is just a musical instrument, that's all. Does it mean that if you are not able to use the flute, you have lost half of your life?" Ye Wuchen pondered.

"Yes!"

"You must have absolute self-confidence else you wouldn't make light of your life and bet it on this irrelevant competition, more so on a bet that has no payback. Only a fool can do such things or perhaps you think you have an absolute assurance. But I believe..."

Ye Wuchen did not continue. The noises beside his ears still did not break up for a very long time, he heaved a sigh of relief then yelled with a clear voice, "Everybody please listen to me first."

The clear and loud voice had caused them to shake and gradually, calmed themselves down. Their gazes once again focused on Ye Wuchen, awaiting his performance.

Ye Wuchen said smiling. "Master Lin's playing has surely lived up to its reputation and is greatly appreciated by the people. Even I don't have a hundred percent certainty to win over master Lin. But we from Ye family never back out from a fight, so please excuse my shameful acts."

He glanced at the flute in Lin Xiao's hand, then continued. "This flute of Lin Xiao is a remnant of his mother, being treated as his life and never leaving his side. Naturally he won't allow any person to touch it, so this flute I am certainly not allowed to touch. Not to mention, is there any elder or friend here who have brought a flute? Please lend it to me for a short moment, and it will be greatly appreciated."

When his voice dropped, he didn't sweep his gaze across the whole area and instead looked immediately towards Hua Shuirou. With a smiling face, his gentle gaze fixed on her, unmoving for quite a while.

People in the area looked at each other, but nobody was able to pull out a flute. Their purpose of attending this occasion was to witness the competition between young talents. Who would have brought their flute to this place? Moreover, a flute is not like zither which is a stringed musical instrument, it needed to be played using the lips, whether male or female. Who would agree to share his or her flute with someone? It is almost like sharing your chopsticks with some other person; these two acts are essentially not very different. Even if someone brought their flute, it was unlikely for them to present it—of course, except maybe those young ladies who took a liking to him and couldn't wait to get close to him. If a lady gifted a flute to a man, it would have an underlying meaning that they are willing to entrust their future to the man. Those ladies would have agreed a thousand times, but too bad none of them have brought a flute.

Hua Shuirou's heart was beating very fast. Little by little she tried to lift her head, but then she tried to lower her head in the same manner because every time she secretly lifted her head, she was met by a gaze that made her heart suddenly beat faster. She covered her blushing face, whispering to herself, "Did he... discover it?"

For a long while, nobody had been able to provide a flute and the situation became awkward. Then Long Yin knitted his brows. "Does anybody have a flute?"

If there was no flute, then this stage of competition could not continue on. If one had to return to the palace to get a flute, then it would be very time consuming.

Hua Shuirou slowly lifted her head, meeting the gaze of Ye Wuchen. His gaze contained some hidden expectation, and that expression in his eyes spoke to her: Even if some other person lends me theirs, I still wouldn't accept it. I only want yours.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 71

Am I going to give this to him...but this is such a personal object. If I offer it for him to use, people might think...

Still undecided, she felt the demons and gods take hold of her once more, and her voice came out in a low whisper, "I... I have one."

All the gazes darted to Hua Shuirou's direction, most of them amazed yet puzzled. Because for a woman to allow the use of her flute, it could have no other meaning.

Could it be that this young lady of the Hua family was actually...

Ye Wuchen's mouth twitched upward over so slightly, then stepped forward to stand in front of Hua Shuirou. Hua Shuirou was already holding out a short bluish-green flute in her hands, the jade material sparkling delicately in her small white hands.

As Ye Wuchen approached, a heady spinning sensation hits her, causing Hua Shuirou to lower her head, hands trembling as she held up the flute. Ye Wuchen takes it with a smile, his hand lightly brushing against her smooth palm. Hua Shuirou quickly withdraws her hand as if shocked by a current. She kept her hands tightly together between her knees, her face red as this was the first time somebody touched her hands aside from her relatives. She would have a restless night, berating herself for allowing something so improper.

"I am eternally grateful to receive this from such a beautiful woman." Ye Wuchen said smiling as he returned to the stage. As he admired the flute in his hand he said softly, "Green jade is pure and limpid, as gentle and smooth as a woman's skin and able to keep the fragrance of a woman's lips. Forgive me for being rough with it."

His teasing words left the entire audience dumbfounded, Hua Shuirou let out a

small squeak, burying her head deep in her chest, ashamed and wishing for a way to escape.

Lin Xiao's expression changed again and again, ultimately his forced smile had completely disappeared. The one whom he cherished and is engaged to had given a man her own flute in front of everybody... furthermore to the same man who had beaten him in every competition so far. This was the equivalent of stabbing a sharp blade through his heart, causing him to snarl loudly in order to vent out his pain.

“A short flute, are you sure?” Long Yin asked.

Long and short flutes, although played similarly, with regard to quality, the short flute is inferior. It would also be difficult for someone accustomed to a long flute to adapt to a short flute, and vice versa.

Ye Wuchen nodded and smiled. “This tune... Is for myself.”

Playing for himself—Lin Xiao had dedicated the tone to his deceased mother. One played with a long flute, the other a short flute. By paying for his deceased mother, his filial piety had influenced people to some degree. Playing for oneself seemed relatively dull in comparison. Whether it was in the opinion of the audience or the type of flute, Ye Wuchen was clearly at a disadvantage.

Ye Wuchen lightly pressed the flute to his lips, a pleasing scent slowly entered his nostrils. Hua Shuirou covered her face, heat emanated from her in an alarming degree. That is also where she puts her lips, now it's... she couldn't think further. For her who had never been out of her chambers, aside from her own father she has never spent time with another man. She has never broached these topics of love it has become too much for her heart to bear. For her, this kind of “intimate” touch can only be done between a married couple.

Tonight, she would not be able to sleep peacefully.

The audience waited for a while, yet no sound could be heard. Ye Wuchen only stood there silently like a statue. Eventually, he closed his eyes. In an instant, the people felt a change in the energy surrounding him. For the duration of the

silence, a faint depressing emotion generated from the bottom of their hearts. It grew more and more heavy, until the feeling burdened them like heavy iron weights to the point where it was becoming difficult to breathe.

Intense sorrow, much too difficult to bear...

A small sound echoed, feather light, as light as the breeze slowly blowing past. Yet as every note passed through ears, hearts and lips grew quiet...even the whole world was wrapped in silence. No other sound could be heard, only the lingering vestiges of a note long since passed.

And yet another brief note sounded, moving the hearts of all who heard, leaving them trembling in this one peaceful moment.

The tempo gradually accelerated, as did the feeling in their hearts, speeding up until the notes became a heartbreaking melancholic tune. The sound is still very light, as if the touch of a cool breeze will break it, but rang clear all the same. It does not resonate in their ears but in the deepest part of their hearts, it stopped their breaths for fear of disturbing the melody.

A bright and beautiful day, but a weak and miserable wind. A small plant sprouted from the earth. It appears to have accumulated so much happiness, so many hopes. In the middle of warmth, the plant gradually grow, showing off to the world its life and vitality, but the wind... still as miserable as it was. From time to time, the plant would quietly tremble in the center of this wind.

One day, black clouds covered the sky, pitch black and dense containing terrible amounts of pressure, pressed down making it hard to breathe. Finally, a clap of thunder sounded, malevolent lightning slashed through the curtain of clouds, a downpour of heavy rain, a devastating wind blew, heartlessly ravaging the soft and immature plant. Hitting it relentlessly, it did not collapse, still unyieldingly facing the sky, standing its body upright. No matter how the wind howled, how pitiless the rain was, it still clenched tight its jaws because it would not fall.

The people's hearts clenched tightly, aching.

After a night of wind and rain, it became incomparably weak, but it did not fall. Still facing the sky, reveling in its hard won victory.

However, it was a short respite. It continued to mature and grow, until one day, the violent rainstorm returned. It used all its strength to prop up its young and tender body, supporting itself, resisting still...

The corners of Ye Wuchen's eyes grew slightly wet, but that was of no consequence. In a distant memory, a vague childhood memory, he saw his three-year-old self trying to gnash his teeth shut. He exerted too much effort, his gums bled, face distorted, his body trembling violently. That is the kind of suffering he had experienced, the pain that he alone had endured, more painful than being pricked by a thousand knives, ten thousand...But this pain he would endure quietly, he could not let mother know, could not let mother worry, could not fall himself...Because this is the hope that he had been waiting for for a very long time.

Mother...Who are you? Where are you right now? Why am I yearning for you so? But the yearning brings warmth to my heart, the warmth that has caused me to weep.

And where is that hope now? Why am I unable to find it no matter how hard I try?

And to the me at that time, why do you have to endure that kind of pain every month, is it the same kind of pain I had half month ago ---- No! They are not the same, they are different, the pain from the past is much, much deeper.

What kind of past did I have?

Who am I?

Translated by: Fatty_Uncle

Edited by: seriouspotato & patrick_father_of_dragons

Heavenly Star - Chapter 72

Rain stormed heavily, again and again, more and more violent. Each time, the sprout feels like dying, but it stood up again—stubbornly—in the end. It would look up to the sky and howl with laughter, mocking God for being unable to take its life.

Dripping...

The sound of teardrops falling; when did it start? Tears have been falling, forming small streams and flowing with the music. The melancholic tones caused all those who heard it to tremble heavily, inside at first then gradually transforming into several sharp daggers, stabbing mercilessly into the deepest part of their hearts. The pain it caused penetrated to their very soul that even it trembled from the pain.

To have experienced the same kind of desperation and courage of the young and tender soul, of not giving up. Their hearts, more in tune now, resounded strongly with it. If they were to ask themselves, would they be able to bear that pain? They might have chosen death over all the torment, to free themselves from pain. But that young and tender soul endured it again and again, maturing with steadfast tenacity and without thoughts of sharing the burden. Watching his suffering, they began to feel ashamed, the pain they have experienced was nothing as compared to the pain he had endured. And now he was tougher and stronger for it, driving deeper into their shame.

Eventually there came an end to all the pain... Because suddenly it went to sleep, sound and steady. In the middle of the darkness and silence, it lied dormant, for a year... two years.... ten years.

Barely a minute later, the flute played its note. The moment the jade flute left his lips, sorrow flashed through his eyes, but it disappeared in the blink of an eye. In the next second, his face was already full of smiles.

Incomparable silence invaded the scene, even the wind seemed to hide his existence, neither a whistle or blow to be heard. He made no comment on the atmosphere but only stood still, looking at faces filled with tears. Among them, young men and women alike, high-ranking military officials, children, old men with canes, even Hua Zhentian and Emperor Long Yin.

Clap! Clap! Clap! Clap!

Ringling applause broke through the desperate and sorrowful air, and even Long Yin joined in. The applause had rapidly grown in its intensity, mimicking the crashing of waves. Mixed in the uproar were the sound of young women sobbing. Inviting dismay among the imperial bodyguards of the Tian Long Imperial Institute, as well as causing passer-bys to come to a stop and investigate the ruckus.

The applause from the Heavenly Star Continent were unlike those from the modern era of China which were of little value. Only during the moment where their emotions have reached their highest points would they deign to give applause since they use it as a means to release their own emotions. The intensity of their emotions would need to be...like the time that Tian Long Nation had defeated the Gale Nation. Ye Wuchen's astonishing painting skill and Lin Xiao's magnificent flute playing did not even garner such applause. Just this one time, they dedicated that applause to the tune from Ye Wuchen's flute.

Numerous people attempted to stop their tears but were unable and multitudes more clapped their hands while sobbing quietly. They were able to genuinely feel the so-called tune that could touch hearts. However short, this had already caused them to feel desperate and heart wrenching sorrow.

Wang Wenshu fell on Ye Wei in an embrace, her tears made a large wet spot on his chest, she spoke in between tears, "My pitiful Chen-er...his heart must have suffered a great deal. I have failed to be a good mother. In the future... what should I do to make it up to my child..."

Ye Wei slowly patted her back without a word, only lifting his head trying to blink the water away from his eyes. In the battlefield, he'd been seriously injured

numerous times and had his fair share of near death experiences, yet he survived. He had never shed any tears before, even as he watched his comrades fall in front of him. At those times, his heart had felt like it was being cut apart by a knife, but still he did not cry. Ten years ago his mother, the one whom he depended on all his life had died due to sickness. He knelt on the ground for five days without eating or drinking until finally collapsing, from the beginning until the end, he still did not cry. He was the staunch son of the Ye family. He has only ever shed blood throughout his life, never tears.

But today, no matter how hard he tried to restrain himself, drop after drop poured from his eyes and slowly rolled down his face. His heart ached. He never knew how painful heartache could be. Nevertheless the source of his pain was actually from the sound played from a flute, rather than from the person who played the flute. If he had not experienced it first hand, he would never have met with this kind of heartbreaking sorrow.

Chen-er... What have you been through?

Hua Shuirou covered her face, tears falling like raindrops on a pear blossom, even her handkerchief was completely soaked. Looking through her tear stained eyes at the man who held her flute, she had an urge to dash to his side and give him a hug. Even Hua Zhentian beside her was rubbing his eyes, mumbling to himself, "This tune is really quite demonic, really demonic... Fuck it, even I cannot withstand it. I'm losing my mind, it's similar to the time I lost my wife."

In the corner, a trembling body voiced, "Chen-er... Can you tell your grandpa... what is this tune called?"

In the entire area, the only one who remained composed was Ye Wuchen. He answered while smiling. "This performance was impromptu. I have yet to think of a name. Though, it doesn't matter if it has no name, because after playing, I have already forgotten its notes."

For such an astonishing tune to have actually been spontaneous...This really is a very amazing talent. Only the highest of artistic attainments could make it possible. They were surprised once more, surprised in the most extreme way. Perhaps if they combined all the surprises they have ever had before, they still could not compare to that which they experienced today. The original intention

of coming here was to enjoy some competitions, to find some entertainment. But the witnesses today unexpectedly experienced one surprise after another. They worried that this might just be a dream, considering the events still seemed so unreal; that once they woke up, everything would disappear.

Some people from far off places sighed endlessly as they did not attach much excitement in Tian Long City, but as it turns out, coming to Tian Long City was a very wise decision .

“No! This tune actually described the history of Heavenly Star as it has never been done before. Even though you have forgotten, your grandpa has remembered by heart each exact note. Grandpa believes that everybody here will carry the tune in their hearts for as long as they live. Although it is impossible for anyone to come close to your performance, it will surely leave mark for the generations to come. Every flute lover will come to know of its existence as the highest peak of the flute. Chen-er, please do grandpa a favor. If this tune will have no name, it will be one of my greatest regrets in life.” Wang Bo became more and more excited as he spoke, ending in a desperate plea. As Long Yin’s teacher, he was of the mind that his pool of knowledge was as wide as the ocean, but today, his heart had been opened to how vast oceans really are by just one person, by his daughter’s son—Ye Wuchen.

“If that’s the case, then let’s name it A Dream Remembering the Past” Ye Wuchen said. He did not lie, as after he played the last note, he had already completely forgotten the entire tune. If this was just a dream, then what use was it to trouble one’s mind. Since it is the past, then let it remain past. He himself at that time was just like that small plant which almost died young and prematurely during the violent wind and rainstorm. Today, he swore that he will become a boundless tree proudly overseeing the whole world.

Forget it... forget that indistinct past, forget the vague memories, forget the pain. When the day comes that he had sufficient strength, that lost memory of the past will reappear in front of his eyes once more.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 73

“A Dream Remembering the Past...Wonderful! That’s a great name!” Wang Bo exclaimed loudly in admiration, then hurriedly got up. Facing the emperor, he clasped his hands together. “Your Majesty, please excuse this old man, I have need to go ahead. If I do not take note of this tune, I will become restless.”

After speaking, he hurriedly stepped out without waiting for the emperor’s response. This old man’s footsteps indicated him speeding past everything and his attendant became extremely frightened by his actions.

After bidding farewell to Wang Bo, Long Yin turned around and carefully observed Ye Wuchen. He sighed and sadly remarked, “I just realized today, that I’ve been living a meaningless life. Before leaving the palace today, I did not know what a true painting or a true flute song was. Wuchen, you really are... a magnificent talent!”

“Your Majesty, you are overestimating me. All of this was made possible under the guidance of my teacher. Without him, there will be no Wuchen.” Ye Wuchen answered. He carefully placed the jade flute inside his sleeve with absolutely no intention to return it to Hua Shuirou.

Hua Zhentian had witnessed the action and suddenly gave him a bull-like stare. He then spoke to his daughter, “My beloved daughter, do you still want that flute back? The young fellow even dares to take ownership of one of my daughter’s possessions. Let’s see if I don’t...a few moments ago my tears almost fell. That oppressive feeling in my heart makes me want to violently beat this kid up.”

“No, daddy... don’t ask me, don’t talk to me...” Hua Shuirou covered her tear-stained face, shaking her head in dismay. She was feeling...like a complete failure. That’s right, a complete failure. She had done something unforgivable, something she wouldn’t even dare to think of. Moreover, every incident involved

that person.

Hua Zhentian scratched his head. “Okay, I won’t say any more.”

“Hoho! If not for your own natural talent... even a teacher with heavenly skills would not be able to produce such an outstanding disciple.” he then turned to face Lin Xiao, “Lin Xiao, your artistic attainment with the flute was really an eye-opener and you did not over exaggerate your skills. But the winner for this stage is still Wuchen, do you not agree?”

In middle of A Dream Remembering the Past Lin Xiao felt like he had been startled into losing his soul. There and then he was certain of yet another defeat. Even the very idea of having the best and most unbeatable flute playing... even that was crushed.

His face paled at remembering what he had said before. Flute was the other half of his life, this was a fact. Now that he lost, does it mean that he must abandon this other half of his life?

“You must have absolute self-confidence else you wouldn’t make light of your life and bet it on this irrelevant competition, more so on a bet that has no payback. Only a fool can do such things...” thinking of what Ye Wuchen had said to him previously, his heart trembled. From the very beginning, the only thing that he had prided himself with—his incomparable skill with a flute—was nothing but a joke. That self-confident statement that he had made was yet another slap to his face.

What kind of person is he....

Those currently looking at him...were few, a small number, most of them had expressions of pity, comfort, and compassion. His own father and grandfather were looking at him full of disbelief, as if they were the same as he, unable to believe with their own eyes that someone like this person existed.

Before, he was an eye-catching star, everywhere he went his light shined radiantly, catching people’s attention. Now, he was still a star, one even brighter than before, but Wuchen was a sun, whose light superseded his own. When standing side by side, his own light shamefully appeared dimmer.

Why was this not a dream?

Since I, Lin Xiao, exists, why should there be a Ye Wuchen?

“I’m convinced! Convinced and ready to concede. I, Lin Xiao, in my twenty years of existence, have been convinced by a person for the first time. From now on, “Tian Long’s Number One Outstanding Talent” and “Tian Long Number One Gifted Scholar” - both these titles no longer belong to me, instead, they now belong to you—Ye Wuchen.”

The moment he turned around to face Ye Wuchen, his facial expression was serene, even showing a faint smile. Ye Wuchen slightly raised his brows, thinking to himself, ‘Self-restraint is not a bad thing to have. But in comparison, what I admire even more is your patience.’

“Haha! Lin Xiao, although you lost, you are still considered a rare and outstanding talent of Tian Long Nation as well as the entire Heavenly Star Continent. And your high degree of forbearance is also rare. You are still the pride of my Tian Long Nation.” Long Yin praised, then his face stopped smiling to look serious before he continued, “But, as I heard a while ago, if you are defeated by Wuchen, you will stop using the flute from then on. I will not allow it! Such extraordinary talent should not be wiped out by a single statement. Not only will I decline it, but everyone from Tian Long will also not approve. So, I command you to continue as usual, keeping the flute by your side and playing everyday. If you do not obey, I will punish you!”

Lin Xiao’s expression went stiff, then his whole body trembled as his emotions stirred. All of a sudden he kneeled and kowtowed at the emperor. “Lin Xiao thanks Your Majesty for your grace! Lin Xiao will certainly bear in mind every word from Your Majesty!”

“Haha, okay, get up. This is not a palace, don’t just kneel everywhere.”

Lin Xiao got up, his face showed nothing but happiness. Ye Wuchen smiled discreetly and thought to himself, ‘If I were the emperor, I would surely do the same. If I weren’t able to make use of such an opportunity, then it would be useless being an emperor.’

Long Yin then turned to face Ye Wuchen again, still smiling. “Wuchen, your performance today really surprised me! At the same time, I’m really glad. If not for the competition today, or the appearance of this person called Leng Ya from the Gale Nation, I might not have known that my Tian Long Nation had someone like you. I won’t let this kind of talent slip by. I bestow you the title of Third Rank Marquis. Tomorrow there will be a morning assembly in Tian Long Ceremonial Court. You must attend!”

These words from Long Yin dropped as heavy thunder...Third Rank Marquis at his young age? Perhaps the emperor has gone insane!

Even Ye Wuchen’s father, Ye Wei, who performed outstanding military service and was well-known by everybody as a powerful general, was simply a fifth rank marquis. Although the order of feudal nobility was just an empty title for people in Tian Long Nation, holding no actual power, it still symbolized honor and the emperor’s special favor. Anywhere they go, they would carry the reputation. This third rank noble position caused princes and dukes to work hard all their lives just to earn it. This marquis position can only be earned by being a close relative of the emperor’s.

“Your Majesty, this might seem a little inappropriate.” A person dared to speak out. Everybody looked at the direction of the voice. It was actually the Minister of Literary Education’s Yu Wenli.

“What is inappropriate?” Long Yin said slightly annoyed.

Yu Wenli answered, “Master Ye has a wonderful talent, and he is also a descendant of the God of Sword. Based on my judgement, he is fit to be bestowed the title of First Rank Minister. But Ye Wuchen he is still very young and has not made any previous accomplishments for our Tian Long Nation. His father, General Ye is already a fifth rank imperial marquis, if this kind of announcement reached the public, it might cause some criticism as well as some unfavorable statements against the royal family.”

People nodded in agreement. Ye Wuchen’s talent had really convinced the people that he was as close to a celestial being as possible. But to appoint a position to him based only on his talents; his lack of experience and contribution would cause some criticism. Long Yin laughed out loud. “If I am to betroth my

beloved daughter Princess Fei Huang to Wuchen and let her get married by the age of 16, would anyone have any objections?”

Upon saying these words, the entire crowd went silent. The Lin family turned green, while the Ye family was overjoyed.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 74

“This...” Yu Wenli got distracted at first, but then responded immediately, facing Ye Wuchen while cupping his fist on the other hand, “Young Master Ye, General Ye, Old General Ye... congratulations! Such huge favors have never been seen in Tian Long Nation since its inception. It shall truly cause much envy from all!”

To betroth a princess... such a huge matter was decided by Long Yin in just one statement in this particular occasion, and it didn't even involve either the opinion of Princess Fei Huan or the decision of Ye Wuchen. If he gets married with a princess, then he will become a part of the royal family - to bestow the title of Third Rank Marquis cannot be unusual in this case. Who can ever object this time around? This time even a fool would be able to see that the Emperor has given Ye Wuchen excessive favor, who would dare to object?

“This old servant thanks Your Majesty for your excessive grace!” Ye Nu yelled excitedly.

“This humble servant thanks Your Majesty for the generosity towards Chen-er; Ye family will be indebted to the kindness of Your Majesty! It will be forever engraved in our hearts!” Ye Wei also had the same degree of excitement. In those days, even with both his father's accomplishment and his own ability combined were not sufficient enough to make the late Emperor betroth him to a princess, and yet his son was able to easily earn such a favor. What else could possibly cause them to be discontented.

Ye Nu and Ye Wei were preparing to strike by leaving their seats and performing the kneeling rites, but Long Yin waves his hand dismissively and said, “Exempted. Wuchen must be the unique outstanding talent bestowed upon the Tian Long Nation by the heavens, how could I possibly treat him badly. Wuchen, are you pleased with my rewards?”

“Wuchen is extremely pleased, I thank Your Majesty for your profound kindness!” Ye Wuchen answered patiently without any arrogance. However, deep inside he thought scornfully: What can I do if I am not pleased, he already made the decision before asking me, isn’t it too late for me to have a choice? Would you take it back? That Princess Fei Huang... could it be the same as that Long Huang-er which I unfortunately bumped into that day on the main street?

“Hoho, great. Lin Xiao plans to let you take the title ‘Tian Long’s Number One Gifted Scholar’ and ‘Tian Long’s Number One Outstanding Talent’, will you accept these?”

“I can’t accept them!” Ye Wuchen answered without the slightest amount of hesitation.

“Oh?” this answer was out of everybody’s expectation, Long Yin asked in doubt, “Why is that so? Don’t tell me that within the Tian Long Nation, there’s someone who could surpass your youthful talent?”

“Because Wuchen does not need these kinds of titles. If Wuchen were number one in Tian Long, then even if there’s no such title, Wuchen would still be Tian Long’s Number One. If Wuchen were not the number one in Tian Long, even if there were a title, he would still not be Tian Long’s number one. The true number one should rely solely on his own abilities, and he is not someone to be named out for. Besides, there’s no number one in this world. The so-called number one is just someone who had surpassed the previous person on the top. If one day there exists a person to whom nobody would ever be able to surpass, then that means our Tian Long Nation has reached an era of deterioration.”

Long Yin’s look went sluggish, people were one by one caught up in their own contemplation. Suddenly, Long Yin said flatly, “Good, what you said is quite right. The true number one didn’t arise from a mere title. If nobody will be able to surpass the current number one, then my Tian Long Nation might actually be headed towards deterioration because a nation cannot forever keep its best but rather lose them to someone better each time!”

Not keep the best, but to get better and better... how could it be so similar to a recurring phrase from deep within my memory?

“I will agree not to give you these kinds of titles, but I believe, from this day

forward, numerous people will certainly call you this way out of their own volition. I will not be able to control their mouths, Hoho!” said Long Yin, smiling while he caressed his beard.

“Wuchen thanks Your Majesty again for your grace. However, please forgive Wuchen for making another request.”

“Oh? What request, it won’t hurt telling.” Long Yin said nonchalantly.

Ye Wuchen looked at the direction of Leng Ya, who had been sitting in a corner as still as a cold statute, then said, “Now Wuchen had luckily surpassed Master Lin, and is also considered to have given brother Leng Yan his freedom. Just in time, Wuchen had returned home not long ago. Our courtyard needs a protector, and this person has rather extraordinary capabilities, with an age similar to mine, knowledge on assassination as well as capability in hiding and tracking. He would definitely be suitable for that duty, if you would kindly please give us your permission, Your Majesty.”

“Okay...” Long Yin nodded slowly, “Based on this statement that I’ve made, if you defeated Lin Xiao, then I would let this person go and treat him as though he never existed. Now he has earned his freedom, and he was probably not a person from the Tian Long Nation. Whether to let him stay or not, I will just let it be and shall not interrupt. You persuade him on your own, if he agrees then that is good, if not...”

“Wuchen will not force him.” Ye Wuchen said seriously, but deep inside he sneered, “This Leng Ya has really caused some restrained fear from you? You still have the intentions to kill him, and not to mention, it must be because of his dreadful air and the Shattering Wind Blade in his hands.”

Ye Wuchen and Long Yin were able to see that the current Leng Ya was like a wolf that had just come out of his lair. With the vicious nature of a wolf yet physically without its sharp claws and scary teeth, he even doesn’t have patience or the ability to cover himself up. If there comes a day that he truly became hungry, he would be every enemy’s worst nightmare.

This kind of conclusion was not difficult to obtain... because of the air of death that his breath exuded.

This kind of person... if he were truly uncontrollable then he might as well be eliminated as soon as possible.

Up to this moment, the whole stage finally closed its curtain to signify the end of the competition. As Long Yin's usual practice, he insipidly announced the outstanding talent that he had selected for this event, after which he returned to the palace. Of course, among the names that he had mentioned were Lin Xiao's, but it hadn't contained Ye Wuchen's name because. After all, he had only set his foot during the last part of the event, making the closing part of the competition much more interesting.

The moment Long Yin left, the people eventually began to stir up some rebellious acts without much elegance. The entire Ye family were surrounded by numerous people - receiving unending words of both flattery and praise. Ye Wuchen had already expected such things would happen, and prior to the departure of Long Yin, he had been hiding in a corner together with Ning Xue, after which he had already escaped.

"Master Ye."

Upon hearing this voice, Ye Wuchen turned around, it was actually Lin Xiao, the one who had been observing his every move.

"Master Lin, what can I do for you?"

"Master Ye are you interested in the young lady of the Hua family?" Lin Xiao asked.

Ye Wuchen laughed and said, "That's right. Because of young lady Hua's beauty, that all the men of Tian Long Nation was interested in her was of no surprise. I like her, and that is normal."

"But, young lady Hua is already engaged to me, and after all these years, no one has yet to dare mention any marriage proposal to the Hua family." Lin Xiao said knitting his brows.

"Oh, if I'm not mistaken, Master Lin, you had mentioned this before: Beautiful girls, gentlemen's desire, young lady Hua has not yet entered the gates of the Lin

family, so any other man could have the opportunity to seek after her. Could it be that you have already forgotten your own words?” Ye Wuchen said, beaming with a smile.

Lin Xiao’s face went stiff, he shook his head and said: “Master Ye, I know I’m unable to persuade you, but you must know that a nobleman never takes away what another person loves...”

“You are a nobleman, but I am not. To be a nobleman is very tiring, one cannot do anything unrestrained, and one has to restrict one’s own words and actions each time, taking control of one’s own bearing, sometimes even having to endure humiliations. Why should I choose to be a nobleman? Whether or not young lady Hua is your one true love I don’t care, I only know that...” Ye Wuchen paused, then said these words, giving a slight pause upon mentioning each word: “I... desire... to... pursue... her!”

Heavenly Star - Chapter 75

“You... you have gone too far!” Lin Xiao finally got angry, even a clay buddha had its limits. If he could still hold back his anger... that really means his shrewdness has reached higher planes, or that he was not man enough.

“Master Lin do you really have no confidence in yourself?” Ye Wuchen asked laughingly.

“No confidence? Hmph! I, Lin Xiao, have a six year engagement with Hua Shuirou. The people of Tian Long know of it, having been confirmed and approved by the Emperor as well as General Hua. She will enter my family and become Lin Xiao’s wife.” Lin Xiao said heavily.

“Oh, since you already have such confidence in marrying Hua Shuirou, you don’t have to personally approach me about it. You can completely treat me as someone with wishful thinking who is not worth your attention, or deem it as a big joke. Isn’t that more interesting? Master Lin, you cannot say yes to one thing and actually mean another thing, other people may look down upon you.” Ye Wuchen pondered.

Lin Xiao’s face became gloomy, unable to answer. If another person had done the same, he would have done as Ye Wuchen had said, ignore it... but as the offender is Ye Wuchen, the threat he brings is not small. Even now, standing beside him as his defeated opponent, he has that unscalable feeling of heaviness and frustration.

He gritted his teeth and spoke no further, turning around to leave.

When his shadow disappeared past the corner, the frivolous smile on Ye Wuchen’s face suddenly disappeared, replaced by his usual indifferent expression. In front of others, he was used to wearing a mask, though it was uncomfortable and he preferred his natural self. He asked in a low voice, “Xue-er, he and I held no grudges in the past, moreover he is a true nobleman. Did I

treat him too badly?"

Ning Xue lightly shook her head. "I am unsure. I only know that everything you did was right and you have your own reasons. You shouldn't feel guilty."

Ye Wuchen crouched down, touching her face and smiled. "I'm not guilty, just somewhat troubled because there's nothing between us. The only problem is his position and my identity right now. Our families are destined to be enemies, and I've merely chosen him to be my first stepping stone."

Ning Xue nodded as if she understood, then tightly gripped Ye Wuchen's hands and carefully said, "Brother... do you really like that beautiful sister? Because brother, you are always stealing glances at her, and... and..."

"Yes, I'm somewhat fond of her. An engrossing woman, I won't let her slip away so easily. She is destined to belong solely to me." Ye Wuchen said smiling.

"Then...When brother has that pretty sister, will you still have me?" Ning Xue said nervously, her crystal-like eyes unexpectedly began to moisten.

"Foolish girl," Ye Wuchen touched her little face, laughing, speaking more gently now. "Even if I hate the entire world, I would never abandon my Xue-er. Don't ask that same foolish question again."

"Then will it mean that I can still help bathe brother and hug brother while I sleep?"

"If Xue-er is willing, then it would forever be possible."

Ning Xue eventually turned her tears into laughter, embracing Wuchen's neck and smiled happily. "I know brother is the best... I was really scared, scared that once brother has that pretty sister, you would start to ignore me."

"Do you still remember what I told you about such women who are the roots of trouble? They will all be part of my collection. They might be some significant persons or people who need protection. And you, you are the other half of my life.

Ye Wuchen hugged her, then quietly listened to the noises outside which had gradually settled down. The crowd in the plaza were beginning to slowly

disperse. He was waiting for someone, and if that person was ignoring him or didn't have initiative to show himself, then he severely misjudged that person.

Without disappointment, a cold face appeared in the corner, that which belongs to Leng Ya, slowly approaching him. Before he came any closer, Ye Wuchen said flatly, "You don't have to be thankful, I'm only using you."

Leng Ya stopped his steps and replied coldly, "I'm here to tell you not to expect any thanks, furthermore, don't presume that I will be your courtyard bodyguard. Stop meddling in other people's business!"

After speaking, he turned around, stamping cold and hard as he left.

Ye Wuchen shook his head disappointedly, mumbling, "Originally, I planned to heal your mother's eyes, but since you didn't appreciate my kindness, then forget it."

Leng Ya's footsteps suddenly stopped, then suddenly like a frantic cheetah dashed back to stand in front of him, both eyes gazing at him like blades, saying each word harshly. "What did you say?"

"Your name is Leng Ya?" Ye Wuchen dodged the question and leisurely asked instead, not even worried about being refused an answer.

"Yes."

"What is your real name?"

"Leng Ya!"

"Do you need money?"

"....."

Ye Wuchen looked straight at him. "Shortage of money is not a shameful matter, if you have no money, what will you and your mother eat, wear, and where would you stay?! What would you use to treat your sick mother? This is not something to be embarrassed about. You have already revealed your identity in this competition, that makes it difficult for you to set foot on Tian Long City in the future. Since you are not a citizen of Tian Long Nation, you might not know of the animosity between the people of Tian Long and Gale Nation. When the

time comes, what else could you do except to steal and to rob? If you serve my family, at least I can guarantee you and you mother's safety, as well as heal her illness so that she does not suffer any more hardships. Don't tell me that for the sake of ridiculous dignity, you would ignore your own mother's safety? Even resort to foul acts!?"

Leng Ya was immersed in silence and refused to talk. After a long while he said coldly, "If you can really heal my mother's eyes, then in a year's time, I'll do whatever you want!"

"Your mother's eyes in exchange for a year of service. How about her life?"

Leng Ya startled upon hearing these words, then his eyes showed extreme violence, overflowing with murder.

Ye Wuchen laughed coldly, "Put away your murderous spirit. Even though I'm not a good person, I'm unlikely to use despicable methods like using your mother to threaten you. Let me ask you, if I don't step forward to help you, what would happen to you?"

"....."

"Worst case, they will interrogate you about your past and then immediately execute you; best case, you will be imprisoned for life, and they will surely investigate your mother as well. Knowing the emperor's methods, do you still think you can escape? On the other hand, even if you are released after one or two months of imprisonment, during that time, you will not be available, and your mother will have nobody to rely on. What could she depend on to be able to live?"

Leng Ya's whole body shook, in an instant he broke into a cold sweat. He tightly clenched his fists as he slightly trembled.

"You are still very inexperienced. You have acceptable skills and explosive strength so you handle matters rudely and impetuously, disregarding the consequences. Excluding the incident today, it's a mistake on your part, bringing your mother here in Tian Long Nation. If you want to leave the Gale Nation, you may be able to go to the Kui Shui Nation or Cang Lan Nation, just don't come

here to the Tian Long Nation! The hostility between Tian Long Nation and Gale Nation is not something that can be eliminated in the matter of ten years or eight years.”

Heavenly Star - Chapter 76

Ye Wuchen continued, "Originally, the best choice you have is to leave Tian Long Nation together with your mother right away. But it's too late now, you must be aware. Because of that Shattering Wind Blade of yours, the Emperor isn't likely to give up, rather it gave rise to his murderous intentions. In a short matter of time, you will be secretly captured and interrogated. Because you own the God of War Feng Chaoyang's Shattering Wind Blade, you must be related to him. If you are one his relatives, you are suitable to use to blackmail Feng Chaoyang or even become a bargaining chip against the Gale Nation. And if you are not, you will simply be put to death, because your imposing manner is unrestrained. Not having high cultivation, but having a terrifying murderous spirit frightens the Emperor. If you are fully developed but are of no use to him, then he will eliminate you as early as possible, else he will not be able to eat or rest in peace."

Leng Ya kept silent, but was sweating all over. After hearing these words from Ye Wuchen, he then realized his nasty situation.

What he said was right, I'm too inexperienced...

"Well, do you agree to join the Ye family?" Ye Wuchen asked.

"Agreed!"

"Okay, but you do not have the final say on the circumstances. What I want... is ten years! I'll have your ten years of loyalty to compensate for the favor I've given you and your mother. In exchange, your mother will be safe. Do you agree?" Ye Wuchen asked calmly.

"I...am.... willing!"

Almost using the strength of his whole body, Leng Ya forced out those words from the gaps between his gritted teeth.

“Very well.” Ye Wuchen nodded in satisfaction, “Your domineering nature, your untouchable ego, and your unrestrainable manner makes me wonder what prominent status you must have held before. You are definitely not the kind of person who is willing to be confined inside a house. This time you responded with difficulty, mostly because of your mother. However, in time, you will find out that you have not made the wrong decision. There will come a day that you’ll be qualified to stand behind my back and accept this lifelong honor!”

Leng Ya lifted his head, gazing with the eyes of a hungry eagle observing its prey. At this moment, the man’s domineering nature and imposing manner stirred him violently. He had never thought that a man younger than him could have caused him so much emotion and pressure.

“Go ahead and tell me your current residence, tomorrow I shall send people to bring you over. Don’t worry, although the emperor might be closely tracking your whereabouts, he likely gave no orders to secretly eliminate you. The matters that he needs to attend to right now...” Ye Wuchen let out a cold smile, “are quite a few.”

By the time Leng Ya left, people in the public square finally dispersed. Ye Wuchen carried Ning Xue out of the Imperial Institute discreetly, then promptly hired a palanquin. On the roadside was finally where he felt at ease.

It’s really difficult for a well known person to go out, especially someone who had just recently become so.

At this time, Lin Kuang and Lin Zhan were already on their way home, both carrying ugly expressions, and not making any remarks. Ye Wuchen not only amazed the world with brilliant feats, but also insulted the entire Lin family from top to the bottom. Several of those humiliations had been provoking, as if telling them they “got what he deserved”. Every time he argued, he was left speechless and needed to hold back anger and shame. Right now, he recalled everything calmly, only to realize that, from the beginning, the entire Lin family had been led by the nose by Ye Wuchen. Every word and every reaction had been anticipated by him beforehand... after which he struck back tenfold.

After thinking about this, they both glanced at each other and shivered all

over.

“That dreadful scheme... no wonder he had endured patiently for the entirety of sixteen years.” Lin Kuang sighed.

He couldn't believe that Ye Wuchen had been a loser for sixteen years, then became an incomparable genius within a year after he was lost. He believed resolutely that the previous sixteen years had been a ruse so that people would ignore him, developing himself rapidly during that time.

“Grandpa, Father!”

“Your child has brought you humiliation.” Lin Xiao ran up to their backs, showing a sad face.

“Victory and defeat is a common place in a military family, Xiao-er. Don't blame it on yourself, it's because of...Haaaah.” Lin Zhan sighed heavily, although he was also astonished by the talents of Ye Wuchen, he refused to say any words to praise the opponent. Today his brilliant feats amazed the world, and the rewards received from the emperor had made all the people shift their attention to Ye family, forming a crowd around them as the Emperor left. And the Lin family aside from their “allies”, were not paid any attention, totally desolate in a corner.

All because of Ye Wuchen.

“Grandpa, Father, in a week Shuirou of the Hua family will turn sixteen. According to the arrangement years ago, there should be a formal engagement party before we get married the following day. I hope we can make a public announcement on this, for the whole city to know. It will be best if we can make them discuss it as often as possible.” Lin Xiao said seriously. This act will not only place pressure on the Hua family, but also make Ye family unable to put a step forward. If the whole city was made aware, should the Hua family back out, they will be despised throughout Tian Long City.

“Xiao-er, are you afraid?” Lin Kuang said furrowing his brows.

“Yes. Right now, I'm very afraid because the pressure he poses is quite huge. Furthermore, Hua Shuirou's actions today indicated that she is somehow

starting to like Ye Wuchen. Or else, based on her character, she wouldn't have done such actions.” Lin Xiao said painfully.

“A real man of character will not be tossed out by a woman. Furthermore, he will be a tire because of a woman!” Lin Kuang said.

“However, this also relates to a man’s dignity! I, Lin Xiao, have been glorious for half a lifetime, I have no intention of becoming a laughingstock. Moreover, having Hua Shuirou is equivalent of having the entire Hua family. If the Ye family makes their move, and should they succeed... Grandpa, Father, will you be willing to let such a thing happen? And... I’m already deeply in love with her, if I lost her, I will suffer for the rest of my life” said Lin Xiao, his face miserable.

This was the first time Lin Kuang and Lin Zhan had seen such painful and alarmed expressions on the face of Lin Xiao, who they had been really proud of. Although he always remained calm, the shock he received today was indeed too much. For a person who had been used to standing high above others, who was used to flattery and admiration, he often could confidently say that he didn’t care about fame or being lonely. However, once he was bested by another, he lost his head out of fear and tried with all his might to regain his previous place. This is similar to those children of families who were used to their ordinary life, but if there came a day wherein they were no longer wealthy, they would tend to expend all their efforts to climb upwards to seek riches and honor. It’s because when one already holds a position, one would often boast shamelessly.

And if a woman who originally belonged to him got snatched away by another person before the marriage, then that would be more painful than killing him.

“What you said is right, even if you didn’t mention it, your grandpa and I will surely do so tomorrow. Let’s continue the discussion at home.”

Heavenly Star - Chapter 77

Tian Long's weather remained fair as the carriage of Ye Wuchen leisurely returned to the house of Ye, upon entering the door, the new arrivals were watched attentively by more than ten pairs of eyes at the same time. This included the guard who normally gazed fixedly and even the hidden guard, all of them used their peripheral vision to observe him, their gazes extremely bewildered, as if this were their first time meeting the young master.

"... Did it really spread that fast!? Don't tell me that the news moves faster than me?" Ye Wuchen muttered quietly to himself.

The rumors regarding the young master of Ye has been spreading throughout the Tian Long City at a surprising speed... against Lin Xiao in a martial skills competition and two literary skills competition, all resulting to victory! Included among these is the victory over the Hua family's master through Wuchen's wisdom, and craftily winning over the president of the Imperial Institute with a god-like, astonishing painting Twin Lotus Flower on One Stalk as well as an impromptu tune of A Dream Remembering the Past causing thousands of people to spill their tears. Moreover, he is also a descendant of the God of Sword, and even the Emperor respected him as an incomparable genius, bestowing him with the position of Third Rank Marquis on the spot and then betrothing him to Princess Fei Huang... these surprising rumors had arrived in succession. If an ordinary person were to speak of it, it would only be treated as complete nonsense, but the ones to spread these matters... It can be said that if they were to stamp their feet, they could cause a part of the earth to shake; if they were the ones to make such claims, how could other people not believe them?

"Young master, master has instructed us to inform you to please immediately proceed to the meeting hall once you have arrived." Seeing him back, the old servant promptly greeted him in welcome.

"Oh, got it." Ye Wuchen nodded, then headed towards the direction of the

meeting hall. The many pairs of eyes followed him along with his every move. In the past, although they were servants of Ye family, they slightly despised and loathed this young master who was once an extremely weak person, but now roams aimlessly after returning home and relied on his power to bully other young masters. This time though, their gazes only held shock and disbelief.

Inside the bright and spacious meeting hall, the entire Ye family was present, including Ye Wuyun with smiles on his face. Once Ye Wuchen entered, Ye Nu who had been laughing very loudly stopped short, then said in a low voice, "Chen-er, why don't you come in, then answer us truthfully!"

Ye Wuchen sat on the chair beside Wang Wenshu, placing Ning Xue on his lap, his right hand inserted into her small mouth, fiddling with her tongue when he said innocently, "I didn't cause any shame to Ye family... What do you hold me accountable for?"

His obvious favor and excessive actions towards Ning Xue was not surprising to Ye family anymore; they were already used to it. Wang Wenshu said smiling, "Dad, we just ask Chen-er directly, don't just scare him."

Ye Nu laughed out loud upon hearing this, while still laughing he said, "This young fellow had tricked the entire Lin family enough to choke them. It doesn't surprise me, though I'm pretty satisfied. I have confronted them for so many years, yet never have I felt this kind of satisfaction. Hahahaha... But!"

Ye Nu switched his facial expression, furrowing his brows and asked, "Chen-er, please tell us the truth, where did your martial skills and talents come from? Other people would have thought that you had faked your illness for sixteen years, then amazed the world with a single brilliant feat. However, the Ye family won't deny that a year ago you were still a person without even the strength to truss a chicken, and your talent had been below that of a ten year old kid. Then you mentioned that you just regained your consciousness a month ago, don't tell me that you learned all those things within a month? I don't believe it, even if the God of Sword had magical abilities, it would still be impossible to train you up to this level!! If it weren't for our reconciliation prior to that, I would even doubt that you were my son Chen-er!"

Ye Wei nodded accordingly, fixing his gaze at Ye Wuchen and asked, “Not just a month, even a year would still be very unimaginable. Aside from these, are there any other secrets that we ought to know?”

Ye Wuchen wanted to say something, but then hesitated, his face troubled.

Judging by Ye Wuchen’s awkward expression, Wang Wenshu promptly rebuked Ye Wei, “Look at you, father and son, but still doubting Chen-er. This only affirms that Chen-er is a heaven blessed genius, only needing a month’s time and he can already...”

“Heaven blessed geniuses also have their limitations,” Ye Nu waved his hand interrupting Wang Wenshu; “Originally, Lin Xiao of Lin family was publicly known as a heaven blessed genius himself. Does it mean that his twenty years of achievements can’t be compared with Chen-er’s one month? That’s absolutely impossible!”

“Actually, your guess is right.” Ye Wuchen finally opened his mouth, “Teacher employed a very peculiar method. However, this method is universally shocking, the old man had requested of me not to tell others, but... Hmm, telling my family should not cause any trouble.”

“Okay!” Ye Nu nodded and said firmly, “Tell us then, or else my heart will not be at ease.”

“Actually, teacher used a method called ‘Anointing One’s Head with the Purest Powers, a legendary ability to directly pass a portion of his cultivation onto me; hence, here I am today.” Ye Wuchen shamelessly told them about a power he had seen before in some martial arts novel, his forefinger still lightly stirring inside Ning Xue’s mouth, feeling her subconsciously sucking.

“Anointing One’s Head with Purest Powers!?” totally beyond expectations of Ye Wuchen, Ye Nu and Ye Wei showed no doubt, but actually exclaimed at the name.

Could this kind of thing really exist in this world?

“Have you heard of it before?” Ye Wuchen asked astounded.

“Haven’t heard of anointing one’s head with the purest powers, but instead I’ve heard of another one called Anointing One’s Head with the Power of the Heaven and Earth. Even though these two have different names, they are quite similar. Its purposes are very close to each other... So that’s the way it is, I somehow understand.” said Ye Wei upon realization, from the words “anointing the head”, he already had an idea.

“Anointing One’s Head with the Power of the Heaven and Earth, is a magical power used by the clans of the Southern Empire and the Northern Empire. This power enabled the clan leaders of the Southern Empire and the Northern Empire to instill their entire cultivation and powers into their descendants, before they finally die without any powers remaining. This is one of the reasons why the clans the Southern Empire and the Northern Empire flourished for a very long time with no one daring to provoke them.

Indeed it’s real... Ye Wuchen thought.

“Would they have also suffered some form of damage, else, the clans of the Southern Empire and the Northern Empire would really become stronger and stronger without any limitations?” Ye Wuchen asked.

“That’s right, there were indeed damages, but the magnitude of the damage was not known to us. Yet, in every generation of the clans of the Southern Empire and the Northern Empire, they had matchless powers, of this there is no doubt.”

“Matchless powers? Their powers are... God-level?” Ye Wuchen’s brows furrowed, “But among the four God-level masters of the Heavenly Star Continent, there was no mention of them.”

Heavenly Star - Chapter 78

“It’s because the clan of the Southern Empire and the Northern Empire never meddled with the affairs of the mundane world that no one has experienced their real powers. It’s not enough to estimate the level of their real powers. In addition, they are rather colossal beings that are alien to us, perhaps the ranking in our secular world doesn’t apply to them. However, those who really know the presence of these colossal beings know that they most certainly possess God-level powers, or maybe that their powers are stronger than the current four masters of Heavenly Star.” Ye Wei continued.

“Oh? So you mean to say that when the Royal Family of Tian Long had saved the clan leader of the Southern Empire during their time of crisis by removing the poison from his body and dispatching three heaven-level protectors along with numerous Royal Masters to assist in defeating the Northern Empire, it was not considered as provoking these “colossal beings” of the Northern Empire? If there comes a day when the leader of Northern Empire, who had been hidden for many years, decides to take revenge, will the Royal Family of Tian Long be in danger?” Ye Wuchen said, hardly avoiding the delicate subject.

Ye Nu nodded, caressing his beard, “Chen-er what you said is right; this act would mean that the leader of the Southern Empire owe our Tian Long Royal Family a huge favor, but at the same time it has provoked a dreadful enemy. The leader of the Southern Empire had agreed to protect the Tian Long Royal Family should they become the target of the Northern Empire. However, attacking a city is easier than protecting it. Although the power of the Southern Empire is not inferior, if the Northern Empire attacked in secret, based on their frightening powers, they would be able to bring disaster to the Royal Family of Tian Long before the Southern Empire would notice. Hah... Let’s not talk about it further, the Emperor must already have a plan to deal with it so we don’t need to worry. Chen-er, what you’ve mentioned about the power to Anoint One’s Head with the

Purest Powers, is it similar to Anointing One's Head with the Power of Heaven and Earth?"

"That's right. Although they are not completely the same, they are much alike. For the power of Anointing Head with the Purest Powers, my teacher can only use it once every ten years, to pass on to me a part of his cultivation, talents and skills. The same as Anointing Head with the Powers of Heaven and Earth. The difference is, after teacher has used the power of Anointing One's Head with the Purest Powers, it doesn't affect his cultivation, but rather he becomes weak for a period of ten days. These ten days are the most dangerous moments of his life because that's the time he will be the same as an ordinary person. I would have to wait ten days until teacher's power has fully recovered before I could leave.

When Ye Wuchen tells lies he was just like any other ordinary person with no unusual reactions. While stroking Ning Xue's hair, it suddenly reminded him of when he was small. His mom must have always told him not to tell lies... but in this strange world, he told lies everyday... a new home, a new identity. He was tired... so tired. How long must he wait until his body and heart completely adapts to this world and this home.

"So that's the way it is! Now I finally understand. No wonder you could advance to this stage within such a very short span of time, no wonder! No wonder!" everything became clear to Ye Nu, all the doubt in his heart vanished at once, his face full of appreciation and gratification. He never doubted what Ye Wuchen said. Aside from this method, there was no other way to transform an almost useless person into a powerful and skillful genius just within a month.

"We owe such a huge favor to the God of Sword. How can we of the Ye family repay him!?" Ye Nu sighed. Indeed, they will be unable repay this huge favor, even if they tried, they still would not have the opportunity to do so. The only thing that they can do now is to supervise and encourage the future development of Ye Wuchen, so as not to disappoint the God of Sword's efforts in "training" him.

"Chen-er, if you see your teacher next time, you must thank him on your mother's behalf." Wang Wenshu said smiling. After today, who would dare badmouth her son. The surprises that Ye Wuchen brought to her today had revealed themselves in succession, almost making her faint from the excitement.

Until now, she still has not recovered from these surprises, still having the vague sense of dreaming. But upon thinking upon the mournful tune of A Dream Remembering the Past, her nose suddenly turned sour and her tears threatened to fall. She can hear that his heart had suffered an enormous pain. When passed on to a mother's heart, the pain that her son has felt multiplies a hundred fold.

"Chen-er, what about the flame from the old man Lin? How could it not hurt you?" Ye Nu asked.

"That old man Lin really had bad luck. Teacher let me eat something very strange, saying water or fire could not harm me within three months." Ye Wuchen said admiring inwardly. Ye Ning Xue gently played with his finger, turning a deaf ear. She did not care whether brother lied or not, nor of his reasons.

"Unharmd by water and fire?" Ye Nu was surprised, "is there such a thing!?"

"Look at you two, calling him 'old man Lin', show him some respect." Wang Wenshu said laughing.

Ye Nu then realized his loose tongue and was about to let out a laugh, but suddenly his face went still, then he loudly asked, "Chen-er, what about your invitation? I remember of all the invitations sent here, there was none for you."

"Oh? How do you know I have an invitation?" Ye Wuchen asked with a doubting face, at the same time, he shot a glance at Ye Wuyun. Ye Wuyun did not avoid his gaze but instead looked at him face to face. Recalling what Ye Wuchen had said before he left their home along with his composed behavior at the institute, there was no doubt that he had stolen Ye Wuyun's invitation.

"Yun-er told me." Ye Nu blurted out with no intention of hiding it.

"Nobody gave me an invitation, so I obtained one myself." Ye Wuchen took out a gold gilded invitation from his pocket, he then threw the invitation at Ye Nu and said plainly, "The Ye Family have forgotten me, but my friend did not. This was given to me by brother Long Zhengyang."

"Long Zhengyang? The crown prince?" Ye Nu responded right away, then he remembered that when they found Ye Wuchen; Long Zhengyang had said that he and Ye Wuchen were friends.

“That’s right, me and brother Long are good friends, we call ourselves brothers. No use to calling him the crown prince.” Ye Wuchen said, then somehow shaking his head in disappointment, “It’s really strange in the Ye Family. The adopted son has invitation, but the real son doesn’t. Needing a friend’s help just to be able to obtain one. When adopted son had lost the invitation, he corrupts the story by saying the real son had stolen his invitation. Upon reaching the ears of the elders, they doubt their real son over their adopted son, very funny. Who is really your own flesh and blood?”

Ye Wuchen stood up, carrying Ning Xue then left without saying any more.

“Chen-er!” Wang Wenshu rushed to stand up, yelling nervously, “It’s my fault you didn’t receive an invitation, because I thought you didn’t like that kind of place, so I... but I didn’t doubt you.”

Ye Nu also stood, feeling guilty, then sighed, “You can blame it on grandpa, grandpa shouldn’t have doubted you.”

The invitation in his hands really had the name “Ye Wuchen” on it, but had no traces of alteration or smears, too impossible to be a fake.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 79

“But...” Ye Wuyun panicked and was about to say something when he was stopped short by Ye Wuchen’s cold voice, “Ye Wuyun, I know you’ve been resentful after I came back to the Ye Family. If I had died at that time, you might have become the master of the entire Ye Family, but here I am, so your beautiful dream has been suddenly smashed to pieces. The next time you want to play this kind of game please put more effort into it and use your brain. Your methods this time... pfft!”

Without a sound, Ye Wuchen suddenly extended his right hand outwards, grabbing the empty air. The invitation in Ye Nu’s hand seemed to grow wings and flew into Ye Wuchen’s hands. He raised both his hands, and the invitation scattered into pieces. He waved his hands again, collecting all the pieces of papers in his hands, then without stopping, he turned to leave. While turning, the corner of his mouth lifted a bit... Ye Wuyun, you are just a flailing clown; a toy, not even fit to be my match. You dare to fight against me!?

He believed Ye Nu would not approach Long Zhengyang to verify the authenticity of his own statement, or else he would not be Ye Nu.

“Chen-er!” first time seeing Ye Wuchen angry, Wang Wenshu’s heart was stricken. She rushed to follow after him, without sparing Ye Wuyun a glance.

Only Ye Nu, Ye Wei, and Ye WuYun remained in the hall. In the strange silence lingered a suffocating tension. Ye Wuyun panicked momentarily, then said in a rush, “Adoptive father, grandpa, this matter wasn’t as brother Wuchen had said...”

“Yun-er, you go ahead. Your invitation might have been lost somewhere.” Ye Nu said waving his hand.

“Okay.” Ye Wuyun responded sadly, then turned around and left.

After Wuyun had left, Ye Nu pondered for a moment, then asked, “Do you think what Chen-er said is true?”

“Unlikely.” Ye Wei shook his head, furrowed his brows and said, “If Yun-er really had those intentions, he wouldn’t have used this low level trick. What I really think is that Chen-er’s last statement was aimed at Yun-er, but perhaps he is also hinting something to us?”

“Oh?” Ye Nu’s face puzzled.

Ye Wei went silent without a reply, trying hard to search for an answer in his brain as the memory of the conversation they had a while ago flashed past him.

“Chen-er... Chen-er, mother didn’t doubt you, I have not been a good mother...”

Wang WenShu nervously chased after Ye Wuchen, steps becoming quicker and quicker. Ye Wuchen eventually stopped, turned and smiled. “I know... it’s really nothing. I am just a little tired from today so I wanted to go back early to rest.”

Wang Wenshu’s nervous heart finally settled but she still spoke with some regret, “You are right. Being tormented the whole morning, you must be very tired. You go ahead and rest. I will let Xiao Lu bring you some food later at lunch.”

“Yes!” Ye Wuchen responded with a smile.

Upon returning to his small courtyard, Ye Qi and Ye Ba welcomed him from afar, boot-licking words followed in advance, like the water from the Yellow River dashing through the area...

“Young Master! We’ve heard what happened today... We already knew that Young Master was truly a dragon among a thousand miles of people, but just a quiet one. You were preparing to amaze the world in just one single act, even the supernatural beings are now scared of you, and the entire Tian Long City trembles upon hearing your name! Even though the Young Master of Lin is pretty good, he is nothing in front of you. If Young Master were the sun, then he is just a tiny, unremarkable star. If Young Master were a fresh flower, then he is just a small blade of grass... ah, no! Not even grass, he is simply a pile of cow

dung...”

All the way from the courtyard gate, he arrived in front of a table and sat down, flattery from the two of them continued without end, causing Ye Wuchen to sigh. If they used their flattery elsewhere, they might be able to attain an honorable position in the government. He waved his hand, “That’s enough, let’s just call it a day. Go and serve me some tea.”

His voice had just barely dropped,.Ye Qi and Ye Ba had not even moved one bit, while Xiao Lu had already carried in two cups of tea gracefully walking towards them.

“Young Master, young lady Ning Xue, please have some tea.”

Placing them down, she retreated with gentle steps, then her two eyes directly observing Ye Wuchen, both filled with splendor, making Ye Wuchen wonder whether her eyes were embedded with precious stones. After a long while, he could not take it anymore; hence, he let out a fake cough and said, “Xiao Lu, go wash the clothes that I’ve worn yesterday.”

“Young Master, I’ve already finished washing them.” Xiao Lu slightly bent her waist as she replied.

“... then go to mother’s place to get my lunch. Tell her I’m hungry.” Ye Wuchen immediately changing his excuse.

“Yes.” Xiao Lu turned around, departing in small quick steps.

Ye Wuchen finally heaved a sigh of relief, holding up the teacup, he tested the temperature, then lightly touched the corner of Ning Xue’s lips, letting her drink little by little.

“Ye Qi, how far is the black forest in the east side of the city from the city gate?” Ye Wuchen asked while lowering his head.

“Exactly twenty kilometers.” Ye Qi answered.

“How about the distance from the Devil’s Trap Pagoda to the west side border of the black forest?” Ye Wuchen asked.

“That is... approximately ten kilometers. Young Master, are you planning to...” Ye Qi asked in a very careful and nervous tone.

“I’m just asking.”

After helping Ning Xue drink, Ye Wuchen grabbed the other cup and took a sip, then exhaled. He lifted his head, his brain continuously switching over different possibilities like flashes of lightning.

“Ye Ba, prepare some sulfur, charcoal, and niter for me. It’s better if you have some kerosene as well. Are you able to obtain those things?” Ye Wuchen suddenly asked.

Ye Ba got distracted, then responded, “Yes, yes. Although difficult, I can find them within Tian Long City.”

“Then go, now. If you need silver then proceed to the accounts office, tell them it’s upon my request.”

Ye Ba left, muttered to himself why he needed such strange things. Aside from niter, these were used to light fire, right? Why would he need these if he’s already using magic lights?

While hugging Ning Xue, Ye Wuchen lifted the teacup and slowly sipped. Subconsciously narrowing both eyes in thought. Ye Qi is aware that he is thinking about something, and did not dare to disturb him, so he respectfully stood waiting in a corner.

“Yi Qi, who is the number one mercenary in Tian Long Nation?” Ye Wuchen asked.

“Number one mercenary?” stroking his head, Ye Qi pondered for a moment, then his eyes lit up. “I remember Xiao San and Xiao Si make mention of the best mercenary in Tian Long, his name is Tao Baibai.”

Pffft!...

Ye Wuchen spurted out a mouthful of tea, wetting Ning Xue’s clothes. He immediately put down his teacup to wipe off the traces of water. Cursing endlessly deep inside... this is the second time. Apparently, it is better that I do not drink tea while talking to this Ye Qi.

“This... this is such an odd name.” Ye Qi said embarrassed. He muttered secretly inside, it may be odd, but he should not have reacted this way, exactly

like last time. Do not tell me that the Young Master is overly sensitive to other people's names?

“Oh, it's actually a bit odd.” Ye Wuchen said calmly.

Number one mercenary, Tao Baibai! This is such a flashy name. With this title, China would not have called it anything other than “flashy”.

“Does he have a special move called the ‘Dodon Ray’?” Ye Wuchen probed. After asking, even he thought it was a silly question.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 80

“Dodon Ray? I really don’t know. I have only heard of his name. We servants cannot truly understand these kinds of people.” Ye Qi said.

“Okay, I understand. You may leave. Do not enter without my permission.” Ye Wuchen waved his hand.

“Yes!” Ye Qi withdrew respectfully.

Ye Wuchen’s hand summoned a thin layer of bright light, his palm reached for the spots on Ning Xue’s clothes that were still damp and steamed them dry in a flash. He stood up and said, “Xue-er, let’s do a jigsaw puzzle.”

Ye Wuchen sprinkled equal sized fragments of the invitation on top of the bed. The two of them lay on the bed, laughing as they played with the fragments, and quickly joining the pieces together into its original shape.

Ye Wuchen curved the corner of his mouth, concentrating in thought. He gathered his powers into his hands, his fingertips releasing faint colorless rays of light. Little by little he drew lines across the small cracks between each fragment. Running his finger through the spaces, the fragments quickly merged together all at once, joining perfectly and transforming back into its original shape.

In no time at all, the paper with “Ye Wuchen” printed on the back was left in his hand. It was flawless, with no trace of tears, and it was impossible to imagine it had been tampered with.

“Brother, you are very awesome. How did you do it?” Ning Xue clapped her hands asking excitedly.

“My powers can even heal wounds, this is quite easy.” Ye Wuchen said laughing, “Remember the time we went out hunting? My clothes had been torn over and over but after, you couldn’t find any marks. Your brother Da Niu even kept saying that there was something wrong with his eyesight.”

“Oh! Hee hee!”

“And now, let’s change the name back.”

He used his power to wipe off the word “Chen”, then used a brush to write down “Yun” from what he remembered. Pressing against the paper, the ink was dried completely with no evidence of having been written just recently. Soon after he bade Ning Xue to wait where she sat, while he climbed the roofs like a thief.

He placed the invitation under Ye Wuyun’s bed sheet, then quietly returned to the roof. Sneering to himself, ‘This is just a small game, since you were trying to trap me, let’s lay the perfect trap. I’ll make you unable to defend yourself, so you will feel that you are not being framed, since that is definitely not my style.

Halfway back to his room, he heard an unfamiliar clear and bright voice coming from the main hall. His heart stirred. A visitor?

He thought for a moment and then moved closer, bending an ear to listen.

“... General Ye, Madame Ye, actually I came here this time because of some concerns.”

“Oh? Superior Ji, there should be no harm in telling us.”

“I have heard that your son is still unmarried at his age, and my daughter has just turned sixteen this year, the exact time to choose a husband. Since she saw the elegant manner of your good son yesterday, and had hidden affections for him, so.... Ah, no, no, no. My daughter has absolutely no intention to fight with Princess Fei Huang over the position of the first wife, my daughter is willing to enter Ye family as his concubine... Ehem! Ehem! I mean, your good son and Princess Fei Huang’s marriage is still three years away, your son is after all, a man of valor. While there is still no lady to accompany him at his bedside, and my daughter is educated, well-balanced, clever, has an outstanding beauty.....”

Ye Wuchen went speechless upon hearing those words, willing to be a concubine just to be married to him!? Judging by his manner of speech, he must be some high government official. Have this old man and his daughter gone insane?

“This... we would need to ask Chen-er for his opinion regarding this matter.”

Came Wang Wenshu's voice, he could imagine her facial expression at this moment.

"Superior Shangguan has arrived!"

"Hahahaha! Long time no see General Ye, it's my fault, my fault. Oh? Superior Ji, you are also here!" sounded the rough voice of a man.

After a series of courtesy words, the man, Superior Shangguan, yelled in a loud voice, "I, Shangguan, am a rough man. I don't speak in a roundabout way. My daughter personally witnessed your son's good manner. After which, she proclaimed that in this life she will not marry any other except your son. She's afraid that some other may take the initiative before her, so here I am. Oh, my daughter had just turned fifteen, although her temperament... is not that good, her appearance is one in a hundred and well-known! The people who have come to propose to her have worn out our doorstep..."

"Superior Liu has arrived!"

"Oh General Ye, long time no see. To be quite honest, I came here to propose marriage on behalf of my daughter. My daughter just turned sixteen this year..."

"Superior Zhuge has arrived!"

"Hahahaha! Brother Ye, for our friendship's sake, I'll just get straight to the point. My daughter Meng-er requested that I bring this letter and an embroidered heart handkerchief for your good son. Judging from this, my daughter must have affections towards your son. Why don't we become relatives by marriage, that will form a great bond between both our families...."

"Superior Cheng has arrived!"

.....

"Superior Liu has arrived!"

.....

"Superior Ou Yang has arrived!"

"Superior Lu has arrived!"

"Superior Huang has arrived!"

“Superior Wu has arrived!”

“Superior Xia has arrived!”

.....

Ye Wuchen’s brows had beaded with sweat initially, but by this point he was sweating profusely, almost falling off the roof. When Wang Wenshu commanded a servant to go and call him, he hurriedly dashed straight in the direction of his own courtyard.

Back in his room, he picked up Ning Xue and was prepared to escape when coincidentally Xiao Lu happened to come in carrying their lunch, and said in a gentle voice, “Young Master, a moment ago I just happened to come across the Young Mistress and she asked that you head to her place if you have free time.”

As if hearing a voice from heaven, he wished he could hug and kiss Xiao Lu. He promptly carried Ning Xue and dashed out like the wind, but came dashing back with a serious face, “Xiao Lu, tell Ye Qi and Ye Ba or anyone looking for me that I’m not here. Tell them I went out for a walk and will be back by evening. Did you hear what I said? Tell the same to Madame and Master too!”

“Ah.... yes!”

Ye Wuchen resumed dashing out like wind, his speed stunning Xiao Lu.

Ye Shuiyao’s courtyard was just as peaceful as before. For Ye Wuchen, no other place was safer. Because no one in the Ye family would set foot in this courtyard unless they had business, no one will know that he was hiding here. Ye Wuchen walked to the study. Without knocking, he pushed the door open and headed inside.

A familiar, elegant fragrance hit him in the face. Ye Wuchen was enchanted as he breathed it in. The beautiful woman inside the room did not make a sound. Aside from Ye Wuchen, no one would enter without knocking.

“Receiving a summons from big sister, your brother was overwhelmed by such favor. Could it be possible that big sister missed me?”

Ye Shuiyao turned around to look at him, then turned back, her voice clear and cold. “Come here and teach me how to paint.”

Placing Ning Xue on a chair, he secretly made a hushing gesture and proceeded to quietly stand beside Ye Shuiyao. Ye Shuiyao's body obviously went stiff from his approach, but immediately recovered, placing on a new sheet of painting paper.

“Teach me how to paint that Twin Lotus Flowers on One Stalk.”

Heavenly Star - Chapter 81

“Oh?” Ye Wuchen is somehow having difficulties in responding, he thought for a moment then said, “The Twin Lotus Flowers on One Stalk doesn’t require high painting skills but good judgement and control. This... is most unsuitable for you, sister.”

“Teach me.” Ye Shuiyao remained unmoved not even in the slightest degree, only repeating herself indifferently.

Ye Wuchen shrugged. “Okay. However, based on sister's current condition, to achieve perfection, even if she focuses all her efforts to painting everyday, it might take five years. Even so, would you still want to learn, sister?”

“Let’s start then.” Ye Shuiyao said coldly, not surprised with his words. For her, five years was not a very long time, too short even, to achieve the same caliber of painting as the renowned God of Sword of Tian Long. Even if within these years she lost touch with her other accomplishments in painting, her true painting abilities would continue to develop rapidly under the imperceptible influence.

“All right.” Ye Wuchen pondered for a moment, then said, “For this type of painting, the most important point is to be able to control the thickness of the ink. Too much or too little, even the smallest deviation can cause problems. The first thing that you must do, sister, is to imagine the entire process of the lotus flower’s budding stage until its blooming time. According to your thoughts, separately draw the pre and post blooming phase of the lotus flower. I think this will make it easier for you to succeed.”

Ye Wuchen picked up a brush, without any preparation, he started to quickly brandish it on the canvas. “I’ll paint some for sister to see, then you will compare them.”

After a few strokes, an outline of a lotus flower began to appear vividly on the

paper. Ye Shuiyao's pretty eyes watched the movements of his hands. The voice beside her ear began to fade the more absorbed he became, her gaze has involuntarily shifted to his face as if frozen; unable to look away....

While concentrating on the painting, Ye Wuchen felt the atmosphere shift. He glanced to the side to discover Ye Shuiyao staring blankly at him. Her eyes were obviously unfocused, almost silly. He could not help but stop his brush, waving his hands past her eyes, "Sister?"

Ye Shuiyao's body slightly trembled as her eyes slowly drooped. Calmly, she said, "Never mind me, please continue."

Ye Wuchen bowed his head, easily continuing the strokes that now formed the outline of the stem.

Ye Shuiyao did not change her gaze, her mind began to wander uncontrollably, the once peaceful heart thumping, rippling all around, difficult to calm.

Is he really little Chen?

He did not feel like a close relative, but rather an unfamiliar one--- she felt a peculiar feeling she had never felt before.

He was the first one to see through my heart, making me feel that I wasn't alone. And yet, again and again, he stirred up the heartstrings from the bottom of my heart... but now, his brilliant rays became more dazzling. He is... what kind of person is my brother really? He is a relative, why then does my heart beat faster whenever I see him... and remain difficult to calm.

What is this feeling?

At that same moment, Ye Wei and Wang Wenshu were both perspiring heavily, mouth dry, and tongue hot, almost kneeling over in the hall from the amount of people...

"Superior Zhuge, friendship is friendship, but my daughter, compared to yours, is better in terms of beauty and talent. Young Master Ye will never fancy her, so don't waste your efforts. Please leave early."

"Utter rubbish! Your daughter is not fit to compare with mine. I've even brought her token of love, how dare you argue with me?"

“You two stop arguing. For an event such as this we must take heed from the order of arrival. I arrived here first, one step ahead, so you have no right to argue.”

.....

The grand hall of Ye Family, once a solemn and respectable, has now become a marketplace. Important ministers of the imperial court were becoming more and more like hawkers, using any means to market their own daughters... There was nothing to be done. The Ye Family was classified as a family with a very good moral standing and reputation, plus they produced such a genius favored by the Emperor. Marrying into the Ye Family would guarantee nothing but pleasant dreams in the future. However, this was secondary to appeasing their spoiled daughters, used to their high living standards, who proclaimed that in this lifetime they would marry only the son of the Ye Family. So long as they could enter the Ye Family, they were very much willing to be his concubines.

Ye Wuchen’s performance, in the point of view of daughters who usually stay in their homes, was monumentally outstanding to the point of considering him a celestial being. Even Lin Xiao’s achievements were comparably almost nothing, and other young talented men accounted for even less. With such a perfect man, these young women of high standards would no longer be willing to marry other men.

As a result, majority of the fathers rushed over for the exact same reason.

Wang Wenshu thought angrily, ‘What of before? All those years I went to all these families to propose marriage, but one by one you avoided me like a plague. Now, hmph... you would know what is meant by having eyes unable to see. Why don’t you see whose son he is?’

Of course, she would not say these words out loud. She could only give a bitter smile while dealing with them, “Gentlemen, please hold your horses. This matter will be personally decided by Chen-er. He will be here soon.”

Finally, Ye San, who was commanded to call Ye Wuchen over, came running with his head sweaty and without a shadow of Ye Wuchen. Wang Wenshu asked with some anxiety, “Where is Chen-er?”

“Madame, the servants from his courtyard advised me that he went out for a

stroll and will be back in the evening.”

“This...” Wang Wenshu was startled. Ye Wuchen must be deliberately avoiding the event by reacting so fast. She addressed the room apologetically, “Gentlemen, Chen-er just went out, so this matter... Why not, once he comes back in the evening, I will ask his opinion for each of you. By tomorrow, we will give word to each of your houses to inform you of the outcome. How about that?”

“Haha, good! Your son even displays his hidden affections for the daughter of the Hua Family in front of a whole crowd, so he is probably a romantic young man. He will like my daughter. I, Ji, won’t trouble you anymore. I’ll take my leave.”

Since one person had started to leave, there was no room for others to push the matter further, and one by one, they each left. After sending them off, Ye Wei and Wang Wenshu were already perspiring all over, and the one who was actually the head of the entire Ye Family, Ye Nu, had already escaped without a trace upon his witnessing the situation.

Back in the grand hall, Wang Wenshu sat down, heaving a long sigh of relief, and then said, “It’s really troublesome this time, Chen-er had inadvertently caused so much trouble with these ladies. Let’s see how he will handle them.”

“.... I’m thinking, if Chen-er marries all these ladies, the power of our Ye family would expand to a very formidable level.” Ye Wei said, touching his nose.

Wang Wenshu spat lightly, displeased. “Marrying so many ladies, Chen-er might tire out. Moreover, based on Chen-er’s excellence, as a mother, I really don’t like such ordinary ladies. No one will be a suitable match for Chen-er; however, the young lady of the Hua Family is pretty good.”

“Superior Yu has arrived!”

The teacup in Ye Wei’s hand swayed and nearly fell. Wang Wenshu’s whole body welled up with the feeling of powerlessness, so weak as though she couldn't stand up anymore.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 82

Heavenly Star Chapter 82: Hidden Plan

“Sister, I’m hungry.”

“Go eat.” Ye Shuiyao said without lifting her head, her gaze still fixed at the two lotus flowers drawn by Ye Wuchen a few moments ago. Even she could not understand why she insisted on being taught to paint Twin Lotus Flower on One Stalk.

“This... me and Xue-er would like to have a meal with sister, right here. Can we?” Ye Wuchen said impatiently, like the behavior of an attached younger brother.

Ye Shuiyao laid down her brush, taking small steps out of the room, a subtle fragrance wafted from her fluttering light blue skirt. This rich and mellow fragrance of a woman caused Ye Wuchen’s heart some loss of control. He couldn’t help but think of that night; that beautiful body, so beautiful that it was suffocating... and the feel of it....

When she returned, her hands held a wooden tray full of food. She set it down in front of Ye Wuchen and Ning Xue. All her meals were delivered by female servants, and she very rarely ate at the same table as the rest of the family. The more time passed, the more it became the usual practice between her and the whole family.

“Eat.”

“What will sister eat?”

“I’m not hungry.”

“..... It would be better if I asked Xiao Lu to secretly deliver mine and Ning Xue’s food. They won’t notice.”

.....

The small table which was usually only occupied by Ye Shuiyao is now seating three. Wuchen and Ning Xue squeezed in together on one side. On the other side, Ye Shuiyao bent down poised as she supped. Ye Wuchen completely fills small bowl in front of Ning Xue food. Already used to being spoiled by brother, she lightly chewed her food. Most of Ye Wuchen’s attention was fixed on Ye Shuiyao’s face while the corners of his lips curled upwards.

“Stop staring.” She said lowly when she could no longer stand his gaze.

“But it’s nice to look at you while you’re eating. I must say, sister, you are pleasing to watch at all times. Don't you agree, Xue-er?” Ye Wuchen said smiling.

“Yeah! Sister is the most beautiful.” Ning Xue said in a loud and clear voice.

Ye Shuiyao went silent while her heart started beating faster.

“Sister, do you normally dine alone, away from the other family members?”

“..... It has become a habit.”

“Then Xue-er and I will come by to visit more often, is that okay?”

Ye Shuiyao lightly moved the white-jade chopsticks in her hand, seemingly not to have heard what was said. After a long while, Ye Wuchen finally received an “Okay” in response, the sound so soft he almost missed it.

For the entire afternoon, Ye Wuchen stayed in Ye Shuiyao’s room, painting comfortably and leisurely. Completely ignorant to what his parents had been dealing with. Both mentally and physically exhausted, their facial expressions have totally become stiff.

On the other hand.

“Anointing the Head with the Purest Powers? The God of Sword really had such a capability. Hmph. So that’s the way it is. No wonder he could acquire such astonishing strength and talent in a very short time. The God of Sword really cared about this young child though, for what purpose?”

“This, your subordinate doesn’t know.”

“Then why doesn’t he fear fire?”

“According to him, the God of Sword had let him eat some round thing, enabling him to be unaffected by water or fire.”

“So that’s the reason. Indeed he’s the God of Sword, to have possessed such a magical object. But to be able to conceal his breath, how did he do that?”

“They didn’t mention anything about it.”

“Hmph. Ye Nu and Ye Wei both command very strong powers in the battlefield, yet they don’t get involved too deeply into military skills. It’s normal to not have a thorough understanding on this matter. However, since the young child of Ye made this knowledge known to you, it means he is not suspicious about you, nor does he have cause to be. Even if he is clever, he could not know that you have been part of this flawless plan which we’ve been planing for more than ten years now. Your presence and contributions all these years has only caused him to dislike you. From now on, you must stand firm on your current position in the Ye family. Avoid close contact with him as much as possible, refrain from any more conflicts, and have the mind to stay out of his way.”

“Then master, what will be your next move?”

“Ye family has been loyal and devoted for generations. They have amassed countless outstanding military services, their popularity is as bright as the midday sun, even surpassing my own imperial household. If they intend to revolt, from just their military prestige and control of the military powers, even the Royal Family will not be able to counter it. Although we know where their loyalties lie, we cannot be at ease. This... leaves the Emperor with no choice. The Ye family is becoming a problem, but openly targeting them is ill advised, especially with regards to Ye Wei and Ye Nu. Instead, we must do our best to protect them. Tian Long Nation still has need of them, without their presence, our biggest threat—the Gale Nation—will be wild with joy. The original plan was to let you take over the Ye family quietly and ease my worries. But the Ye Family had unexpectedly produced this talent. If the Ye Family continue to prosper under his fame, then this will cause me extreme worry and no end of trouble. He must be eliminated!”

“What should your subordinate do?”

“I don’t need you to do anything. I’ll find someone to contact the number one mercenary—Tao BaiBai!”

“Tao BaiBai? Is he the so-called number one mercenary Tao BaiBai who, in those years, even the Heaven-Level Master Ling Yun failed escape his assassination?”

“That’s right! Rumor has it that he is sure to complete any task given to him, never failing to succeed. The target this time is just a man with a tenth level of power, he won’t have any reason to refuse. This will be a easy task, even if the God of Sword tries to investigate, he will only find an insignificant scapegoat.”

“Master, you are brilliant! The young child of Ye will surely be unable to run away this time!”

.....

Late in the afternoon, Ye Wuchen and Ning Xue are finally back to their small courtyard, discovering Wang Wenshu carrying a long and drawn expression, sipping tea and waiting for them to return. She remained calm and unruffled in the midst of these busy times.

“Chen-er, Ning Xue, you have finally come back, sit down first. Xiao Lu, you may step out.”

Ye Wuchen had just sat down when Wang Wenshu started to ask, “Chen-er, do you know of what happened today?”

“Just a little.” Ye Wuchen said carefully. Recalling what he had witnessed beforehand, he still trembled with fear even now. Trying hard to stay calm, but ultimately failing. After all, he had never before encountered such a “violent” incident.

“It’s a good that you are aware. Some influential officials have taken the initiative to come to our Ye Family to propose marriage. I have already seen the daughters of these families before, they are all from very rich families, have beauty and good manners. It is normal for them to be sought after and receive marriage proposal at their doorsteps. I’m thinking, maybe you can marry all of them.”

Ye Wuchen's eyes opened wide, thinking something must be wrong with his ears. Waving his hands in a great rush, he said, "Don't... don't play jokes on me. It is impossible."

"Why not? I have an excellent son, a few more wives or concubines than normal is nothing. All of them said they only want to marry you and no other men. Don't worry about their wishes, it's really what they want. Besides, all of them have influence based on their family background, some of them are only daughters. If you marry them, nobody will dare to provoke our Ye Family in the future. Chen-er, you are not young anymore, you must have wives and concubines. You need not wait until you marry Princess Fei Huang in three years. For our Ye Family, sacrificing a just a little is enough."

Translated by: Fatty_Uncle

Edited by: seriouspotato

Heavenly Star - Chapter 83

Chapter 83: After all, He is Also a God

“This cannot be!” Ye Wuchen holds up the teacup, drinking a mouthful to pacify his mood. Now a little relaxed, he said, “You think of it as an easy task. If you think about it carefully, they have had very little contact with me before. Today is only because of the excitement from what they saw... and they are acting based on an impulse. These ladies are from noble families, their expectations are normally high, half of them are probably spoiled. If I were to agree to it, not only will they judge me as somebody avaricious and insatiable, scandalous by nature, but they may even think badly of our Ye Family. They will become resentful, and cause unending conflicts among themselves. So this is not possible. It will be better if you refused them all. Ah no, you must refuse them all.”

Wang Wenshu thought for a few moments before nodding. “You are correct. As a mother, I also thought this as inappropriate. This was your father’s idea. For me, these women are not suitable with my Chen-er.”

“.....”

“Chen-er, tell mother the truth. Do you really fancy the daughter of the Hua Family?” Wang Wenshu asked dubiously.

“Yeah. Love at first sight.” Ye Wuchen answered without hesitation.

“But...” judging by his direct answer, Wang Wenshu did not know how to respond for a while. She hesitated a bit and looked at Ye Wuchen’s face, speaking carefully, “But she is already engaged to Lin Xiao of the Lin Family. Moreover, Hua Zhentian is not a person who goes back on his words...”

“Yes, I know. You don’t have to worry about it. Engagement is just an engagement. As for Hua Zhentian... No one has ever not broken a promise, he might have done it before. It has just never occurred to him to be in a situation

that forces him to break his promise.” Ye Wuchen said laughing. He seemed to already have a plan in mind.

Wang Wenshu suddenly tensed upon hearing this and hurriedly asked, “Chen-er, what are you planning to do?”

Ye Wuchen was still laughing and shook his head, “Don’t worry, I will not do anything that will cause harm to myself or the Ye Family. I would not bring trouble to our Ye Family. Besides, the Hua and the Lin Family marriage is not a desirable outcome for the Ye Family, right?”

“All right. That is your decision to make. I’m a hundred percent confident in you. You have free reign to do anything, but at any mishap, mother will be here to back you up. So long as my Chen-er likes the young lady of the Hua Family, even if we need to snatch her, we’ll do it.”

“Yeah!” Ye Wuchen nodded, feeling warmth bubbling in his heart.

“Tomorrow, mother will send people to go refuse these ladies.” While saying this, Wang Wenshu’s face showed some reluctance... a pity to lose all these possible noble daughters-in-laws after just a few words. “Furthermore, Chen-er, even if Yun-er is not my biological son, but since he is your elder brother, and he had rescued your father’s life, all these make him belong to our Ye Family. Our family is now inevitably linked to Yun-er. Although there are some misunderstandings between the two of you, don’t stay on bad terms with him. After all, we are one family. In the future, Yun-er might lend you a helping hand, to support this Ye Family.”

“Yes, I understand.” Ye Wuchen nodded.

“Then I feel relieved. Your grandfather will handle the matter concerning Yun-er. I have to go back, Xiao Lu will deliver your dinner.”

In the meantime, in Ye Wuyun’s room, Ye Nu repeated the same words, but totally opposite to Wang Wenshu’s smiling face. The expression he had was so dull that it had made Ye Wuyun palpitate and unable to say anything further, mostly nodding like a yes-man. Living in Ye Family after all this time made it impossible to not develop respect and fear towards Ye Nu.

Ye Nu stood up weakly, turned and made to leave. “Yun-er, I hope you

remember what I've said today. Also, your invitation has been found, it was found in the bed sheet under your pillow. The servants found it while cleaning your room. I had them leave it under your pillow."

Ye Wuyun was shocked upon hearing it, his face filled with doubt. He hurriedly proceeded to his bed, lifted the pillow. Just like that, he found an invitation card gilded with gold. After opening it, the top had three distinct words printed "Ye-Wu-Yun", exactly the same as what he had imagined.

Ye Wuyun was suddenly agitated. If it had been found somewhere else, it would have been explained away as being accidentally misplaced. But finding it in his sheets under the pillow... this evidently points to being purposely hidden there, right? And Ye Nu is not a person who would lie about this. Based on all the events, one would conclude that he hid his own invitation, to plant false evidence against Ye Wuchen by claiming that his invitation had been stolen.

"Grandpa, this is not what you think, there's something wrong with this situation." Ye Wuyun attempted to explain but could not find the correct words.

Ye Nu waved his hand, voice flat, "You don't need to say anything further. The one that belongs to Chen-er has been destroyed in front our eyes, you've seen it as well. Don't tell me he got yours and tried to fake everything. Men of the Ye Family, no matter right or wrong, takes responsibility for their actions." He sighed, then continued, "Every person has their own selfish desires. What you've done is natural behavior, a trivial matter not worth mentioning. This time, I'll consider it as if it never happened, and refrain from telling your adoptive parents. I only hope, that this kind of matter will not occur a second time."

Ye Wuyun's choked as if a large chunk of metal had been stuffed into his throat. Yet he knows that if he tried to defend himself, it would only result in a negative reaction from Ye Nu. He gritted his teeth and spoke with great difficulty, "Yun-er admits his mistake. This won't happen again in the future."

Ye Nu departed with uninterrupted footsteps and the room became silent once more.

Riiip!

Yu Wuyun tore the invitation to pieces. He almost want to look up to the sky and roar in frustration. Although this had been a small incident, but he felt

intensely humiliated as if he had just been toyed with like some pet monkey. His invitation would not have disappeared on its own, moreover, it would not grow feet and make its way under the his pillow. Yet this minor incident was enough to change Ye Nu's impression of him.

What is really going on here!?

.....

“Ye Qi and Ye Ba, tomorrow at dawn, send someone to go fetch two people for me. If I'm not present, please find a place for them here. If madam or master asks, just tell them I requested it.”

“Yes, Young Master.”

“Ye Ba, do you have all the items that I requested?” Ye Wuchen asked.

“They are already prepared in the small room on the east side.” Ye Ba said bowing his head.

“How much did you prepare?”

“Around five kilograms in total.”

“That's good. Take me there, I want to see.” Ye Wuchen stood, but paused in thought, then asked, “How old do you think Feng Chaoyang is this year?”

“He's...” Ye Qi and Ye Ba's faces went blank, Ye Qi thought for a while then said, “Young Master, Feng Chaoyang is said to be the youngest among the four Gods, whose age is less than sixty this year.”

“Not yet sixty?” Ye Wuchen muttered to himself bowing his head and continued talking to himself, “His age may have been achieved by force... after all, he is also a god.”

Translated by: Fatty_Uncle

Edited by: seriouspotato

Heavenly Star - Chapter 84

Chapter 84: Doesn't Kneel Before the World, Doesn't Kneel Before the Emperor Either

Upon entering the small room where the sulfur, charcoal, niter, kerosene and other miscellaneous items were kept, Ye Wuchen drove out Ye Qi and Ye Ba, instructing them to allow no one entry. Ye Qi and Ye Ba had no choice but to guard the door from the outside, their thoughts straying to guess at his plan.

About half an hour later, Ye Wuchen finally emerges but closed the door behind him, strictly commanding, "From now on, nobody is allowed to enter this room without my permission. In addition, it is absolutely forbidden to light a fire nearby for whatever reason. Do you understand?"

Ye Qi and Ye Ba simultaneously nodded, their heads full of questions but not daring question the command.

Sniffing the lingering smell of gunpowder from his body, Ye Wuchen furrowed his brows, "Have Xiao Lu deliver a new set of clothes for me."

"Yes, yes."

The early next day, the sky was still dark when Ye Wuchen opened his eyes. He slowly shifted Ning Xue, who was tightly wrapped around his arm, and quietly climbed off the bed.

He did not forget that he was scheduled to attend the Royal Court today, but this so called morning was taking place too early, causing him some confusion.

"Today the Lin family might make a public announcement to formalize their wedding with the Hua Family. Then exert their utmost efforts in showing off their influence. Some things cannot be rushed using force. You have underestimated both Hua Zhentian and I. One day is sufficient to take such a delicate woman like Hua Shuiou. Too bad this upright gentleman, Lin Xiao..."

Ye Wuchen headed out quietly to avoid rousing Ning Xue who is still sleeping soundly. Together with Ye Wei and Ye Nu they arrived at the Imperial Palace of Tian Long Nation.

Upon arriving at the main hall, they discovered it to already be full of civil and military officials. The party from the Ye Family has just entered when more than a hundred pairs of eyes shot for their direction. Majority of people among them had been witness to the Ye Wuchen's graceful performance yesterday. Some had not been present in the event due to some circumstances and are now meticulously observing this only son of the Ye Family who was rumored to be truly impressive.

Facing this kind of attention, an ordinary person would feel uncomfortable, expressions stiffening immediately, but Ye Wuchen simply lifted his head up, chest out, and entered perfectly composed. He positioned himself in a space near the end of the line on the right side, as if he did not notice them looking.

Only through his boldness had his impressiveness been made to the majority of the people, and they nodded their heads approvingly, even feeling a little amazed.

“The Emperor has arrived!”

After a sharp cry, the curtains lift open to reveal Long Yin striding forward with his head high, entering with dignity. Once he is seated on the gilded dragon throne, the officials immediately knelt down, like puppets on strings, simultaneously calling weakly, “Long live Your Majesty, the Emperor!”

In the entire main hall, the only one who remained seated is Long Yin. The only ones standing were the yellow-clothed palace eunuch beside Long Yin and Ye Wuchen who appeared as though not knowing what to do.

“..... You must remember, we possess the most respectable bloodline between heaven and earth, the most formidable strength. Aside from our own parents, no other is worthy enough for us to bow to, not even the world....”

An increasingly familiar voice echoed inside his head. Every time he came across an unusual situation, corresponding fragments of his memory would emerge from his mind.

Even the entire world was not qualified for him to kneel down to, there's no need to kneel to an ordinary person with the title of Emperor!

"Outrageous! Who are you? How dare you refuse to kneel before His Majesty, the Emperor!"

A sharp yell came from the palace eunuch. He obviously had never met Ye Wuchen before. Long Yin also knitted his brows, but did not say anything. The yell caused the officials to cast sidelong glances; suddenly, every gaze was focused on Ye Wuchen who looks like a crane in a flock of chickens.

"Presumptuous! By not kneeling, you do not show respect to the Emperor!"

The one who yelled this time is Lin Zhan, face full of anger. Ye Nu and Ye Wei's faces changed a little, then said in a low voice, "Chen-er, kneel down quickly."

Ye Wuchen shook his head, saluted and said, "Your Majesty, please forgive my rudeness. As my teacher had advised me before I left, the descendants of the God of Sword can only kneel down before the parents of heaven and earth. Wuchen's life was saved by teacher, and all my skills and arts were passed on to me by teacher. Even if I don't want to disrespect Your Majesty, at the same time, I don't want to disobey teacher's instructions, otherwise I will not be able to face my teacher again. If Your Majesty wants to order my punishment, Wuchen will definitely not complain."

So that was the reason... they finally understood. At first, they were of the mind that this outstanding and wise young child could not have done something so unwise. It had actually been instruction from the God of Sword himself. Indeed, in the point of view of a "God" who transcends the mundane world, nobody would be qualified enough to kneel down to. The God of Sword did not even salute when he faced the late Emperor, on the contrary, the late Emperor respected him very much. It is not unthinkable for the God of Sword to enforce such rule to his one and only descendant, and it is reasonable and fair for Ye Wuchen to abide by this rule. If he were to ignore his teacher's instructions when facing the Emperor, people would despise him instead.

"Hohohoho! So that's it. Since it is a rule given by your teacher, you will not be blamed. I'll give you special permission exempting you from kneeling down before anyone in the Tian Long Nation. This will serve as my show of respect to

your teacher. Without your teacher, there would have been no auspicious and peaceful Tian Long Nation.” Long Yin said gently.

Yet another important favor bestowed upon Ye Wuchen. He saluted appreciatively. “Wuchen thanks Your Majesty for your grace!”

“Your Majesty, your humble servant would like to speak his mind. I think this matter is really inappropriate. This rule has been handed down for a thousand years in Tian Long Nation. How can it be abolished because of him? Moreover, the young child of Lin had also humbled himself as an ordinary person to respect Your Majesty. This is simply a rebellious act, looking down on the Emperor’s might!” Lin Zhan yelled as his emotions stirred.

Upon Lin Zhan’s mentioning of “protecting the standards and the Emperor’s prestige”, there came a sudden transformation in the atmosphere that caused several pairs of eyes to flash in anger. Even Long Yin’s face appeared to be displeased while Lin Kuang unobtrusively nudged.

All of a sudden he realized he must have said something wrong, but thinking through the words that he had just said, but he could not find which part of his words were mistaken.

Seeing his still puzzled look, Lin Kuang hid the anger in his mind. Promptly stepping forward to speak. “Your Majesty and all superiors, please calm down. In the years when Tian Long Nation faced its calamity, my son happened to contract a serious illness for three years. Your Majesty and the superiors here must have heard about this before, so that’s the reason why he had spoken words of disrespect against the God of Sword. As the saying goes, the ignorant man is not guilty of any crimes. My son took consideration of the prestige of the Emperor, forgive me for my son’s lack of proper discipline. I apologize once again, and beg Your Majesty’s pardon for my son’s words.”

The father and son of Lin family were both officials of the same Imperial Court. Among hundreds of officials, their power was sufficient enough to hide the sky with one hand. Today was the first time that Lin Zhan had witnessed Lin Kuang lowering his stance. He now realized that his words had sparked the anger of the crowd, hence he stepped forward to hurriedly repent and admit his guilt.

“If not for the God of Sword, my Tian Long Nation might have been completely

defeated by the Gale Nation! If not for the legacy of the God of Sword, do you really think that the Gale Nation has not invaded our Tian Long Nation for the past twenty years just because of the Ye and Hua Families? At most you will be punished for disrespecting me, but if you disrespect the God of Sword... If this matter were to spread, you, Lin Zhan, might suffer from being cursed and spat on!" Long Yin said sternly.

"Your humble servant deeply apologizes for his mistake!"

"Since this was unintentional, I will drop it. You may all rise."

Heavenly Star - Chapter 85

Chapter 85: Leng Ya Mother and Son

After repetitive expressions of gratitude, the civil and military officials stood up in unison. They aligned themselves to neither side to remain uninvolved. Ye Wuchen's face composed, his thoughts wandered. Apparently, Grandpa Chu had a good reputation in Tian Long Nation for singly rescuing the entire nation. Could it be that the so-called God-level indeed held such extremely high levels of strength? Furthermore that Long Yin, the better he treated me, the more it indicates that he had strong intentions to kill me. His so-called betrothal to the princess seemed like a particularly special favor, but in reality..... if the person died, then the princess would not have to get married. So the so-called special favor would not only disappear, but it would keep the entire Ye family indebted to such a "favor" compelling them to do their best efforts in protecting the Tian Long Royal Family.

"Ye Wuchen, step in front to receive the command."

"Yes!"

"Please accept the Mandate of Heaven, the Imperial Order of the Emperor... bestowing the title of third rank marquis, a reward of a thousand pieces of gold, thirty thousand pieces of silver, three boxes of jade artifacts, and a marquis residence for one. Furthermore, the granting of the marriage with Princess Fei Huang, to be completed when Princess Fei Huang has reached the age of sixteen. With the blessings of His Majesty! Wuchen of the Ye Family, please receive this Imperial Decree."

.....

Stepping out of the main hall, the sky shone brightly outside. Ye Wuchen yawned, then asked Ye Wei beside him, "Princess Fei Huang is?"

"You've already met her." Ye Wei said with a smile. How could he forgot the

incident where Ye Wuchen had offended Long Huang-er previously. It was known to everybody in the entire palace because of this little chaos-starting princess. However, from the beginning to the end Long Yin did not involve himself in this incident, so this matter had been left unsettled.

“Oh, so it was that little princess.” Ye Wuchen shrugged, feeling listless. Long Huang-er did not have any of the graceful and honorable traits that a princess should have. Obviously a spoiled, crafty, and unruly girl. This kind of girl can only be kept for amusement, but definitely not fit to be a wife.

“Princess Fei Huang is the most favored daughter of the Emperor. Her birth mother had been the most loved imperial consort of the Emperor, who died after Princess Fei Huang’s difficult birth. The Emperor suffered a lot of pain for a very long time. He dearly loved the daughter that was left behind, docile and obedient to her wishes. That is why her character was like that of a spoiled child, it should gradually improve after a few years.” Ye Wei said.

Ye Wuchen laughed nonchalantly, “I hope so.”

However, in his mind, he knew that the marriage was just a pretense. If he still remains with the Ye Family after three years, Long Yin will surely use any excuse to cancel this marriage. If the Long Yin allowed it to push through, he would no longer be a part of the Ye Family after three years. A month... or even half a month, after he does what he needs to do for the Ye Family, he would leave. He would not owe the Ye Family and neither would he agree to be the young master of Ye.

Back at his own courtyard, he saw someone standing beside the pond. The figure looked like a very thin ice sculpture. Before approaching, he felt a distinct coldness. Upon hearing his footsteps, the figure turned, staring directly at Ye Wuchen.

Ye Qi promptly approached them, groveling. “Young Master, you have returned. A while ago I just...”

Ye Wuchen lifted his hand to quiet Ye Qi then gestured for him to withdraw. He faced Leng Ya and said, “Take me to your mother.”

He did not have superfluous words for this kind of person. His kind did not need to be pacified or motivated, his kind only heeded facts.

Leng Ya headed towards a room in the east side, where Ye Qi and Ye Ba had originally resided. They had gone to fetch Leng Ya and his mother, after which they were not able to find a place for them and did not dare to act on their own volition, so they let the sickly woman lay in their room.

Leng Ya slowly pushed the door open, then headed inside. Ye Wuchen saw a woman with half a head of white hair lying on the bed. Upon hearing the sounds, she used her hands to prop up her body, and said weakly, "Xiao Feng, is that you?"

Leng Ya hurriedly go over to help her, speaking softly, "Mom, it's me. Don't get up. You must be tired from the journey, you need to rest."

"No need, I'm okay. I heard two sets of footsteps, are you with the one who has offered us shelter?"

After becoming blind, her other senses would certainly improve, particularly the ears. In addition, Leng Ya and Ye Wuchen purposely refrained from lowering the sound of their footsteps, so she could clearly hear them. Ye Wuchen smiled and said, "Auntie, it's good to see you. My name is Ye Wuchen, Leng Ya's friend. This is my home."

Leng Ya did not rebuke, or respond at all.

She was moved by emotion and responded, "Good... thank you for offering shelter to us mother and son. Can I call you Xiao Chen?"

"Of course."

Ye Wuchen approached, then his gaze swept across her face, after which he asked, "Auntie, what happened to your eyes?"

Leng Ya's mother forced a smile. "My eyes have been blind for ten years. I've already gotten used to it. The one and only hardship is, despite Feng-er always by my side, I am not able to see him and not know what he has become...."

"Mother..." Leng Ya calls out emotionally, his whole body twitching slightly.

Ye Wuchen suddenly reached out a hand, covering her both eyes. Slowly brushing over them, a colorless light permeated through her both eyes. When he withdrew his hands, he left without saying a word, even as he closed the door.

Leng Ya followed him with his gaze, making no sound or even attempt to stop his actions. When they were left alone in the room, he still did not understand what happened.

As soon as Ye Wuchen left, he turned around to look over his mother to suddenly discovered her once turbid eyes now clear. Moreover... he had felt her sight, as well as her gaze.

Leng Ya was suddenly stunned, directly looking at the pair eyes in front of him but could not believe the voice in his heart. Those eyes were also flickering with both surprise and confusion, mirroring his own thoughts that refused to believe that this was now reality.

A pair of withered hands trembled while reaching for Leng Ya's face, slowly caressing and stroking, "Xiao Feng.... You are Xiao Feng... mother can now see you, mother is finally able to see you..."

Leng Ya seemed like he was struck by a heavy hammer, his whole body shaking intensely. The next second, his tears gushed out like a small stream. Circumstances hardened him long ago, but now this cold-blooded man tossed everything away at this very moment to throw himself into the embrace of his mother and wailed. Unburdened after the ten long years of pain and resentment. It continued for a very very long time.....

"Struck by a sword, and judging from the wound, both eyes were blinded at the same time. The eyeballs stayed intact, but had completely gone blind. The level of difficulty she experienced was quite unimaginable. There were only a few people in Heavenly Star Continent who could do such a thing."

He can faintly hear weeping from the mother and son. Ye Wuchen returned to his room still pondering.

Upon entering his room, Ning Xue, still hiding under the quilt, opened her eyes. She extended both her petite arms, and said affectionately, "Brother, help me put on my clothes."

Ye Wuchen laughed, approaching the bedside to retrieve her clothes. "Xue-er, you are becoming more and more lazy."

"That's because I like being dressed by brother." Ning Xue said softly, still

acting like a spoiled child. Ye Wuchen gathered her quilt bound body in his arms and helped her dress up.

Translated by: Fatty_Uncle

Edited by: seriouspopato and patrick_father_of_dragons

Heavenly Star - Chapter 86

Chapter 86: The Black Forest

“Xue-er, I have to go out in a bit. Later on, you should go over sister’s place to accompany her and have fun, okay?” Ye Wuchen helped her into the skirt.

“Can I go with you, brother?” Ye Ning Xue asked, longing for an affirmative.

“Not this time. Don’t worry, brother will be back really soon.”

“Okay. I will wait for you to come back.” Ye Ning Xue replied obediently. She would not allow herself become a burden to him.

After having breakfast with Ning Xue, Leng Ya finally comes out of his room. His breath is now calm and without any trace of his earlier weeping. The gaze he shot at Ye Wuchen is noticeable warmer, maybe even a little appreciative.

“Your mother’s body is still weak from your long journey, her diet has been unhealthy, along with her depression. However, there are no hindrances anymore, just take good care of her health for half a month, and she will have a complete recovery. There won’t even be any lingering vestiges of the illness.” Ye Wuchen said, “On the other hand, I shall have my people find a place in the madam’s courtyard for your mother to stay. It will be good for her to have interactions with other women of the same age, and they can become companions.

Leng Ya fiercely lifted his head, his gaze fixed on him, “My mother and I are both from the Gale Nation. Your Tian Long Nations hates people from the Gale Nation, and your Ye Family killed the most number of people from the Gale Nation. If you continue to treat us like this, not only your family, though you have yet to inform them, but even other people will despise you.”

“Oh? And I had come to believe you had no sense of forethought,” Ye Wuchen said playfully at him, remembering how he had ruthlessly told Leng Ya of his

foolishness yesterday, “Though you are still inexperienced.”

“Hmph.”

“Don’t you worry, I will let you stay here in Ye family. Your mother as well since she is after all, from Tian Long.”

Leng Ya narrowed his eyes, now speaking coldly, “What do you mean? How did you know?”

“I guessed as much.” Ye Wuchen turned around, “You must remember that you promised ten years of loyalty to me. Within these ten years, you should never refuse any task that I have assigned to you. I have already healed your mother’s eyes, you should have no reasons to doubt me! Now, follow me.”

Leng Ya followed after him without responding.

Leaving the house of Ye, they proceeded east, passing through noisy crowds of people until they reached the east gate of the Tian Long City, a first for both of them. Ye Wuchen still did not cease his steps, rather, he passed through the city gate, and continued on eastwards. From beginning to the end he never made any remarks, not even to turn his head, using only his eyes to sweep over the places they passed. Leng Ya followed obediently, keeping quiet. He knew that if they continued to proceed further in this direction, they would reach a certain place. Almost everyone in the Heavenly Star Continent knew that this place was forbidden.

Continuing on eastward, the number of people was significantly less. There had been an expansive road here twenty years ago, and it was now a large neglected area of wild grassland, almost nobody passed by this place anymore. They travelled on foot for another two hours when a pitch-black forest appeared before their eyes.

“Do you know where this is?” Ye Wuchen finally opened his mouth, but did not slow his steps, still proceeding forward.

“.....”

“The name of this forest has long been forgotten. Once, the plants here were as green as can be but had turned into this dead-like grey color in the last twenty years. In the deepest parts of this forest lies a tower where terrible villains called

the Devil's Trap Pagoda are locked in, but ever since the prison welcomed a certain individual, the entire area transformed into what it is now. This kind of terrible transformation caused people to stay away from this black forest." Ye Wuchen said gently, his footsteps did not reveal the slightest degree of hesitation, as if the forest they were approaching was not the same black forest he was talking about.

"A Cursed Woman." Leng Ya said in a low voice.

"That's right. If I were to bring you to this Devil's Trap Pagoda, would you dare to enter?" Ye Wuchen said flatly, his manner of speaking did not contain any implications of a joke.

"Yes!"

Ye Wuchen shoots him a glance, shaking his head, "What a boorish fellow! Did you know that numerous individuals exceeding your power by ten or even a hundredfold have entered but never came out. If you have nothing to lose, you may recklessly dash inside, you will only die at the very worst. However, if you died, who would take care of your mother?"

"....."

"If you are not prepared for death, don't gamble with your life. Even the bravest of men can be despised."

Advancing a step at a time, Ye Wuchen eventually set foot in this place that would have caused anyone else to flinch back. Nobody had dared to enter this black forest for many years but Leng Ya followed without fear.

This place was strangely quiet; no birds chirping, no beasts roaring, not even the sound of the wind. A murky smell filled the air, weighing heavily in the air making it difficult to breathe.

"An air of death!" Ye Wuchen was talking to himself, his brows lowered.

His charm of immunity to the six elements—water, fire, wind, thunder, earth and death—could easily allow him to manipulate and resist them, the element of death included. Although the death was not so potent in this place, too weak that the life of an ant still persisted, but it was indeed the air of death. According to the rumors, the deeper they went, the denser the air of death became. The

very center of the forest emitted the air, which must be coming from the Devil's Trap Pagoda!

Due the thin presence of the death element, the vitality of the trees in the area was not completely lost. They had twenty years of imperceptible influence to become adapted to the element of death and eventually transformed its hue into this greyish black.

Ye Wuchen's immunity to the six elements meant he was not afraid of the air in this place. This density would not affect Leng Ya much either.

Ye Wuchen's eyes were like firelights, sweeping through every tree before him, using his extraordinary memory to remember the position of the trees, silently counting the distance that he had traveled.

The further they proceeded inward, the more oppressive the atmosphere became. It was definitely still daytime, but in here, it already seemed like the beginning of the dusk. The two of them could not help but quiet their footsteps, unwilling to break the deafening silence.

A noise sounded when Ye Wuchen stepped on the dried branch of a tree. All of a sudden the dark underbrush stirred restlessly, and a black rabbit quickly fled, in the blink of an eye it disappeared in the shade of a tree ahead of them.

An animal could not have exist in this place. Ye Wuchen's mind was somewhat astonished. The life force of the animal fell short a plant's, and their reproductive capabilities were much weaker as well. Under the influence of the air of death their life force would have slowly dwindled until death came. Yet the few animals that survived clearly showed natural immunity to the element of death, and would likely be able to pass on this capability, possibly becoming more distinct when they passed the trait on to their succeeding generations.

"Your childhood name is Xiao Feng?" Ye Wuchen, who has been silent, suddenly asked.

"Yes." Leng Ya answered.

"Your mother's family name is Leng?"

"Yes."

“Your father’s family name is Feng?”

Leng Ya abruptly halted his footsteps, both fists clenched tight, and his breath grew as cold as a blade in an instant.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 87

Chapter 87: Probing

“Feng Chaoyang must be your father then? The age disparity is questionable, but other than that, everything fits. Someone who managed to obtain the God of War’s weapon as well as escape the Gale Nation without any injury. Plus your cold and detached manner, impulsively doing things without considering their consequences, even your refusal to be controlled by others, you aren’t weak yet you are not conniving, you would have had to achieve that through other means. Everything points to you being related to Feng Chaoyang. Tian Long’s Emperor should have been able to infer as much, which is probably why he has been secretly trying to capture you.” Ye Wuchen explained indifferently, his footsteps never stopping.

Hatred sparkled through Leng Ya’s eyes, he gritted his teeth as he followed closely.

“You must have harbored a grudge against your father, because no one has heard of the God of War having children. Apparently, you and your mother’s existence were not recognized. If I were to guess, your mother’s blindness must have been personally done by your father. Otherwise, even if you were forced out of the Gale Nation, you would not necessarily hate your father this much.”

“He is not my father, he doesn’t deserve it!!”

Drip.

After a violent howl, a nondescript sound followed as red liquid dripped from Leng Ya’s clenched fists. His fingernails had embedded themselves deeply into his palms. He thought that, by leaving the Gale Nation, he would leave behind his past and that person in particular. What he did not expect was Ye Wuchen uncovering and understating the scars that he had taken great efforts to forget.

“He is almost sixty and you, barely twenty. You are more likely to be his son.

Not a grandson because then, you would not exist.”

“Even though I’m not aware what Feng Chaoyang means by hiding your existence, I also have no idea what had happened between the two of you. However, escaping is what a coward would do. I hope that, after your mother’s condition improves, you will return to Gale Nation to make use of three of the ten years I am owed to complete a task for me.”

His request was met with a long stretch of silence with the exception of the sounds of their footsteps as they walked through the black forest. Along with their steps, the air of death grew stronger and stronger, furthermore, no other animals had appeared. Ye Wuchen’s eyebrows started to scrunch up. After half an hour, Leng Ya’s head was still half lowered and his mouth kept silent, seemingly not to have heard Ye Wuchen’s earlier remarks. Or perhaps he was still struggling whether to listen and obey to the order of returning to Gale Nation. He was grateful, but still very reluctant to go back. To repay the kindness he was shown, he was willing to be a family servant, a courtyard protector, even kill if he was ordered to do so until he had repaid the kindness. He did not expect that he would be asked to return to the Gale Nation.

“Alright, it’s here.”

Ye Wuchen finally came to a stop, his gaze fixed upon his feet. Leng Ya followed him exactly and ceased his steps. Looking around their dead surrounding, he became puzzled. He had no idea of his purpose here, but he refrained from asking further.

Ye Wuchen extended his right hand; a faint yellow light radiated from the hollow of his palm. He followed by flicking his wrist and the black earth underfoot exploded, forming a small crater.

Leng Ya’s heart jumped. He recognized this to be one of the most basic Earth Binding Enchantments—“Earth Explosion Technique”.

He had been witness to the man’s mastery of the pen and sword. And now, Earth Binding Enchantments. How many more tricks does he still have hidden... and he was his junior, age-wise, but he had already acquired a great deal of achievements.

Ye Wuchen squatted down, extending his left hand this time and the pitch-

black ring of the God of Sword flickered faintly before a tightly bound, white parcel, no more than half a foot, appeared where the ground had erupted.

Leng Ya startled, “A storage ring?”

“Is this thing really worth so much amazement?” Ye Wuchen used his hands to shift the soil until a thin layer covered the white parcel. Due to the excessively bleak surroundings and the greyness of the land, one would not be able to locate this spot if they did not examine it overmuch.

“There are only three of these rings in the entire Heavenly Star Continent.” Leng Ya said.

“Only three?” Ye Wuchen was surprised at this information, letting out a soft “oh” in acknowledgment. His thought back, woefully despising Chu Cangming. Only three in the entire continent, and he speaks of them as if they were just some common accessory... He might not have valued them but others certainly did!

Ye Wuchen had previously done research on the God of Sword’s ring. He faintly recalled that the ring has some power, something called “Void Space”. This kind of power is only possible when the seven natural elements were in perfect harmony. Creating a storage device like the ring required one to first have the ability to manipulate Void Space. Either a person had to simultaneously possess all seven natural elements, or seven different masters of each element with a deep level of connection with each other worked together. A special method was then needed to infuse an object with this kind of power. Using a ring to hold the power would result to a storage ring; using an earring would result to a storage earring.

Therefore, one must gone through enormous difficulties to produce this kind of item.

Ye Wuchen produced a long greyish string and coiled it around a not-so-thick tree beside the spot. He lifted his head to look at the sky for a moment, then said in a low voice, “Men and beasts rarely come here, furthermore, rain would not be likely in the next seven days.”

Leng Ya became even more puzzled, completely lost to what to recent events in the forest.

“Okay, you may now return home.” Ye Wuchen said.

“And you?”

“I’ll just go for a stroll.”

“Then why did you have me to come here with you?”

“I did not want to meet with any accidents, so I brought along a companion as a precaution. I suppose I worried too much. You may now go home.” Ye Wuchen said flatly.

Leng Ya turned around, and departed using their original path. Ye Wuchen did not make any further remarks and continued forward in the same direction, his footsteps were considerably faster this time.

The reason he requested Leng Ya’s company was naturally not due to caution, but to probe him. And based on the outcome, he had succeeded. On his journey back alone, it will be enough time for Leng Ya to think through the matters they had discussed.

“Master, where do you intend to go?” a sharp and clear voice came from the Nan Huang Sword.

“Let’s go to see the cursed woman.”

“What!?” Nan-er cried out in surprise, “You must not, Master, that sounds like a very bad idea.”

Ye Wuchen laughed softly, “Don’t worry. I’m not about to throw my life away, I just want take a closer. Every time I hear about this woman, my spirit stirs. I thought it might be some kind of premonition or hint from my special spiritual powers, so I need to go take a look.

“Alright, fine! Only just a look, you must not enter..... or else, or else Nan-er will have no one to rely anymore.” Nan-er said nervously.

“Don’t worry, I won’t deceive Nan-er.”

Heavenly Star - Chapter 88

Chapter 88: Frightening Eyes

Proceeding onwards, the area become more and more devoid of vegetation. Further still, small trees grew rare until only towering ash-gray trees remained, their numbers sparse. The further he walked, the thinning trees became increasingly darker and more withered.

“A single person was the cause of the transformation this place underwent—the Cursed Woman! She alone had slowly tainted this forest in the span of twenty years. Moreover, she neither ate nor drank in that time, but is obviously still alive to this day. Is she really human?” Ye Wuchen asked, puzzled.

“Surely not! Maybe she is a god who escaped to Heavenly Star Continent. Maybe even a god who controls the power of death.” Nan-er gracefully answered.

“God? Escaping to Heavenly Star Continent? What do you mean?” Ye Wuchen furrowed his brows when he asked.

“Yes, Nan-er never lies. Heavenly Star Continent is the human world and outside it, there is still the God Continent—the territory of the gods. Where the gods dwell, every one of them is more powerful than the god-level masters of the Heavenly Star Continent.”

“!!”

“Nan-er, how did you know this?”

“It is part of my memories. It emerged when I thought of it.”

“Continue what you were saying.” Ye Wuchen asked, brows lowering. He suddenly realized that this world was very simple just from hearing of the existence of this so-called “god” as described by Nan-er.

“Oh...Master wants to hear more? Then Nan-er will continue. Whether it was

Heavenly Star Continent or the God Continent, all of them were formed from the massive explosion of power that resulted from the battle of the Southern and Northern Empires. The God Continent was formed at the height of the chaos of the spiritual powers, while Heavenly Star Continent was born from latter portion of the chaos. The inborn physique of the people who populated the two continents vastly differed. Those who were born in the God Continent naturally possessed the power of a god, and were much stronger than those who were born in the Heavenly Star Continent. So as not to cause imbalance between the two continents, the clan leaders of the Southern and Northern Empire established certain rules and regulations before their disappearance. If there was no particular reason, people from the God Continent were not allowed to enter the Heavenly Star Continent, else they would suffer from a cruel curse! And if the Heavenly Star Continent encountered great catastrophe, the God Continent would have to provide assistance or the king of the God Continent would suffer a curse.”

“..... What kind of curse?”

“I’m..... not really sure. Seems like all kinds of curses are possible. For example, losing all of their god power, or not being able to return, or being unable to see and speak again, or a man might become a woman, or be transformed into a rock, or into a rabbit..... in short, all the scary stuff.”

“Do you know the location of the God Continent?”

“Let me think..... I don’t. Master wants to go and have fun?” Nan-er asked.

Ye Wuchen shakes his head, “Just out of curiosity.”

If the gods and the God Continent existed, Grandpa Chu and the children’s legends might have been real then. Their faces did seem like they were recalling something at that time. The white winged angel and the black winged angel from the Kingdom of God... .. Kingdom of God could be the God Continent. The white and black winged angels could be inhabitants of this God Continent. Based on what Nan-er had said, when they stayed in the Heavenly Star Continent too long, could they have been cursed?

Curse!?

White winged...

Ye Wuchen's brain felt a slight prickling. He halted his steps, cradling his head in his hands and held a his breath tight. A thought had started to form, some really important message. Despite how hard he tried to recall it, expending all his efforts searching for that specific memory that flashed momentarily, it was to no avail.

“What did I think of just a while ago?” He asked himself absent-mindedly.

He vaguely recalled Long Zhengyang's statement before: “Based on a legend, the Kingdom of God has a device that surpasses the power of god.....” Could the existence of the God Continent already be a well known fact in the Heavenly Star Continent?

Apparently, he unintentionally missed out on a lot of things.

He continued to advance while chatting with Nan-er. Like a metallic lock, Ye Wuchen is repeatedly left speechless after speaking to Nan-er..... Nan-er has a penchant for fantastic stories that nobody else seems to know, yet she is totally clueless of things that even a three-year-old would know.

At this moment, not a single tree could be seen. All other trees had withered at a crooked angle, leaving behind dead and shriveled trunks. In their line of sight was a thin image of their ultimate destination, after a hundred more meters, they arrived in front of the pitch-black pagoda.

Before their eyes was a fifty meter pagoda, the floor size of which was not overly large, yet it was still the cause of the desolation within a hundred meters. The density of the air of death in this place had reached frightening levels. A normal person would feel exhausted, limp and in pain. Within an hour, or two at most, their life force would be snatched away.

The pitch-black door of the pagoda was tightly closed, not even a tiny sliver of its interior could be seen. Ye Wuchen calmly stood before the door approximately ten meters away, looking cautiously ahead while simultaneously releasing his power to magnify his spiritual awareness, permeating through the door ahead. Carefully and slowly, he explored the inside.

“Nan-er, are you aware of the pair of eyes staring at us? Like the eyes of a viper.” Ye Wuchen focused his mind, his voice staying tranquil.

“Huh? There’s none. Nan-er doesn’t see anything. By the way master, what is a viper?”

Ye Wuchen remained silent, simply closing his eyes, striving to expand the scope of his spiritual awareness, searching for any living being.

But no matter how hard he tried, there was no response. Unwilling to give up, he took a step forward..... and another, until he was only one step away from the stone door.

Trying one last time, he completely released his spiritual powers. Still nothing. Just as he was about to give up, his mind suddenly produced a pair of dark eyes.

Very, very dark eyes, so deeply black, so frightening, the flickering black rays could cause people to shudder. Similar to the eyes of a demon, they carried a frightful air that seemed as if it would engulf his entire body.

He suddenly felt a sharp pain in his arms. Ye Wuchen was overwhelmed with shock to find that his arms were moving of their own accord, twisting as if being forcibly snapped off. His internal organs suddenly began to twinge, his viscera trembled from the pain of being twisted..... he turned pale with fright and withdrew his spiritual powers in an instant. The terrible feelings disappeared at the same time and his arms eventually dropped back down.....

Ye Wuchen turned around, escaping at the fastest speed possible until he was a hundred meters away. Only then did he turn around, eyes firmly fixed upon the pitch-black tower. Ever since he arrived in this world, aside from the time Ye Ning Xue had risked her life to steal heavenly beast eggs for him, this was first time he felt frightened. His heart was beating violently, even his back was wet with cold sweat.

No wonder she could still kill people even when trapped, her eyes were deadly. If not for his spiritual powers, had he faced her eyes directly, he might have been turned into ground meat by those eyes. This power... A Cursed Woman. What kind of person was she, a god?

Heavenly Star - Chapter 89

Returning to the Ye residence around midday, he was deep in thought the entire journey back, unintentionally bumping into several passers-by. Arriving at Ye Shuiyao's study, he was met with the figure of a woman who was concentrating on painting an emerald green lotus leaf, not noticing his arrival. Ning Xue was seated quietly on a soft chair, swaying her legs to and fro in boredom. Upon seeing his return, she immediately threw herself on him excitedly, hanging onto his body and refusing to let go.

Ye Wuchen slapped her bottom a few times before he carried her up and turned to face Ye Shuiyao, speaking a little loudly, "Sister, are you hungry?"

"Not hungry."

".....what would you like to eat, sister?"

"Anything."

While he spoke, Ye Wuchen's kept his eyes on the movement of Ye Shuiyao's hands. Placing Ning Xue down, he moved to stand beside Ye Shuiyao, reaching out for the hand in which she held the brush.

Ye Shuiyao's whole body trembled, momentarily forgetting the need to berate him or to break free.

"Sister, your painting technique is quite meticulous, doing so excessively would make the painting more stiff. To best portray a lotus, like the one that you have in mind, you would need to be more natural and smooth which would be easier to achieve by using just one stroke. Or else, it would not be a flower, but a simple painting....."

Ye Wuchen lightly covered Ye Shuiyao's hand, guiding her in gracefully painting the outline.

From the closeness of his breath and the warmth from his hand, her heart and

mind grew chaotic until she blanked out. She could no longer hear what he was saying, nor see what he was doing. Eventually, he leaves, taking Ning Xue along with him, and only then did she slowly regained her consciousness. The paper in front of her already had a beautiful and glistening lotus flower.

She absent-mindedly sat on a nearby chair. He could not restore the tranquility of her mental state for a very long time.

“What’s going on with me?” she faintly asked herself, trying to comfort her heart.

At this moment, the marriage between Lin Xiao of Lin Family and Hua Shuirou of Hua Family had become a common topic throughout the entire city. Enthusiasm of this level made it seem as if there was going to be a nationwide celebration. Ye Wuchen brought Leng Ya along, and while passing through a crowd of people, they heard many discussions. However, the more effort the Lin Family put into this wedding, the more they appeared to be in disarray in Ye Wuchen’s eyes. He secretly laughed, thinking he might just have overestimated Lin Xiao.

Leng Ya’s face remained cold, as if he were wearing a mask made out of dead flesh. Their current journey was still in the direction of the black forest, but this time the only thing that Ye Wuchen had told him was, “Dig a hole, and put in some knives.”

When they returned, it was almost dusk. This time, the look he gave Ye Wuchen was full of wonder, having no idea what this young master of Ye was up to. Having nothing to do in broad daylight except head towards that lifeless black forest to dig holes, using the excuse of needing the exercise to strengthen his body and cultivate his mind.

The next day, Leng Ya almost spat out blood.

“Go, take two buckets of manure, the more the merrier.”

If this person had not rescued him and his mother, as well as healed her eyes, he might have had strong intentions to stab him. Ultimately, he only gritted his teeth as he carried the two buckets, expression dark, and followed Ye Wuchen once more. The entire way, passers-by avoided their path once the smell assailed their nostrils. He wished very much he could squeeze himself into a crack in the

ground, or at least cover his face while on the road.

By the afternoon, at long last Ye Wuchen did not torment Leng Ya any more, but instead put on mediocre clothing before heading towards Tian Long's Hua family discreetly.

The residence of the Hua Family is much smaller than that of the Ye Family, the number of people in the household is also relatively less. The current master is the one and only Hua Zhentian. Compared to the Ye Family, the Hua Family did not particularly flourish, as the most apt description one could give the household was miserable. Hua ZhenTian is the only son from his generation and by the age of thirty was when he finally had a daughter. The main reason for the Hua Family's decline was his parents had passed away very early on, followed his wife who had died young due to an accident.

Hua Shuirou was Hua Zhentian's only daughter, only family, and also the one and only person he entrusted everything to. He loved her dearly and has spoiled her immensely.

"Where can I enter?" Ye Wuchen was stroking his chin in contemplation while circling the vicinity of the Hua residence.

For families like the Ye and the Hua, aristocratic families of great authority employed the services of great military forces whose achievements in battle numbered greatly. However, they had one obvious flaw. Though aristocratic officials have a lot of experts, they were never the best in the field. Even with the influence of the Ye Family, they only had one Heaven-Level Master Secret Guard. Generally, real experts would only be interested in honing their martial skills, refusing to have any connections with politics.

Contrary to them, some influential families have those experienced in magical arts scattered around every region in the Tian Long Nation. Even though they did not have military training, only pursuing the magical aspects, every single one of them could easily beat a hundred opponents. Their existence caused both awe and fear among the ordinary people. Families with such experts were few, not even the imperial family would want to provoke them, and they in turn would not provoke the royal family. The Ye Family could easily use their amassed forces to eliminate any families with magical martial arts, but the losses would be too

great. The military power of the Hua Family was lesser than that of the Ye Family, but there were rumors of the Hua Family possessing mysterious troops called the “Heavenly Mines and Earth Flame”, although not even a thousand men strong, each member had explosive strength and tremendous powers of destruction.

Ye Wuchen was able to leap onto a roof and vault over the walls of the Ye residence without being detected, sneaking into the Hua residence was not a very difficult task, else he would not have come today.

“.....My second young mistress really likes that painting, could you please let me meet with master Hua.”

Before the gate of the Hua residence stood a person dressed in servant's garb, risking his life by bowing to the guards of the Hua residence. It looked as if he would be faced with punishment should he not be able to fulfill his task.

“Our master is not here! He has already stated before to anyone who wishes buy it, it is not for sale. Please leave.” the guard said waving his hand.

“Brother, please just let me see master Hua.” His tone was begging while simultaneously squeezing a shiny piece of silver into the guard’s hands.

The guard accepted it discreetly and the face of the servant expressed happiness, but he hears instead a serious tone, “Our master really isn’t here. Even if he is here, he would not meet any who wishes to buy that painting.”

The servant opens his mouth, scowling miserably, “Brother, please tell master Hua that my young mistress would like to buy the painting for a hundred thousand pieces of silver.”

A hundred thousand!? The amount caused Ye Wuchen to flinch, thinking of how little these young masters valued their money. Even going as far as a hundred thousand pieces silver to buy a single painting..... there is much profit in this.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 90

“Our master left orders not to sell it for any amount. You must return.” The guard’s tone was steadily becoming impatient.

“Two hundred thousand. Two hundred thousand pieces of silver!”

The guard glared. With a quick flash of movement, his hands produced a black ball. “Master commanded us to give this to those who refused to leave.”

The servant pales at the sight of the small black ball, frantically retreating from it. Once he had passed a meter of distance, he shakily called back, “Five hundred thousand! Five hundred thousand pieces of silver. Is it still out of the question?”

The guard, now angered, pulled back the hand holding the black ball in a throwing motion and the servant immediately made himself scarce and vanished quicker than a hunted rabbit.

The guard looked pleased, placing the bomb back into its sack. A few moments of silence passed before he let out a burst of swear words, “What the fuck, five hundred thousand pieces of silver for a painting..... If I had known, I would have learned how to paint instead.”

Five hundred thousand pieces of silver was enough money for an ordinary family to live comfortably for ten lifetimes.

During his expressions of resentment, he failed to notice the white shadow more than ten meters away climb over the wall. Had he been looking at the exact spot, he might have still attributed it to a trick of the light or a momentary blur of vision.

Hua Shuirou’s nature is delicate and mild. Her heart clear as water and her innermost being was ultimately conservative as she scrupulously abided by the standards that all women should follow. A daughter must observe filial piety and depend on her parents. A mother must be compassionate and give affection to

her children. A wife must be docile and obedient to her husband, that he may not fear her betrayal. Such is the kind of woman that is thought to be the perfect choice for a wife.

And because of it, though her heart might have developed affections for Ye Wuchen, she would strongly suppress it and even blame herself for committing the mistake. She could not afford to disappoint her father who had chosen her future husband.

Ye Wuchen intended to pressure her to come to a decision. The most immediate way, naturally, is to compel her to fall from grace. Once she falls into the hands of a man, based on her nature, she would not be able to think of other men.

His spiritual powers swept through the residence, easily locating the Hua Family members. As expected, the Hua Family had only a few decent guards. But he is also aware that knows that the seemingly ordinary servants have each been trained in using firearms,. Anyone who dared to invade the residence would be eradicated.

Hua Shuirou is sitting inside her chambers. Unable to help herself, she takes out <<Twin Lotus Flower on One Stalk>> that she had already seen numerous times and slowly unfolded it.

From the tender and beautiful lotus flower to the dark green pond water and the image it reflected all were depicted to perfection. Although that marvelous blooming lotus flower from that time did not reappear, this painting is still an astonishing piece of godly work, so perfect and without a single flaw.

Looking at it for so many times now, she vaguely recalls the implications of the painting, causing her heart to beat faster. The figure of a certain man appears in her mind whenever she looks at the painting. His meaningful glances and his never fading smile occupied her thoughts at all times, for they would not go away.

The awakening of love in her heart felt vast and indistinct but also agony and a deep, deep guilt.

Though she knew that her future husband had been decided since six years ago, she had allowed herself to fall for another man. Her feelings towards Lin

Xiao had never been like the subtle feelings she has for Ye Wuchen, and now she cannot even remember Lin Xiao's face clearly.

She should not have accepted this painting, nor give him her flute. She had made many attempts to have the maid take the painting away, to discard it or to burn it. But every time she tried to speak, she ends up taking back her words. Every time she hands the painting over to the maid, her heart suddenly feels empty, as if she would lose something extremely important if she continued. How she feared that emptiness. As a result, she would immediately take the painting back and request to be left alone.

If the painting did not exist, perhaps Hua Shuirou's budding feelings for Ye Wuchen might have slowly faded in the midst of painstakingly trying to leave behind everything related to him. Ye Wuchen had affected her thoughts through this painting. Unless she threw it away, which was unthinkable, it remained a constant reminder of him, until she is unable to forget.

"Is it nice?"

A voice lightly floats to her ears, so familiar, like in a dream. Hua Shuirou nodded absent-mindedly, then she got abruptly alarmed. Hrrriedly turning around, she almost collided with the man's face. She stumbled back a few steps, finally seeing him clearly. For a brief moment, she did not believe her eyes, "It's..... it's you!"

"It's me. Surprised?" Ye Wuchen's face showed the same smile that invaded Hua Shuirou's mind repeatedly.

Hua Shuirou's head came up blank as she asked in alarm, "You..... How did you get in?"

"I wanted to see you, so here I am. Were you thinking about me? My Xiao RouRou." Ye Wuchen said smiling, at the same time admiring her frightened expression which looked so stunning.

Ye Wuchen calling her intimately caused her face to turn a tender pink, her heart began to beat much faster. She hid the painting behind her back and tried to make sense of the situation. "W-who was thinking of you? You must quickly leave or... or else I will call for someone. My daddy is quite fierce."

She had never before been alone in a room with a man other than her father and her chambers did not allow any men to set foot inside.

“Your daddy is currently not at home. From the tone of your voice, you seem to be worried about me, aren't you? Don't worry, your daddy won't rebuke me.” Ye Wuchen sat himself on one of Hua Shuirou's couches, lightly inhaling the delightful fragrance.

“You must leave immediately, or else I will shout.” Hua Shuirou retreated a step, her frenetic state looked pitiful.

The smile on Ye Wuchen's face disappeared. He sighed rarely and his voice came out somewhat desolately, “You dislike me?”

His expression caused her some alarm and subconsciously, she shook her head. “No.....”

“Then why are you driving me away?”

“Because..... this is my room, others are not allowed to enter.”

“Not even your future husband?” Ye Wuchen looks at her earnestly.

Hua Shuirou's eyes widened, unable to respond to the abrupt question.

“If you wish it, you will be forever belong to me, Ye Wuchen, alone. No one may interfere.” He smiled softly, every word loud and clear, resolute and decisive, pure and unquestionable.

Her heartbeats accelerated even more, so fast she thought it might jump out of her ribcage. This is not a fear, but she cannot understand why her heart would not stop beating so fast. She was suddenly reminded of the engagement between Hua and Lin Family.

She exerts effort to shake her head. “No, we cannot do this. You... if you still refuse to leave, I will start screaming.”

Heavenly Star - Chapter 91

Ye Wuchen raised his brows, slowly standing up from the couch, moving to stand beside Hua Shuirou. Hua Shuirou had barely felt anything as a white shadow flashed past before her body was being held tightly and she was now being carried off somewhere...

“Now, are you still going to scream?”

Sitting down on the soft bed, he wrapped Hua Shuirou’s body around his legs, placing his hands firmly around her slim waist.

This is the first time that Hua Shuirou was being held like this by a man and she reacted strongly to it for a few seconds. When she was about to try to struggle to break free, Ye Wuchen kissed her soft lips. He was savoring the sweet fragrance of her lips, aside from Ning Xue, he had not tasted another woman’s lips. He gradually became addicted to it and the kiss became more and more unrestrained.

Hua Shuirou’s mind went blank, her crystal-like pupils lost focus, as if her soul had been snatched away, allowing him to keep violating her. When Ye Wuchen reluctantly released her lips, she was still staring at him blankly, eyes filled with tears.

Finally, her head hung down, little by little until she was leaning against Ye Wuchen’s chest as she started to sob softly, shoulders trembling slightly. She was just like a sinful young woman, who could only weeping to vent out her grievances and guilt.

Her first kiss was snatched away by him in this strange situation. Aside from her guilt, her heart also felt frustrated, because she lost something precious. Even forgetting that she was still in his lap, her mind focused on this man who had just snatched her first kiss, making her feel like she was not pure and clean anymore.

Wetness began to seep through his clothes more and more obviously, making him realize that a woman's tears can indeed be accurately described as "overflowing". He did not say anything but gently hugged her, allowing her to vent through her tears at the loss of her first kiss.

But this turned out to be a very long process. As her soft body trembled slightly, though very minutely, it still pulled a reaction from him. When he could no longer hear sounds of weeping, Ye Wuchen used a hand to lift her delicate chin and softly said, "Not crying anymore? Then let's do it one more time."

His body leaned forward, covering two cherry-sized lips once more, one hand silently moving to her chest, holding a perked breast that fills his whole hand. For a sixteen year old, the size was really quite impressive.

Another round of attack finally caused Hua Shuirou to struggle with all her strength. No matter how hard she tried, she was not able to break free from his hands because her recent bout of crying had exhausted her. Ye Wuchen did not pay any attention to her struggling, too engrossed in tasting her. His hand rubbed against her breast gently, feeling her warm jade-like smoothness and her fierce heartbeat. Those small tender hands continuously pounded on his chest with no real force behind them, eventually she consumed all her strength and fell helplessly into his chest.

Hua Shuirou stopped struggling, like a lamb waiting to be slaughtered, allowing Ye Wuchen to draw out more fluids from her mouth, she even stopped resisting the hand groping her chest. Only her eyes continued releasing tears. She almost suffocated before she pulled her tender lips away from him. Leaning her head against his chest, she closed her eyes to the sound of his heartbeat.

"Don't cry anymore, you'll turn into a kitten if you continue." Ye Wuchen gently caressed her face, touching a hand to the wetness. She had suffered a great deal of guilt and only now was releasing all the tears that she had saved up.

"Why do you always take advantage of me?" she quietly murmured, her voice still a faint sob.

"That's because, in this lifetime, you are destined to be mine to tease, and mine alone." Ye Wuchen said gently stroking her hair.

"But, I'm already engaged....."

“Are you willing to cancel the wedding arrangement for me?” Ye Wuchen mumbled in a low voice, so soft it was barely audible.

Hua Shuirou’s small hand gently shifted around his chest, using her dreamlike voice she answered, “The past few days, when I close my eyes, all I can think of is you... I might be under your spell, right? Now that you’ve done this to me, how can I possibly be with another man.....”

An overly conservative nature, this was indeed what Ye Wuchen admired most about her. Hence, he made use of that trait to compel her to decide.

He laughed, satisfied. “That’s a good girl. I told you, so long as you are willing, from now on you will forever belong to me, Ye Wuchen. Your daddy will agree, the Lin family will also agree. Don’t think too much, and don’t worry about anything. I will handle everything. From now on, what your heart desires should be me alone, do you understand?”

“Yeah.....” she responded softly, likely a yielding kitten.

“Can you..... remove your hand first?” Hua Shuirou blushed. That hand which has been rubbing her right breast seemed to have some magical powers, making her whole body heat up, causing something on her chest to become erect against her will.

“Okay.”

Ye Wuchen removed his hand, but before Hua Shuirou could heave a sigh of relief, he quickly submerged his hand into her chest through the loose collar when she was unprepared for it. he was now cupping her tender breast in his hand directly without any barriers and gently played with it.

Hua Shuirou made a small sound, her already powerless body became weaker, and she was starting to melt. She twisted her body, the sensations becoming too hard to bear, the foreign feeling caused confusion in her heart, yet she did not resist. In the end she was fully conquered by him, she had already given up resisting him, and instead doing all she could to obey.

“Xiao Rourou’s breast is really fascinating, I couldn’t bear to let go of..... Can you let me play with it everyday?” Ye Wuchen said lowering his head, fingers gently pinching the tip.

Hua Shuirou's whole body lightly trembled. Not daring to lift her head, she simply used her lowest mosquito-like voice and said, "From now on I belong to you, you can do whatever you want."

Ye Wuchen's other hand pulls up her long skirt, exposing her white, jade sculpture-like legs. His hand travelled up her calf, pushing her skirt further apart and slowly moving up, gently caressing up and down her smooth thigh.

Hua Shuirou's whole body tensed, her legs tried to draw tightly together. Her heart beated intensely as she waited for him to violate her ultimate forbidden area. But that hand kept on enjoying only her thigh and did not take another step closer.

The gentle caressing continued for a long time but Ye Wuchen eventually let go of this compliant and obedient woman, carrying her powerless body to the bed behind him. Gently kissing her lips, Ye Wuchen smiled and said, "Rest well, I'll wait for your daddy to return. When he arrives, I will speak to him and propose the marriage."

Hua Shuirou gently nodded, her gaze following his every movement, until he disappeared from her line of sight.

The room felt absolutely empty with only herself in it. Despite being alone in this room for many years, she now felt frustrated and lonely like never before. Because now she was no longer by herself, her heart already had an unbreakable link. The moment he left, she wanted to call out for him and tell him not to leave...

Heavenly Star - Chapter 92

Goal accomplished. Everything had gone smoothly, just as he expected. If it had not proceeded as expected, he might begin to doubt his powers of clear vision. The day Long Yin requested Lin Xiao and him to compete in painting, he presented a painting. Long Yin wanted them to compete with the flute, he played the flute. If they had to compete through reciting poems, he would have made sure Hua Shuirou had a part in it. The fruits of today had naturally been dependent on the events of that earlier day.

Ye Wuchen secretly stole into the main lobby of the Hua residence and made himself a pot of tea as he leisurely waited for Hua Zhentian to return.

Hua Zhentian did not make him wait too long, in half an hour, the guards were calling out “master” from the direction of the main gate, followed by the distinct sound of stamping footsteps. Ye Wuchen puts down the teacup in his hand and proceeded to the doorway. He dashed towards the approaching Hua Zhentian, shouting, “Elder Hua, this youngster would like to ask you for some wine.”

Hua Zhentian’s bull-like eyes widened in surprise, completely unprepared for the sudden appearance. He immediately roared a thundering laugh, “Okay! Good fellow! I was actually afraid that you had already forgotten my promise to you. I was tempted to go to your house and kidnap you. It’s been a long time since someone had accompanied me to drink to my heart’s content. Since you took the initiative to come to our house, let’s get you drunk until you can no longer recognize your own mother, hahahaha...”

The arrival of Ye Wuchen had clearly excited Hua Zhentian. According to what he had said, nobody dared to drink with him. Hua Zhentian’s tolerance for wine was quite astonishing, even the rumors say that his capacity for liquor was like a bottomless pit. Those who drink with him always end up drunk and he gets upset with those who decline his offer for more drinks. Over time, people stop drinking with him. For someone who loved wine as much as his own life, he now only

drank by himself.

The two guards from the gate and the many servants who were busy in the front yard were all stunned like they had just seen a ghost. No matter how they looked at it, they could not see how Ye Wuchen had made his way inside... Could he have appeared out from the ground?

Sounds of clinking echoed loudly as Hua Zhentian personally carried two large jugs of wine, placing them heavily on the floor. The corners of his mouth drew back and he let out a mischievous laughter, “Young child of Ye, what kind of wine do you want to drink?”

You brought them out and then asked. Isn't it too late now? Ye Wuchen shrugged his shoulders minutely and said smiling, “To be able to drink to my heart's content with an outspoken and straightforward person like you, Elder Hua, naturally we must drink the most intense wine.”

Hua Zhentian laughed heartily upon hearing these words. He laughed so hard that Ye Wuchen, who had been sitting close enough, felt laughter vibrating through his ears and buzzing through his skull. He could not help but feel sorry for his obedient Xiao Rourou, whom he had taken possession of just recently. “Good fellow, I find that I'm beginning to like you. These two jugs are among the strongest wines from my collections—Drunken Hero. Are you satisfied!?”

Hua Zhentian feels a little disappointed after seeing Ye Wuchen easily nod and smile upon seeing them, being unconcerned about the two jugs and not even showing any fear. After the disappointment, his mood quickly shifts into a cheerful mood and showing all his teeth. His gaze on Ye Wuchen was heated, as if seeing his prey—could this fellow not only have the looks, the skills, the talent..... being good at everything and have the capacity to hold his liquor too? Fuck, this is what you call an all-rounder! Not even comparable to that guy from the Lin Family who collapsed after just two bowls of wine!

Ye Wuchen casually sniffed the wine, knowing immediately that this so-called “Drunken Hero” is actually just a little bit better than the Strong Sorghum Liquor that he knew of.

The two sat opposite of each other. A loud banging of two large bowls was thrown to the table. Aside from the bowls, there was nothing else on the table.

Hua Zhentian intended to solely drink wine with him—with no food to accompany the wine.

Drinking wine with a large bowl—Ye Wuchen has only seen this done on the television or read this from a novel. Even in the Tian Long Nation, only a few people made use of them. On one hand, only few had the capacity and boldness for wine, on the other..... using this for drinking was extremely inelegant and interferes with the good mood. However, for Hua Zhentian, he only wanted to drink wine, not taste it.

Hua Zhentian tore away the mud seal on the jar, the fragrance of the wine immediately assailed one's nostrils. Before the wine had been poured, light and graceful footsteps came through the doorway. Hua Shuirou had heard sounds of her father's return, after a bit of hesitation, she relented and came out of her room only to see him and Ye Wuchen about to start their drinking session.

Seeing Ye Wuchen now had a teasing implications as Hua Shuirou suddenly remembered the violation he had committed and red clouds immediately covered her entire face, all across her snow white neck. Her shyness had made her look even more lovely. Ye Wuchen could not help a quiet sigh. If he had really let such woman slip by, it would have been his greatest regret.

"Daddy, you are home." The well-behaved daughter lowered her head to utter words timidly and worriedly. She did not yet know if this man, who had deeply entered her heart, had already proposed.

"Haha, my good daughter, you are just in time. Your father has finally met a fearless young man. Quickly, come and pour us some wine. No matter what happens today, I will surely drink to my heart's content."

Looking at the two big bowls on the otherwise empty table, Hua Shuirou blinked her eyes and said, "Daddy, are you going to start drinking now?"

"Of course!" said Hua Zhentian while patting his belly impatiently.

"But, bowls as big as these, he... he..." Hua Shui Rou faltered, her eyes stealthily looked to Ye Wuchen from time to time. She clearly knew her father's capacity for wine and was starting to feel nervous for Ye Wuchen. Furthermore, her father obviously only planned to drink. Even if he could stand it, an average person would not be able to last..... bodily injury would surely ensue.

Hua Zhentian narrowed his eyes, letting out a mischievous laughter, “My good daughter, for so many years, this is the first time that you are concerned about another person. Don’t worry, I can see this young fellow is absolutely not a man that likes losing. Judging by his deceitful laugh, he is clearly not someone who intends to get drunk, instead he probably plans to get me drunk..... Hehe! I don’t think you can though.”

“Elder Hua you are quite heavy with your words. My capacity for liquor is very low, how can I be compared to Elder Hua? I came because of our prior agreement. I fear I might return home in my sleep.” Ye Wuchen said laughing. That face full of smiles almost give Hua Zhentian the urge to beat him up... Is this the face of someone who worried about going home drunk?!

Hua Shuirou stole another glance at Ye Wuchen. He bent the corner of his mouth, giving her a small smile to at least give her some relief. Hua Shuirou turned her head, as if being electrocuted, then furtively looked at her father’s expression, fearing that he would discover the abnormal behavior between her and Ye Wuchen. Even if her body and heart had already decided to belong to him, she, as a conservative woman, still had some remnants of guilt, like she had just eaten some forbidden fruit.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 93

The large bowls in front of them were soon filled. Ye Wuchen lifted a bowl with both hands without spilling a drop as the wine remained waveless and undisturbed. "This is my first time drinking with Elder Hua, so I should offer this bowl to you. For this bowl, I'll drink it to show my respect for you!"

He threw his head back and drank noiselessly. In an instant, all of it went down his throat, not a single drop wasted. Hua Shuirou's heart jumped upon seeing this. When Ye Wuchen put the bowl down, not a single drop of wine is left but he still kept his usual expression, not even the slightest bit of redness, the corners of his mouth even showed a somewhat smiling expression.

That burning hot sensation flowed from his throat went down into his stomach, before Wuchen used his power to slowly digest the alcohol, making it similar to drinking a bowl of fresh water.

"Good! Wonderful!" Hua Zhentian bangs his hand on the table and exclaimed in admiration. Doing the same with his bowl, he guzzled the whole thing noisily and puts down the bowl. Wiping his mouth and wishing for more, the corners of his mouth stretched in a laugh, "Fellow, you've become more and more pleasing to my eyes. Fuck, if you were born twenty years earlier, I might have become sworn brothers with you, but it seems impossible now.....hehehehe. I will accept being called 'elder' then. The other day I told you to call me 'Elder Hua', you thought it was just nonsense."

Hua Zhentian gritted his teeth silently..... Young fellow, to my surprise you even discreetly flirted with my good daughter. Do you really think that I am too blind to notice you two exchanging glances with each other?

Although she was already used to her father's crude way of speaking, Hua Shuirou was still a bit uncomfortable with it so she covered her ears. She tilted the wine jar to fill their bowls a second time. Ye Wuchen immediately lifted his

bowl, cordially saying, “This is my first time visiting the Hua residence, I should extend my etiquette as a guest, so I offer another bowl to this.”

“Haha, okay.” Both of them lifted their bowls and toasted, simultaneously draining the contents in one gulp. This kind of drinking method is enough to stupefy those who used small cups to drink and with accompanying dishes.

Hua Zhentian was most disgusted by those who use all sorts of excuses at the wine table. He had already flipped tables on numerous occasions from anger for that very reason. Ye Wuchen’s “enthusiasm” made his heart shout out with joy and judging by the way his face has yet to turn red and his heart never palpitated, his capacity for liquor was more than just unusually large. His heart could not help feeling regret at not meeting him earlier. How much joy had he missed out on?

Though, he will soon know the consequences of being too overjoyed.

Once again, wine was poured which Ye Wuchen again raised in a hurry. “Days before, I had used some unfit methods to luckily win over Elder Hua. The guilt is somewhat bothering me, now I apologize through this bowl of wine. I ask Elder Hua not to take it too seriously.”

Hua Zhentian stroked his beard, a little annoyed. “What unfit methods? It is your ability that enabled you to win, I have already accepted my defeat. If you say this now, it will make me unhappy! I punish you through this wine. Come on, drink!”

Bowls were raised, placed down, and filled once more.

“..... On that day, I was very fortunate to have Elder Hua’s help to finish that Twin Lotus Flower on One Stalk and win against Lin Xiao of Lin Family. This bowl I still offer to you, to show my gratitude.”

Hence, both have consumed yet another bowl.

Four bowls have now been consumed in succession. When Hua Zhentian puts down his bowl he becomes dazzled. Such strong wine, such big bowls. For an ordinary person, being able to consume one bowl was already considered a great feat. Hua Zhentian could count on one hand the number of people who were able to finish two bowls of wine with him. Currently, no one has been able to

finish three bowls with him—except for this Ye Wuchen who had now downed four bowls. Moreover, he finished them in succession, each time draining the bowl in one gulp. With this drinking method, even if he can still maintain consciousness, his throat and stomach must already be burning, which is not the most pleasurable feeling.

Yet Ye Wuchen was still calm and composed, laughing more and more like a fox. Hua Zhentian was even starting to doubt that the wine was going to Wuchen's stomach.

“Elder Hua exerts your utmost efforts to protect our Tian Long Nation. Everybody knows and respects this. This bowl, I offer to you to show my respect.”

“This bowl, I offer to you on behalf of my grandfather.....”

“This bowl, I offer to you on behalf of my father.....”

“This bowl, I offer to you on behalf of my mother.....”

“This bowl, I offer to you on behalf of Ye Qi.....”

.....

“Elder Hua, your capacity for liquor is quite astonishing. I respect you even more. This bowl, I drink to show my admiration.”

“..... The weather today is pretty good, so I offer another bowl with respect to this.”

.....

The emotions in Hua Zhentian's eyes were, at first enthusiastic, then alarmed, then frightened. His entire body felt like it has been set on fire, his face turned scary red, his head so dizzy that he can no longer distinguished the cardinal directions. When Ye Wuchen raised another bowl, his whole body trembled and his eyes rolled back. He collapsed unconscious after a loud plop.

“Daddy!” Hua Shuirou cried out in alarm, hurriedly going over to help him up. The weight of Hua Zhentian was like a pile of iron and Hua Shuirou tried but was ultimately unsuccessful in moving him a single inch. Ye Wuchen only laughed and walked in front to console her, “Don't worry, your father's body is unlike any

other person's. This wine may have caused him to collapse, but there is no harm to his body."

Ye Wuchen crouched with hands covering the pit of his stomach. He lightly circled the hand, slowly dissolving half of the alcohol content in his stomach. Under the puzzled look of Hua Shuirou, he easily cleared his head then went back to his seat, smiling.

As expected, Hua Zhentian who had passed out suddenly opens both eyes and stood up straight, frightening Hua Shuirou who had been caught off guard. She yelled out worriedly, "Daddy?"

Hua Zhentian seemed to not have heard her and stared blankly for quite a while. Then suddenly turned around to throw up violently, staining the entire floor with his vomit, the smell of alcohol pungently filling the entire room.

After throwing up, Hua Zhentian appeared like a sick old man, paralyzed as he lied on his side waiting for his mind to clear up a little. He turned, eyes fixed on the beaming face of Ye Wuchen, as if he was looking at a freak.

Ye Wuchen grabs the depleted jar, swirling it a bit and said, "There is still enough for another two bowls. Would you like me to offer another bowl?"

Hua Zhentian almost fell from his seat. No matter how much he liked wine, after drinking so excessively, he had a period of saturation wherein he will keep away from wine. At this point, even thinking of the word "wine" causes him to feel unwell. He was so sick to the point that he felt like he might throw up again.

For someone who had never been drunk or beaten in drinking for many years, and with him usually compelling other people to drink, Hua Zhentian would not easily be willing to accept his defeat and neither would he easily refuse. He clenched his teeth, after a while, he grinded out words from the gaps of his teeth, "You little monster, I will drink with you again after ten years."

"Oh? Why wait ten years?" Ye Wuchen asked, puzzled.

Hua Zhentian's face turned red and he forced out a cough. "We almost consumed all the wine, let's just call it a day, your capacity for liquor.....is pretty good. How the fuck did you train? Don't tell me that you've started drinking while you were still in your mother's womb?"

“.....”

Switching the topic off drinking, Hua Zhentian drew back the corners of his mouth laughing, “Young fellow of Ye Family, you did not just simply come here to have a drink with me, right?”

Ye Wuchen placed the wine jar back on the floor. “Elder Hua your vision is just like a torch, I won’t hide it anymore. I did not just come to have drinks with Elder Hua, but also.....” He paused for a moment to affectionately smile at Hua Shuirou. She shyly lowered her face and her heart began to beat faster. “To approach you and propose a marriage.”

“Propose marriage?” Hua Zhentian widened his eyes, momentarily unable to react. After a few moments, he suddenly slapped the table and stood up, shouting, “This won’t do!”

“Why not?” Ye Wuchen lifted his head and asked. His face still wore the smile that made Hua Zhentian want to beat him up. Hua Zhentian’s eventually roared, causing Hua Shuirou’s entire body to shake and pain to well up in her heart. Her eyes started to fill with tears.

Hua Zhentian pointed at Ye Wuchen’s nose. “Originally, I lost my bet to you, so I still owe you two conditions which have not been claimed yet. I am a person that keeps my word, so I won’t renege on a debt! But my daughter is the only exception! All my life, I have only this daughter. Without her, everything is meaningless. Nobody may make my daughter unhappy. My daughter already likes that young fellow of the Lin Family, she told me herself. Though you are more pleasing to my eyes, if my daughter doesn’t like you, even if the god himself proposed the marriage it would still be impossible.”

“Dad.....” Hua Shuirou lightly called out, her eyes were still misty but her heart was filled with warmth.

“Elder Hua do you mean that, if the one that Shuirou likes is me, you would not hesitate to cancel the engagement with Lin Family and fulfill our wish?” Ye Wuchen said, his smile becoming even more potent.

“It’s too bad my daughter is not interested in you.” Hua Zhentian waved a hand, yawned and said, “I have had too much to drink. I’m starting to feel sleepy. Young fellow you must now return home. Do not plan to chase after my

daughter anymore, or else even if you are pleasing to my eyes, I will not hesitate to beat you up.”

“Dad!” Hua Shuirou became worried and called out anxiously.

“Oh? My beloved daughter, do you have something to tell your dad?” Hua Zhentian turned around in concern.

Ye Wuchen smiled but did not say anything. He just sat there unmoving, secretly pleased with himself. He looked as if he did not know, though he most definitely did, but he wanted Xiao Rourou to say it herself.

“I.....I” Hua Shuirou lowered her head. Like a little girl who made a mistake, she mumbled and hesitated.

“What happened, daughter? Say something? Oh..... is it because he is here that you feel too embarrassed to tell daddy. Daddy will drive him away immediately.” Hua Zhentian lifted his thick, solid arms and prepared himself to beat someone up.

“Ah.....No!” Hua Shuirou hurriedly blocks him, using all her courage, she spoke in a very small voice, “Actually..... actually the person that I like is him...”

Saying these words had used up all of Hua Shuirou's energy. She turned around to try to cover her burning face and refused to turn back. Behind her, she heard a half pleased and half overjoyed laugh from Hua Zhentian.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 94

“Beloved daughter, dad has finally gotten you to express your true feelings.”

“Huh?” Hua Shuirou lightly calls out.

Hua Zhentian chuckled, “Beloved daughter, you are my daughter. How could I not know my own daughter? Ever since we came back that day, you look like you had lost your soul. During meal times your mind was always wandering. Yesterday you shut yourself in your room the entire day, and I had no idea what you were up to. A while ago, you were exchanging flirting glances with this fellow, you thought I haven’t seen them all?”

Hua Shuirou covered her face and let out a soft squeak, seemingly both embarrassed and happy.

“Hmph, furthermore.....” Hua Zhentian glared at Ye Wuchen, “This fellow must have done some shameful and shady business with my precious daughter. Did he secretly go inside your room earlier? Xiao San, the one guarding the main gate, was absolutely certain he didn’t see this guy come in, or else he would have told me when I arrived!”

“Moreover, if he didn’t use any trick, based on your character, will you even dare to ignore that bullshit engagement, and admit your affections for him? Daddy raised you, who would know your character better than your father?”

Ye Wuchen laughed but did not say anything. As Hua Shuirou was reminded of the earlier events, her face burned and she whimpered. Twice, she tried to protest, but could not find anything to say.

Hua Zhentian firmly glared at Ye Wuchen once more and said, “Daring to sneak inside to take advantage of my daughter, if you weren’t so pleasing to my eyes... if that fellow from the Lin Family had he dared to come in like that, I would break off his legs.”

He immediately shook his head, his face exposing a little smile. “But it is better this way. Not long ago, I even worried about how to make my daughter change her mind. Come to think of it, I don’t have to worry about it anymore. As for the engagement, hmph! For the sake of my beloved daughter, it will cost me nothing to have to break a promise once again.”

Since his contact with Ye Wuchen had been quite minimal, it was impossible for him to get to know the man entirely, but from the bottom of his heart he felt satisfied. He even regretted not having met him earlier, because he had been the only person who looked pleasing to the eyes. Though the main reason for accepting Ye Wuchen was because of his daughter. From his previous proclamation, if his daughter did not wish it, not even the Emperor himself would be allowed to enter the gates of the Hua residence.

When Hua Zhentian uttered the words “break promise”, Ye Wuchen had a look of determination flash past his eyes, without even the slightest trace of hesitation. For the sake of his daughter, this man, who was known for keeping his word, would willingly damage his own reputation, and become one of the promise breakers he despised. This caused Ye Wuchen to respect him a bit more deeply. As opposed to those who disregards their own daughter’s happiness just to fulfill their promise or to maintain their reputation, Hua Zhentian is genuinely passionate and righteous.

“Daddy.....” Hua Zhentian’s words have touched the heartstrings in the innermost parts of Hua Shuirou. She softly called to him, aside from her show of emotions, she did not know how to express the warmth that she felt in her heart.

Hua Zhentian laughed saying, “Haha, beloved daughter, after all these years of not going out of the house, you didn’t get the chance to know the people around, but now you finally have a man you really like. I have to say, my daughter really has pretty good insight, I’m very satisfied. En... my beloved daughter, now that your future husband has personally come to propose marriage, why don’t you personally cook up some dishes for this fellow to taste. And of course, as your dad, I will also partake.”

“Ahh.....Yes.”

Hua Shuirou had been wanting to escape somewhere far away due to her embarrassment, so Hua Zhentian's words were like amnesty to her. After she stole a few glances at Ye Wuchen, she half lowered her head and slowly left.

As Hua Shuirou's figure disappeared through the doorway, Ye Wuchen laughed and said, "Elder Hua, do you have something to tell me?"

Ye Wuchen could plainly see that Hua Zhentian had intentionally sent Hua Shuirou away.

"That's right." Hua Zhentian's smiling face now turned serious. Such rapid change in his facial expression caused Ye Wuchen to begin dripping with cold sweat. Hua Zhentian's body leaned closer to Ye Wuchen, wide eyes staring directly at him and said, "Fellow, regarding the matter of you taking advantage of my daughter, I won't delve too deeply into it. I accept the affair going on between you two, but if you dare to mistreat her in the future....."

"Then I will cut off both my hands as my punishment, Elder Hua." Ye Wuchen said in all seriousness.

Hua Zhentian smiled to show his satisfaction. "Pretty good, but you seem like a fellow who won't bully women. Though...." Hua Zhentian's posture straightened, he seemed to have difficulty finding the words. "What I would like to say is, you might have overdone things the other day."

"Oh?" Ye Wuchen puzzled.

Hua Zhentian shook his head and said, "The Ye and the Lin Families usually do not get along very well, this is a well-known fact. Nobody really knows why, and they can only speculate that it came from conflicting opinions between the authority of these two powerful families. But even if you have disagreements, it does not necessarily equate to being hostile, at most there would just be small arguments. But what you did that day... even though it looks like the Lin Family were the ones who provoked you, it was actually you who deliberately set up some tricks for them to easily fall into your trap, before trampling them down with humiliation in front of numerous influential officials. To my knowledge, the Lin Family have never experienced such humiliation before."

Ye Wuchen smiled weakly, his face expressionless. Hua Zhentian searched for a reaction, before he continued, "What you have done had naturally caused your

entire Ye Family to raise eyebrows, and has also lead to the anger of the entire Lin family. And now, the Hua and Lin Family's engagement..... Hah, come to think of it, it will be cancelled because of you. That fellow from Lin Family, though he is not as pleasing as you are, was Tian Long's number one genius and a man of honor. What you did that day is indeed excessive. A noble man can be killed but not humiliated. Moreover, the Lin Family is a family that gives importance to their reputation more; the Lin Family must still harbor a grudge in their hearts. For this wedding agreement to be cancelled because of you, they will certainly hate you to the bone. It would not surprise me if they hired a killer to assassinate you. What you have done in such a short period of time is very unwise!"

"Elder Hua's discipline is correct." Ye Wuchen said slightly nodding.

"Bullshit!" Hua Zhentian's beard raised up and his eyes opened wide, his entire person now in a position that looked like he might burst into a violent rage, "I'm a rude person, but I'm not an idiot, your face clearly shows that you are treating what I've said a while ago as nonsense!"

Ye Wuchen promptly made a placating gesture. "I have listened carefully to every word that you have said. I absolutely have no such inclinations." He paused a bit, sighed and said, "Elder Hua, I know that although you have a rough character and are carefree towards some minor details, I am aware that you are not careless with major issues. Even more so than any other ordinary person, since you couldn't have merely relied on your strength alone to develop the Hua Family to this level. But Elder Hua, do you really not know the real reason behind the conflict between the Lin and the Ye Families?"

Hua Zhentian was startled upon hearing those words, but didn't say anything.

"It's because there's someone who wanted to take control of my Ye Family, thus the Lin Family emerged. The disruption had been temporary, but it has already begun. If it wasn't for that bed-ridden Ye Wuchen's transformation into this version of me, they might already prevailed." Ye Wuchen said flatly.

Hua Zhentian stared, but did not seem too surprised. He only furrowed his brows and said, "I have been loyal to the Emperor all my life, and I will stay true, so you should not be telling me this. If it was like this, even if you were right, I

would still slap your face. But now..... what the fuck, you are soon to be my son-in-law, ai!” he began beating his head in annoyance.

“Elder Hua, as an outsider, you must have seen it.” Ye Wuchen said smiling.

Hua Zhentian did not deny this. He shook his head and said, “Your grandpa and father were too devoted, blinded by their loyalty, even if they noticed something they subconsciously tried to forget or deliberately forget it. Outsiders who have seen evidence of this are plenty. But the Emperor didn’t do anything wrong as well, although you are highly intelligent, you wouldn’t know how large the military power of your Ye Family is as well as their popularity with the army. A true Emperor will not allow the existence of a threat to his position, even with all the assurances of that threat not manifesting. The Lin Family emerged as a result of this threat. If it wasn’t for the Lin Family, the Ye Family would be the sole family in power, and there might come a day wherein they will focus their attention to gain more power. In this situation, although it might be unfair to the Ye Family, it is still a necessity. As for the Lin Family’s current position, aside from Lin Kuang, I think the other members have no idea.”

Ye Wuchen shook his head, quietly waiting for Hua Zhentian to finish. He had a bitter smile as he said, “If everything is just as Elder Hua had said, then I will no longer deliberately aggravate the Lin Family. But..... what a pity that the Ye family has been so loyal to the nation, and has had numerous outstanding military services. In the end, the person whom they’ve been devoted to plans to break off the Ye family, even wishing to take control over the entire Ye Family by himself!”

Hua Zhentian abruptly stood up, staring directly at Ye Wuchen’s emotionless face. Quite a while, Hua Zhentian then heavily fell back into his seat, rubbing his head and saying, “Young fellow, you didn’t look like someone who could speak off the cuff. What did you discover? Please tell me. Don’t worry, although I’ve been loyal all my life, I will never tell anybody of what you’ve said. I only want to protect my daughter.”

Ye Wuchen nodded. He had the audacity to tell Hua Zhentian these things, because he had already concluded the kind of person he was.

“The entire Clan of Ye was usually bold and powerful, but when I was born with

my weak body, are you aware of why, Elder Hua? Someone had intended to poison our Ye Family. Originally, they wanted the son to immediately die in the womb, but I was successfully birthed. But due the poison, my body was very weak. And the Ye Family..... was not able to produce further descendants because of this.”

“.....”

“Later on, by chance, the Ye Family adopted a son. After ten years, the adopted son became very close to the entire Ye Family. When his power and popularity had exceeded that of the true son’s, the sickly son of Ye then disappeared from within the Ye residence without a trace. Who could send drugs to Ye family without being suspected, and who can make the only son of Ye disappear without leaving any trace? If the only son of the Ye Family dies, who would inherit the Ye family?” Ye Wuchen said distantly, as if he were an outsider.

He was indeed an outsider, only using this identity of Ye according to the will of heaven. He, who does not want to owe the Ye family anything, made good use of this identity, and made sure to do right by the original owner of his identity.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 95

“These things that you are talking about..... Do you have any proof?” Hua Zhentian said calmly, but his brows were raised up high. For a carefree person like him, this kind of posture conveyed the peak of his excitement.

“No proof, but I never doubt my predictions. Even if there’s no proof, I’m sure Elder Hua already believes me.” Ye Wuchen said, “Because the Ye Family is needed to intimidate the Gale Nation, they cannot expose their real intentions; therefore, they need to act silently in making arrangements to take control of the Ye Family. If not for my return, the Ye Family might not come to know of it until their deaths; that the one they have been loyal to is the same one who cut off their future generations, and snatched away members of the Ye Family.

Hua Zhentian incessantly scratched his head, his innermost felt like roaring out loud in anxiety. What Ye Wuchen had said might seem extremely treasonous, but since the boy had dared to speak out so directly in front of him, it proves that they were not just simple guesses. He refused to accept that his subconscious mind had already believed ninety percent of what this fellow had said.

He suddenly lifted his head, “Young fellow, do you have any plans against us Hua Family by getting close to my daughter?”

“Yes..... but only in part . If it wasn’t for my affections to Shuirou, even if the Hua Family is ten times more powerful than what it is now, I still wouldn’t use this kind of method just to get close to her.”

Hua Zhentian did not get angry, rather he lowered his face and nodded. “I figured you were being honest. If you told me much earlier that you had no plans against the Hua Family, even if you were already my son-in-law I might still give you a big slap on your face.”

Ye Wuchen laughed then sighed, “Elder Hua, forgive me for being frank.

Originally, one of the reasons for your betrothing Shuirou to Lin Xiao of Lin family was not only partly for his excellence but also mainly because the Emperor had made great efforts to play matchmaker, right? Else, you won't make such an untimely decision for her future, based on the degree of affection you have for your own daughter. Moreover, before you agreed to this wedding proposal, you must have been drunk as well."

Hua Zhentian wrinkled his brows, went silent for moment before he continued, "What you said is pretty much right."

Hua Zhentian suddenly realized that every statement Ye Wuchen made was quite surprising.

"Telling me of these predictions just now can be considered as your trust in me, Hua Zhentian. I will not tell anyone, but it doesn't mean that I trust you. Whether or not you are right or wrong, you already committed a deadly mistake..... If there's really someone who is plotting against the Ye Family, no matter who your opponent is, you shouldn't expose yourself so easily! That day, you've already exposed your strength and wisdom, as well as the God of Sword's support for you. This might seem like a good intimidation method, but in reality you are just digging your own grave." Hua Zhentian said in anger. He had now become concerned with the safety of Ye Wuchen because it was now related to his daughter's happiness.

Ye Wuchen's affections towards Hua Shuirou was naturally not to the point of becoming a "foolishly devoted" kind of love, but merely fondness of each other. Subconsciously, when you are fond of something, you would not permit it to be shared with others, and in no way would he allow himself to regret it in the future. In the meantime, having Hua Shuirou would include Hua Zhentian and the entire Hua Family, so he needed to win her over, and he needed to do so as soon as possible. At the very least, she should not enter into the marriage with the Lin Family.

Hua Zhentian's rebuke at him had proven that the decision he made was indeed correct.

Ye Wuchen smiled weakly, and unhurriedly said, "Even you, Elder Hua, a person of such a brilliant mind would think this, so others must have thought so

too.”

Hua Zhentian startled, and was flattered for a moment, then suddenly remarked, “You are the most intelligent young fellow that I have known, it is reasonable to say that you shouldn’t have committed such a stupid mistake, don’t tell me.....”

“It will be impossible for me to do such a pretentious thing My whole life, I refuse to be one belittled by others. Judging by the current situation of the Ye Family, if I were still the same Ye Wuchen a year ago, then this evil scheme would come much quicker. In my opinion, public announcement is the best resistance. Using the most aggressive stance to amaze the world with a single brilliant feat, even stepping on top of the number one outstanding talent at that time. Behind me, there’s even a God of Sword whom everybody does not dare provoke. As a result, people will think that those were already my all out efforts, little did they know that.....”

Ye Wuchen twisted the corner of his mouth and did not continue. The false image that he had created was perfect. Who would have thought that this extremely domineering young man still had not revealed his trump. The false image that he had created will in turn cause others to expose their trump, little by little, until they revealed their true rotten identities.

And he possessed plenty of hidden trumps..... for instance, the pile of explosive substances that nobody knew of, he could destroy the entire Lin Family with. Or the Southern Empire Sword that could take control of the entire clan of the Southern Empire. Or another example.....

These enormous hidden trumps that nobody knew of except himself.

Hua Zhentian realized the meaning of his words and grew alarmed. “Could it be that you are still hiding something?”

From the hesitation on Ye Wuchen’s face, Hua Zhentian waved his hand promptly, “Nevermind, these are your concerns, better not tell me, or else I will be get caught up. Although I am a rough man, I have my own principles. My Hua Family existed because of the Tian Long Nation. If not for Tian Long’s Royal Family, my Hua Family would not be here at present. And you, young fellow, are destined to have no rest. If there comes a day where you are in a difficult

situation..... even if you are my son-in-law, I will never help you. But....” He paused, lowered his voice and said, “In case your Ye Family reaches a moment of calamity, find a way to secretly deliver a message to me..... After all, my daughter will be living in your place.”

Hua Zhentian’s usual thunder-like voice had dropped down low, until his voice became so weak that it was almost hard to hear clearly. For someone like him who had been very loyal to Tian Long Nation, it took a lot of determination to say these words, even enduring the self hate, as he was going against his own principles. Ye Wuchen stood, half lowering his head and said, “Thank you..... my honorable father-in-law.”

Hua Zhentian became distracted, then laughed out loud, “Hahahaha, why be so polite when you already called me your father-in-law. Those statements I made a while ago were just some random thoughts, don’t take them too seriously..... If you want to take them seriously, just agree on my one request, can you?”

Ye Wuchen promptly replied, “Please do tell, father-in-law. Wuchen will do as per your request.”

“Actually this is not a difficult thing to do....”

Hua Zhentian suddenly became embarrassed, and he started mumbling, “It’s just that..... I only have this daughter by my side, if you take her away then I will be left with nothing. If you two can.... Ahem! Get married as soon as possible, and give birth to some grandchildren or something. Holding a grandchild in my arms will make my life more meaningful.”

“.....”

.....

After entering the Hua residence like a ghost, he now walked out of its gates honorably. The two guards assigned to the main gate wanted to say something but hesitated. They really wanted to ask him how he got in.

As he was about to step outside, he was approached by an impressive looking young man, the eldest son of the Lin Family, Lin Xiao. There were no attendants following behind him. Ye Wuchen’s radiant face caused Lin Xiao’s brows to raise.

He stepped aside in a very gentlemanly way, and voluntarily greeted, “As it turns out, it’s Master Ye.”

“Oh?” Ye Wuchen gave him a sidelong glance, puzzled and said, “Mister, you look so familiar, how do I address you?”

Upon hearing those words, the two guards almost questioned their ears. This Master Ye had just won against Master Lin a few days ago, but today he somehow suddenly did not recognize him anymore? Or maybe..... he just did not care about him.

“I am Lin Xiao.” Lin Xiao did not show any anger, but answered calmly.

“Oh..... Master Lin, behold my bad memory, please do forgive me. What are you here for?” Ye Wuchen asked.

“Lin Xiao hereby visits his future father-in-law. How about Master Ye.....”

“Oh, my regrets. I’m afraid Master Lin you might not be able to fulfill your wish.” Ye Wuchen shrugged his shoulders, then elegantly walked past him, no longer looking at him.

At this moment, within the courtyard echoed a thunder-like voice. The two guards became frightened and quivered, “This old man has something to discuss with his daughter this afternoon, whoever arrives, don’t let him in.”

The two guards looked at each other in dismay, one of them gathered his courage to yell out, “But Old Master, Young Master Lin has arrived.”

“I don’t care if it is the old Lin or young Lin, are you deaf? I already said won’t allow anybody to enter, even the Emperor himself! You need to shoo him away!!”

Lin Xiao promptly waved his hand, “Brothers, since your Master has something to attend to, I won’t bother you anymore. Let me say my goodbyes.”

Even though they had already become familiar with Master Lin, the two of them were still overwhelmed by the command from their superior, and saluted to him at once, “Take care Master Lin.”

Looking towards Ye Wuchen who never looked back while as he left, Lin Xiao secretly clenched his teeth, and hurriedly walked over to his side, “Master Ye

please wait, I have something to say.”

“Oh? Please say it then.” Ye Wuchen answered. However, neither did he cease his steps nor did he even incline his head while talking.

Lin Xiao suppressed his temper and said, “Master Ye, what must I do to make you give up on young miss Shuirou of the Hua Family. Your performance was absolutely outstanding, so your admirers will be countless, even the Zhuge Family and the Shangguan Family, whose daughters are picky, think highly of you. I heard they even took the initiative to visit your house to propose marriage, is it worth the risk to cling to Hua Shuirou? Don’t you know that by doing this, you put both of our families in a very difficult situation?”

“My Ye Family and your Lin Family are in bad terms, so it makes no difference.” Ye Wuchen said indifferently.

“My engagement with Hua Shuirou has been personally witnessed by the Emperor.....”

“Then you should see the Emperor, there’s no need to see me.”

Lin Xiao took a long breath, lowered his voice and said, “If only you are willing to give up Hua Shuirou, I will agree to any wish. Just regard it as me..... begging you.”

Ye Wuchen raised his brows and said, “Have you ever bowed your head to beg at someone before?”

“Never before.”

“Yet today you are bowing your head to beg, are you resigning yourself?”

Heavenly Star - Chapter 96

“I’m willing to!” Lin Xiao walked beside him, gaze fixed on his profile. “In my heart, Hua Shuirou is the perfect woman, also because... you are stronger than me. You’ve even left a scar on me! Even if the engagement between me and Hua Shuirou has been witnessed by the Emperor, even if General Hua is known for keeping his word, your existence still makes me tremble with fear. I know my fear is not without reason, though it is very unlikely for me to lose face. You had completely defeated me in every stage of the competition that day, even when I had a hundred percent confidence with myself. After that, I realized, in front of you, I shouldn’t have confidence.”

Ye Wuchen did not answer, instead his footsteps slightly slowed.

“I, Lin Xiao, am a coward. Since I was young, I’ve been afraid of being bullied and humiliated by others, and refused to be below anyone. As a result, I have done my utmost efforts to strive hard with all my might to become the dragon among all the rest. At this point, my current achievements are no longer from luck, as I had risked my life to strive for them. I tried hard, so I’m proud of what I have become, since these are the things that I have achieved myself, not something bestowed upon me by my family. For a long time now, I thought myself good enough to look down upon Tian Long, no one could be classified as above me among my peers. After all these years, I have never been afraid of anything, but your presence has destroyed the security of my mental state. When I learned that you desired Hua Shuirou, I felt restless and uneasy even when eating or resting. Afterwards, I had come to think that during the competition, you had already used every kind of method to stir up her heartstrings. At that point, I have already fallen short.”

Ye Wuchen stopped his footsteps, turned around and said, “If that’s the case, then you should take the initiative to give up the wedding. In this way, I, Ye Wuchen, might even be grateful to you for a period of time and you don’t have

to carry a burden of torment upon yourself, to everyone's delight and satisfaction."

Lin Xiao clenched his teeth and said firmly, "If you would give up... any condition... as long as I'm able to do it, I will agree to it!"

"Master Lin is a person with an intermediary nature, but based on your affections you are prejudiced against me. What a pity that I am the same as Master Lin for things that I want, even if it is a person or a grain of sand, I will not allow them to fall into other people's hands. Even if I need to fight for it, I will snatch them back. I can easily tell you that Elder Hua has already agreed to the marriage between Xiao Rourou and I. You must return home to prepare to end your news spreading and engagement feast. I am done talking, farewell."

Ye Wuchen turned around to leave, quickly disappearing into a corner, leaving behind the baffled Lin Xiao. He turned his head to look at the gates of the Hua residence, mumbling, "Since I, Lin Xiao, existed, why would there be need of a Ye Wuchen."

He was not a coward, but the pressure that accompanied Ye Wuchen was quite heavy, so heavy that he was willing to bend his head instead of fighting him in the open. From his childhood until present he never had such an enemy before. Now there existed a man who could step on him, and would firmly hold him down under the soles of his feet. The effect he had on everyone was not as huge as his own in the competition with Ye Wuchen. When Ye Wuchen played the A Dream Remembering the Past, it had completely smashed his A Dream of Worldly Affairs tune, and his ultimate pride had been completely shattered into pieces.

Upon returning to the Ye residence, Ye Wuchen proceeded to Wang Wenshu's room. "Today at dusk, there will be two visitors coming, prepare more food and wine... Ah, no. Wine will not be necessary."

"Visitors?" Wang Wenshu, who was embroidering a pair of mandarin ducks onto a pillow, lifted her head, face full of doubt.

"Yes, but their identities will not be disclosed temporarily. You will learn about them when time comes." Ye Wuchen said, laughing mysteriously.

"Then I will prepare right away." Wang Wenshu put down the items in her

hands. She suddenly remembered something, and turned around. “Oh, by the way, Chen-er, I have arranged for a room in my courtyard. You may let the mother of that child, Leng Ya, move into my place. Since your father is not always home, it’s good to have someone accompany me. This morning, I went to see her, and it seems like she has been through a lot of trials., She has been very unfortunate, but her manners are quite exceptional; simply incomparable with other women from ordinary families, she must have come from an influential family.”

“Yes!” Ye Wuchen responded with a nod.

When Ye Wuchen brought home Leng Ya, Ye Wei and Ye Nu were opposed of it. After all, Leng Ya was from the Gale Nation, whom they treated as their enemy. But luckily, their opposition was not that strong, and with the insistence of Ye Wuchen, they had eventually agreed. Wang Wenshu had agreed to let Leng Ya’s mother, Leng Qiu, stay at her courtyard which was also a suggestion from Ye Wuchen. Because this was his request, naturally as his mother, she surely agreed with it.

At this time, Leng Ya was helping his mother walk slowly around the courtyard. Leng Qiu’s complexion had obviously improved compared to the previous day. Upon seeing Ye Wuchen’s return, Leng Ya coldly called out a “young master”. Leng Qiu was so grateful that she felt like she wanted to bend her waist in greeting, yet Leng Ya kept her up. Ye Wuchen also hurriedly stepped in front to stop her, “Auntie, your body is still unwell, Leng Ya and I are friends, I really don’t deserve this.”

Leng Qiu shook her head, and thankfully glanced at him. “I’ve already heard from Xiao Feng. If it wasn’t for you, Xiao Feng might have been captured, you saved both of our lives! Now that you have healed my eyes, which have been blind for so many years..... We both have nothing, we simply don’t know how to repay your kindness!”

Ye Wuchen quickly waved his hand and said, “Auntie, please don’t feel that way. The reason I saved Leng Ya is because of my selfish motives. Besides, Leng Ya can be considered as my friend, it is right and proper to help him. Leng Ya, please help auntie to return and take some rest, I have something to tell you.”

After Leng Ya helped the deeply grateful Leng Qiu back, they dilly-dallied for a long while before he finally returned and silently followed behind Ye Wuchen. Upon hearing his approaching footsteps, Ye Wuchen asked without even turning his head, "Have you thought over the things that I have told you yesterday?"

"What do you want me to do once I return to the Gale Nation?" Leng Ya asked.

"Quite simple..... I need a share of power in the Gale Nation. A secret power that can pierce through the Royal Family of Gale Nation like a sharp blade. Can you do it?"

"I cannot." Leng Ya answered neatly.

"If it can be done, would you agree?"

"No!"

"Very well." Ye Wuchen turned around, his brows wrinkled. "Indeed, you don't have the power to do it. Even if you did want to go, I would not let you go there because you simply don't have the sufficient strength and capability. Even though I rescued you and your mother's lives, healed your mother's eyes, you still won't fulfill your promise of being loyal to me. For someone who doesn't have neither capability nor loyalty to me, who rescued you and even offered shelter to you!"

Leng Ya coldly stared at him, his voice chilly and cold, "I, Leng Ya,... don't have to live up to anybody's expectations!"

Ye Wuchen pulled the corners of his mouth and laughed mockingly. "You are a person of great dignity. What are you doing with it? Why was your mother in poor health? It's because you don't have money! For so long, she's never had a full meal. For money, you even dared to join a competition and felt no wrong. Why were you pushed to such critical circumstances? It's also because you lack strength that you were defeated by Lin Xiao, under the impulse you even revealed the Shattering Wind Blade, and involved your mother. Even now, if it wasn't for my care, you would still be under the scrutiny of Tian Long's Emperor, possibly arrested at any time. A person like you is just a joke, a useless person. You are not even worth discussing that ridiculous dignity of yours with."

"You... shut up!" Leng Ya's glance was cold and penetrating. His ground his

teeth loudly, his vigor had caused the temperature in the surroundings to drop a few degrees in an instant.

“Did I say anything wrong?” Ye Wuchen laughed coldly, “are you planning to attack me? Too bad, I’m not scared, and you are not my match. If I wanted, I would immediately knock you down, and stamp on your head disdaining your embarrassing appearance. I have the strength, and you have none! You hated your father, but aside from the resentment, can you do anything about it? Throughout the entire Heavenly Star continent, who doesn’t know Feng Chaoyang. How about your name, Leng Ya, how many of them know of it? Even if you died on this spot, who cares about your life?”

Leng Ya’s whole body slightly trembled, every statement that Ye Wuchen made was like a blade that pierced through his heart. He was an arrogant, and extremely egotistic man, but had just been mocked as a great joke. The anger that he had emitted even contained some murderous spirit. If he were not trying hard to restrain himself, telling himself how much this person had helped himself and his mother, he might have already dashed against him recklessly, and cut through this person.

“You want to become stronger?” looking at him, Ye Wuchen’s voice had suddenly become mild, as he asked calmly.

“Yes!” he answered gritting his teeth. Every mocking word of Ye Wuchen still mercilessly replayed in his head; having no strength, he was not fit to talk about self-respect! Without strength, he could not protect himself, nor his mother.

Ye Wuchen nodded and turned to the north, in his mind a figure of a man gradually appeared as old as an ancient tree, “In that case, you don’t have to return to the Gale Nation anymore. I want you to go to the northern side of the Tian Long Nation that has long been forgotten, and look for a person named Chu Cangming, he will teach you how to become stronger.”

“Chu Cangming.....” Upon hearing the name, Leng Ya’s eyes emitted a fierce ray of energy.

“Once you’re ready, you can approach me. Of course, it doesn’t matter if you don’t like it. My Ye Family will always keep you, like one keeps a dog!”

After Ye Wuchen’s cold statements, he turned around to leave. He proceeded

to the courtyard of Ye Shuiyao to fetch Ning Xue. Before he left, he shot a meaningful glance at the window of the room where Leng Qiu is currently residing.

Leng Ya stood there expressionless, like an ice sculpture which had been there for a very long time. This young man who had been at a loss for more than ten years, suddenly had a path to follow. The anger and murderous spirit from just a moment ago had disappeared completely.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 97

The door was quietly pushed open, the light sound did not even rouse Leng Ya who was still quite confused. Shortly after, a familiar voice sounded beside his ear, "Xiao Feng....."

Leng Ya fiercely turned to support the limping Leng Qiu. "Mother, why did you come out."

Leng Qiu turned a hand over to hold on to Leng Ya, she looked at him and said, "Xiao Feng, the conversation you just had, I heard it."

Leng Ya startled and became increasingly panicked before he mumbled, "Mother, actually... I... he..."

Leng Qiu shook her head, "Xiao Feng, your mother has been blind for almost ten years, now that my eyesight returned, I see clearer than before. I would never misjudge a person, even though Mr. Ye is very young, he's truly a dragon among the people, judging by the way he healed my eyesight with just a single wave of his hand. Who among all people in the entire world could do the same? Even if my Xiao Feng followed behind his back, I will completely be at ease."

"Mother..."

"Go ahead, Xiao Feng, go and find him. Do as he says, and look for that God of Sword Chu Cangming. Although your father disappointed us, in your mother's mind, he will always be a hero of indomitable spirit, and I have no regrets. Xiao Feng, your mother's greatest wish is for you to be just like your father, a powerful man with the authority over a whole country. Can you fulfill this cherished desire of mine?" Leng Qiu supported herself on his shoulder and stared with anticipation.

"Then... when should I leave?" Leng Ya asked absent-mindedly at his mother.

"Tonight. You should leave tonight." Leng Qiu said firmly, but her voice

evidently trembled.

Leng Ya heavily knelt down on the floor at his mother's legs with tears held back and said, "But mother, I hate to part from you, I won't be at ease....."

Leng Qiu's eyes became wet, but she still forced a smile. "Foolish child. Someone who is not willing to part with his parents will never truly grow up. Master Ye is a person with great passion and righteousness. Mother has not misjudged him, and he will never treat me unfairly. Furthermore, Madame Ye had sent somebody over to tell me that I am permitted to transfer to her place and accompany her. How could you still not feel relieved. Tonight you shall leave, if you refuse to go, your mother will... drive you out with a rod!"

"Mother, I'll go..... I'll go today. As your son, I won't let you down. I will not become someone like him, I will surpass him. I, Leng Ya, will never disappoint my mother, or even lose to another person!"

.....

Outside the door in the courtyard, Ye Wuchen then quietly retreated and proceeded towards Ye Shuiyao's courtyard.

Leng Ya, you are not a good son, but you have a good mother.

He would not disappoint. I never choose wrong . If he really was useless, I would not have wasted so much time.

When Ye Wuchen returned with Ning Xue, Leng Ya was already silently waiting for him at the doorway. When he approached, he slightly bowed his head and said coldly, "Tell me how I can find this Chu Cangming. I shall leave this very night!"

Ye Wuchen nodded in satisfaction. In a low voice he said, "I hope after three years, I will see someone who will make the people in the entire Heavenly Star Continent tremble with fear—a God of Murder!"

.....

Towards evening, a palanquin stopped by the gate of the Ye residence. A tall, middle-aged man with a thick and solid body pushed aside the guard's blockade. He swaggered as he entered, followed by a delicate woman with graceful steps

who kept her head lowered. Soon after, an ear-splitting roar of laughter resonated through the once peaceful Ye residence, the vibration had caused the entire residence to faintly shiver. Hua Shuirou immediately covered her ears when he bellowed that loud laugh.

“Hahahaha! I haven’t been able to stroll around here for quite a long time. I didn’t expect the Ye residence to look so pleasing.”

This is the so-called “loving the house and its crow”. Hua Zhentian was the overprotective sort, and since he is pleased with this son-in-law, naturally he would also be pleased with the Ye residence. Wang Wenshu, who had been busy in the anteroom, was the first to come out to greet him, she didn’t need to guess, from the sound of his laughter alone she was able to figure out which godly being had arrived. She could only force a big smile and greet him with a lot of enthusiasm. However, she did not expect Hua Zhentian to be so clearly unusual, unexpectedly acting more enthusiastic than herself. Wang Wenshu had yet to speak when Hua Zhentian had already greeted her with a large smile, “Is madam Ye in good health? This Hua has not come to visit in a long time, it’s really a huge offense!”

“Yes, in good health!” Wang Wenshu came at once, “General Hua, your honorable presence brings light to our Ye Family's humble dwelling. It cannot be regarded as an offense, contrary to that, we didn’t welcome you in from our doorstep, that’s considered as an offense.”

Hua Zhentian waved his hand, “Hey! We will be joined as one big family soon, why do you have to be so formal? Where’s brother Ye? I’ll go and chat with him.”

“One... one big family?” Wang Wenshu was stunned. Who is going to be a part of your family? How pretentious!

“What?” seeing Wang Wenshu’s obviously alarmed face, Hua Zhentian puzzled over it and was quick to realized what was going on. Pulling his beard, he asked, “Maybe that young fellow still hasn’t told you guys anything yet?”

“Oh? Ah... that's...”

Hua Zhentian stomped his foot, almost ready to curse, “That young fellow already went to my place to propose, and you didn’t even know. What kind of

mother are you? Let me tell you, your son has already taken advantage of my beloved daughter, your Ye Family can't back out. If he refuses to marry my daughter, I shall burn down your entire house!"

"Daddy..." Hua Shuirou lightly pulled on Hua Zhentian. He even shouted the words "taken advantage", she wished she could squeeze into a hole on the ground to hide herself. The meaning of those words were open to interpretation, but most people might jump to the worst meaning.

Wang Wenshu finally pieced together the clues. Thinking about the two visitors Ye Wuchen mentioned, Hua Zhentian and Hua Shuirou were exactly two people! She now had some basis, then immediately said, "Please don't be mad, General Hua. I'll call Chen-er right away."

"Don't call him." Hua Zhentian waved his hand. "Bring my daughter along to find that young fellow. I'll go find brother Ye and old man Ye... Ah, it's General Ye. Some words should not be heard by the two youngsters." After he finished, he no longer paid any attention to Wang Wenshu. Taking big steps, he proceeded inside, as if it were his own house.

"Madame Ye." Hua Shuirou slightly lowered her head, as she had softly and timidly called out.

At this moment, Wang Wenshu already had some idea to what Ye Wuchen had been up to these days with Hua Zhentian's words and Hua Shuirou's delicately shy manner. Her heart suddenly became overwhelmed ----with joy, of course. When Ye Wuchen told her he wanted Hua Shuirou, even though she supported him, in her mind she knew that the task would be extremely difficult. She did not expect that in just two days time, Hua Zhentian brought along Hua Shuirou himself and took the initiative to pay a visit. And not only did Hua Shuirou agree, but so did Hua Zhentian, who had been the one to arrange her marriage with Lin Xiao of the Lin Family... She could only exclaim in admiration. He deserved to be called her son. Anything he wanted, he just stretched a hand and grabs it. As his mother, she no longer worried for him anymore.

She laughed. "Why do you still call me Madam Ye? Soon, you will be calling me mother."

Hua Shuirou's face turned red and her hands pinched the corner of her

handkerchief. She becomes speechless from her shyness, but in her heart, there were traces of happiness. This is the first time that Wang Wenshu had been able to observe Hua Shuirou meticulously, and she became more and more pleased with her. Not just an absolutely splendid beauty that had amazed Tian Long Nation, her extremely docile character was also rare.

“Come, let me bring you to see Chen-er. Hmph, this young man even dares to take advantage of you. I will teach him a lesson.” Wang Wenshu pulled on one of her hands, leading her to the direction of Ye Wuchen’s courtyard. Her mouth uttered reprimands, but any person would be able to hear the proudness in her voice. Without any thoughts of any disciplinary actions, perhaps she would not even let him kneel down when she scolded him.

“He... He didn’t take advantage of me.” Hua Shuirou responded in an attempt to explain on behalf of Ye Wuchen.

In the entire way, Wang Wenshu had done all the asking and Hua Shuirou did all the answering, but she did not ask what Ye Wuchen had done to Hua Shuirou. Ye Wuchen was currently guiding Ye Shuiyao’s lily-white hands, teaching her to paint a perfect lotus flower. It was not the first time that Ye Shuiyao’s right hand had been in his. She tried to calm herself down and not think of the warm touch and close breath of a man, yet she could not hide the fact that the sides of her face turned red.

Receiving the a message from Xiao Lu, he reluctantly let go of her hands and returned to his courtyard, leaving Ning Xue behind with Ye Shuiyao. Wang Wenshu, who waited by the doorway had a mysterious smile on her face. Pointing to his room, she said in a low voice, “Chen-er, good choice.” She then left quietly to look for Hua Zhentian in order to discuss some “important matters”.

It was Hua Shuirou’s first time to sit inside the room of a man. She felt her heart beating faster. Quietly sitting there despite her nervous and restless state, her body became stiff. Ye Wuchen pushed the door and came in. As he closed the door, Hua Shuirou stood up immediately, like a startled little bunny, then quietly lowered her head.

“Xiao Rourou, did you miss me?” Ye Wuchen said laughing as he approached

little by little.

She could not bear such forward words, only a few would turn her face burning hot. She tried hard to open her mouth and deny it, “No... not at all. Daddy brought me here.”

“Faces turn red if one tells lies.” Ye Wuchen stayed standing in front of her, appreciating her charming face, now filled with redness. This was an extremely docile, extremely delicate, and extremely shy young woman. This kind of woman could not have existed in the world he was born into.

Hua Shuirou’s hands covered her face. Along with his approach, his breath grew closer and closer, causing her to be intoxicated and made her head spin.

Ye Wuchen slightly lowered his head, using a hand to lift her chin as her eyes filled with alarm and expectations. “Would you like to do anything similar to what we did before?”

Hua Shuirou blinked. Quietly closing her eyes, her lips slightly shifted, and she held the posture of waiting for him to taste her. She did not even know why every time she was under his gaze, she would easily sink into him. Their acquaintance had just spanned a short three days.

Ye Wuchen smiled with satisfaction. He leaned forward and softly planted a kiss on her right cheek.

Heavenly Star - Chapter 98

Chapter 98: Evil Desires

“Ah...” The tingling sensation had caused her tender cherry-like lips to let out a languid pitch. Ye Wuchen embraced her waist with his both hands, his lips softly pressed onto her pinkish soft, pretty, and flirtatious lips. His tongue repeatedly stroked the sweetness of her lips and forcefully invaded her. It captured and wound around her creamy sweet tongue, blending together the fluids in their mouths. The hands that embraced her waist also started to wander around her back.

“Mmmm....” The warm sensation quickly swept through every inch of her mouth. Hua Shuirou’s soul stirred from the warm and strong breath of this man. Unable to breathe easily, her heartbeats intensely resounded like a beating drums, and she could only use her fingers to helplessly drag against his clothes.

Ye Wuchen gnawed at her pearly white teeth and sucked in her sweet, precious fluids. His aggressive lips and tongue continuously changed angles. He discovered that he really liked this kind of action, this kind of sensation. And her smell was very mellow.

“No... Stop it now...” Hua Shuirou let out the sound as she gasped for air when she neared suffocation. She almost fainted from the heat of the kiss, and her whole body was paralyzed in his lap as if her strength had been sucked out of her body, unaware that she was emitting such astonishing beauty and seductiveness while doing so.

“I can’t do it, you are so lovely that I cannot even resist...” Ye Wuchen departed from her lips and turned towards her ears which were smooth and round like pearls. He lightly played them with his mouth, licked them, watched them turn voluptuous with satisfaction.

“You-you’re taking advantage of me again...” Her spotlessly white teeth bit on

her rosy red lip, Hua Shuirou blushed when she had spoken, her soft fists had lightly pounded on his chest. She had no strength, subconsciously unwilling to resist because she had already considered him as her one and only future husband. “Taking advantage? The real action hasn’t even begun yet.” Ye Wuchen laughed in an evil way. He was occasionally gentle and cultivated, occasionally unsympathetic like water, but now his laugh was wicked like the devil’s. His lust which had been in hibernation for so many years, was now slowly flaring up.

He hugged her small waist tight, his scalding right hand caressed her small, young, and tender small face and slowly shifted downward. The seemingly careless yet exceptionally strong hand slid through her snowy and sleek long neck, her thin and fragrant shoulder, then finally landed on the snow-white, tender, detailed, and finely rounded lumps of hers. Separated only by a layer of cloth, he exerted his strength to rub them between his fingers to enjoy their soft satiny smoothness; their fullness happened to exactly fit his hand.

A powerful pressure attacked her breasts, which made Hua Shuirou feel so shy that she twisted her body and tenderly cried out with a pitiful voice, “Don’t be like that... Ah... No... Someone might see us...Umm...” She twisted her body to escape from this kind of pain and numbness altogether, but the fingers still wildly rubbed against her erected soft breasts, and the arms wrapped around her slim waist did not give her any chance at escape.

Ye Wuchen turned a deaf ear, an evil light flashed through his eyes. The trembling and bouncing tender white breast in his palm kept on changing its shape under the ravaging of his devil hand, the force so powerful that it made her almost cry out in pain.

Hua Shuirou closed her eyes to endure his violation, eventually, she gave out and quietly relaxed a bit. When that hand went downwards, the bind on her waist was suddenly loosened, before a corner of her clothes were grabbed and pulled down. A soft hiss, and the cloth tore open, and her underwear was ferociously pulled off. Two round, faltering, white, delicate breasts bounced out, swaying in front of his eyes which brought out his lustful state of mind. Her skin was as smooth as a concentrated rouge, so white and intimately transparent.

“Ah—” Hua Shuirou’s was stupefied, in her confusion she covered her chest

with her hands to cover her naked flesh. Ye Wuchen lifted his hand and easily pushed her arms aside to firmly secure them behind her back, lustful passion in his eyes. This kind of meaningful glance caused her to panic and become slightly scared.

“No... somebody might see us... somebody might see us... after few days, okay? Wait.... Wait for them to go out, then you can do whatever you want to take advantage of me.” Hua Shuirou begged urgently, her bare breasts followed her body movements and slightly trembled. Ye Wuchen’s other hand pressed on one of them, both lightly and heavily rubbed against it to bring out soft moans from Hua Shuirou that she was unable to restrain.

Hua Shuirou could only close her eyes. Her face blushing while he attacked her.

“Brother... brother are you inside?”

A familiar yet amiable voice stirred Ye Wuchen who was almost out of control, he seemed to have been woken up by a sudden hit, his unrestrained hands on Hua Shuirou’s body simultaneously stopped. Quickly pulling up her underwear and long skirt, he covered her snow-white breasts now full of red lines.

What was I doing a while ago? He murmured to himself. He seemed to have been under the control of his desires moments ago.

Hua Shuirou hurriedly grab hold of her clothes upon hearing the voice. She shifted her gaze to try to find some place to hide. Her light yellow dress was torn in the chest area, so she lost the courage to go and meet other people.

“I am your husband, I alone can do that to you.” Said Ye Wuchen gently with his head lowered.

“Yes...” Hua Shuirou responded shyly, her voice weak like the sound of a mosquito. Although what happened came so unexpectedly, she had not been averse to it. Even if Ye Wuchen had completely owned her then, she could only resist him through her voice, and then gently comply to what he wanted.

Ye Wuchen opened the door to the delicate snowy white figure of Ye Ning Xue standing in the doorway. Her hands held onto a painting. “Brother, this is what sister drew a while ago. She wanted me to hand it over to you for you to see.”

“For me to see?” Ye Wuchen puzzled. Because during all of his free time each

day, he would go to Ye Shuiyao's place, there would be no need to deliver the painting to him here. He thought for a little bit, then asked, "Xue-er, does sister know who came to visit me?"

"Yeah! When brother left, sister asked sister Xiao Lu." Ning Xue answered, then yelped when she saw Hua Shuirou who was just tightening her clothes around her chest and still refused to lift her head as she still sat on brother's bed.

"You are sister Shuirou, right?" Ye Ning Xue had summoned her own courage to spontaneously ask.

Seeing a young lady, Hua Shuirou seemed less nervous, pulling at her clothes, she approached gently. "Yes I am. Little sister, do you know me?"

"I recognize you." Ning Xue looked up and laughed, "Because brother said he liked you, and all the people the brother likes, Ning Xue also likes them." The two scars on Ning Xue's face had frightened this delicate woman, but the words had overwhelmed her heart with happiness, and she felt a little closer to Ning Xue. She secretly glanced at Ye Wuchen and said lowly, "I... also like you."

"Can I call you big sister from now on?" Ning Xue asked happily.

"Yes, of course you can." Hua Shuirou replied gently.

Ye Wuchen took the painting from Ning Xue's hands, opening it to discover a blank piece of paper with not even a trace of ink. He shook his head, unable to express what he felt right this moment. He gently stroked Ning Xue's head and said, "Xue-er, can you please go over to sister's place and borrow a set of clothes? Better if it is a yellow dress. Tell her I requested for it."

"A dress? I got it." Ning Xue waved her small hands and took small, quick steps back.

Only until Ning Xue's figure disappeared from his line of sight did Ye Wuchen turn around. Although his powers could fix Hua Shuirou's dress, he could not reveal his "scary powers" in front of her yet as it might scare her away.

"Even if I changed clothes, they will still figure it out." Hua Shuirou's hands pressing tightly over her chest timidly as her eyes gazed at him helplessly.

“It doesn’t matter if they figured it out. You belongs to me, Ye Wuchen, and no other, right?”

“Yes...” Hua Shuirou’s gaze slightly sparkled, his tender words had wiped out the greater part of her fear. Her hands dropped down, her body softly collapsed onto Ye Wuchen’s chest. The front of her clothing opened wide, revealing a part of her snowy white skin. At same time, something rolled out from her clothes, dropping to the floor with a “pak” sound.

“Ah!” Hua Shuirou gently called, bending at the waist to pick it up. It was a small black packet, round and bulging. She patted her chest and lifted her hands to present the packet to Ye Wuchen, “This is... for you.”

The packet seemingly had a similar smell to gunpowder, but not quite. Ye Wuchen guessed what it contained. He carefully took it, then asking probingly, “Is this your Hua Family’s mine?”

“Yes... that’s ten of them. It a-also contains two Heaven-Shaking Mines. I stole them. If those bad people try to harm you, you can use these.”

This young lady had been worried for his safety. Ye Wuchen felt warmth in his heart. He opened the small black packet, and inside were twelve black balls, slightly bigger than marbles. The mines trigger a small scale explosion of poisonous fireballs, but no one knows the true effects of the “Heaven-Shaking Mines” as Hua Shuirou called them. No one has ever been witness to the so-called “heaven-shaking mines” of the Hua Family that was only known in vague rumors. Ye Wuchen clearly remembers when Hua Zhentian and Ye Nu had argued about something during the competition, something like “using Heaven-Shaking Mines to burn down the entire Ye residence” was mentioned.

“Were these something that your father handed to you for your protection?” Ye Wuchen asked laughingly.

This was his first time seeing special firearms that belong to the Heavenly Star Continent. Explosive devices possessed certain dangerous properties, and negligence might cause deadly accidents. Hua Zhentian ought not to give her too much contact to these things, but they were necessary for her protection.

“Yes, but I don’t use them.” Hua Shuirou said in a low voice.

Ye Wuchen carefully took out five small ones and one that was heavier... most likely one of the so-called “Heaven-Shaking Mines.” He returned the rest to Hua Shuirou. “If you give them all to me, what will you do if you run into some dangerous situation? Let’s divide them into half, okay?”

Hua Shuirou obediently nodded. Naturally, what Ye Wuchen said would be followed.

Translated by: Fatty_Uncle
Edited by: seriouspotato and patrick_father_of_dragons

Heavenly Star - Chapter 99

“How do you use this?” Ye Wuchen picked up a small black ball. If he was not worried of the danger, he might have already pulled it apart to see what it was made of.

“Use your hand to break off its cover, then your throw it with all your might.” Hua Shuirou answered.

“Oh.....”

With a light pop, the outer shell of the small black ball was easily broken. Ye Wuchen kicked the door open, waved two fingers towards a direction and the small black ball flew out. Hua Shuirou cried out in surprise, subconsciously throwing herself onto Ye Wuchen’s chest and covered her ears.

After a brief silence, there was a lack of explosion. Looking at the mine which had sunk to the bottom of the pond, Ye Wuchen’s expression revealed that it had been as he had expected. After breaking the outer cover of the mine, it needed to hit something in order to explode.

“Well, nevermind. I’ve already thrown it in the water. Look at how scared you are.” Ye Wuchen said, laughing ridiculously. He kept the remaining four mines and the single Heaven-Shaking Mine.

When Hua Zhentian and Hua Shuirou left the Ye residence, the sky was already dark. Before departing, Hua Zhentian’s face radiated happiness, and so did Ye Wei and Ye Nu’s faces. As they bid their farewells, they were all reluctant to part, practically wishing they could hold onto each other and cry out loud. Their irreconcilable attitude during the competition few days before were long forgotten. If the two families were to become relatives through marriage, they would need to advance or retreat together and assist each other. How could these cunning old men not be cordial to each other with their utmost efforts?

Hua Shuirou, on the contrary, did not utter a single word. She had the impatient look of wishing she could drag Hua Zhentian and escape from that place at once. The light yellow dress that she was now wearing was brought to her by Ning Xue from Ye Shuiyao's place. Her original clothing had been ruined by Ye Wuchen who had placed her under a very shameful situation. Ye Shuiyao's figure was more developed compared to Hua Shuirou's, so the long dress appeared too loose on her, and the skirt fully covered her legs. If she did not secretly hold it up while walking, it might even pool on the floor. Hua Zhentian had not noticed, but Wang Wenshu knew with just a glimpse, her eyes continually glanced between Hua Shuirou and Ye Wuchen with a bewildered gaze.

After sending off the father and daughter of the Hua Family, Wang Wenshu became completely out of her character as her footsteps headed straight for Ye Wuchen's courtyard. She carefully searched the entire area with her eyes and nose, but was not able find any suspicious liquids or smells. She felt both suspicious and relieved at the same time..... and a little bit of disappointment. When she left, Ye Wuchen was speechless for a very long time.

The news of Hua Zhentian and Hua Shuirou paying a visit to Ye Family quickly reached the ears of the Lin Family, causing a great shock to them. Of the many times Hua Zhentian visited the Lin Family, he had never brought along Hua Shuirou. What did this signify? What really happened is such a short period of time?

Everything had its reasons; reasons they did not truly understand. The Lin Family was starting to become apprehensive of Ye Wuchen's strategy. In just a period of two days, he had already reached this extent without any prior indications.

If the Hua Family and Lin Family were to become connected by marriage, it would surely not bode well for the Ye Family. Being connected to the Hua Family would prove to be better all around for the Ye Family. It would surely be the best thing for the Ye Family. Based on Hua Zhentian's behavior, this seemed like a possibility that was as solid as an iron bar, leaving no chance for the Ye Family to back out. Ye Wei and Ye Nu's mood was now free from worries, but they would surely question Ye Wuchen to get to the heart of the matter. Ye Wuchen would

naturally respond in an ambiguous way, relaying nothing but his affinity with Hua Shuirou, and him being congenial to Hua Zhentian's, or something like that. They would have no other alternatives but to roll their eyes and show no further interest on the matter.

That night, Leng Qiu moved in to Wang Wenshu's courtyard with two servant girls to take care of her. While Leng Ya.....

"I remember."

"Well, you should go now. Don't stop, or even look back. For the next two days you, should make all efforts to hide your whereabouts, because if it gets out that you are no longer here in the Ye residence, the Emperor will track you down by any means. As for your mother, you don't have to worry about anything. If you find out that she has met with any accidents when you return, you may take my life at any time. I will not say anything further. You go ahead, after three years, I want to see a completely different Leng Ya!"

Leng Ya was dressed in full black, carrying a package that was neither large nor small on his back. His sharp eyes flashed brilliant rays that elicited terror from others. He emotionlessly nodded and leaped up, climbing over the perimeter walls at the back of the Ye residence. For a moment, he halted and reluctantly gazed towards the distance—the direction where his mother resided. Shifting his gaze, he strove forward and his body quickly disappeared in the darkness.

Ye Wuchen still stood there, but after few seconds, he suddenly leaped, running in the direction Leng Ya headed to, his white figure elusive under the dark night sky. The two shadows that followed Leng Ya felt a white shadow flash past them, when an energetic force hit the back of their heads simultaneously, causing them to pass out.

"Truly magnificent, worthy of being called..... the King of the Southern Empire." Looking at the two men collapsed before his feet, Ye Wuchen snorted coldly. There was no such thing as ordinary skills among those of the Southern Empire. Even if one of the two men fought him face to face, Ye Wuchen would win but he might have used up a huge portion of his powers. Though if these men were to mount a sneak attack against him with the speed they had shown, even ten folds of their powers were still not his match.

The darkness of the night was as cold as the sea. Leng Qiu could not sleep the entire night. To help Leng Ya make up his mind, she put the package on his shoulders herself and made the effort to push him out of the door, and tightly shut it behind him. She restrained herself and the countless urges to rush out in order to look at her son once more. Since the sky started getting dark, she had shut herself inside the room..... Leng Ya was her hope and attachment to life; she could truly say that he was her everything. Three years..... they had never been parted for such long period of time.

“Xiao Feng, you need to have your own future and your own path. Do not be forever burdened by me on your side..... mother will wait for your return.....”

The next day, at Tian Long's Meng Yan House.

“..... the day before yesterday proceeded with the Imperial Court receiving rewards at fifth hour and third quarter, and came out at the sixth hour and second quarter. In the morning at the eighth hour, he proceeded towards the black forest in northern side of the city on foot with Leng Ya and were out by noon. Our men haven't penetrated deep enough to investigate. In the afternoon, they entered the black forest again with Leng Ya, in the fifth hour of afternoon, they headed home. At night, he went out with the lady named Ye Ning Xue, bought three candies, three pairs of shoes and socks for the lady, then headed back by the third quarter.”

In a calm and elegant room full of the smell of incense, aside from the voice of a woman, no other sound could be heard. A pink veil hung from the middle of the room and behind it was the shadow of matchless beauty. A young woman in red knelt down on one knee. Her head was bowed towards the shadow behind the veil as she described everything in detail.

“Yesterday morning he went to the black forest for a third time with Leng Ya, and..... And brought along a bucket of feces. The purpose is yet unknown. At second hour and a quarter in the afternoon, he stole into the Hua residence, after some drinks with Hua Zhentian, he came out at the fourth hour and happened to bump into Lin Xiao of Lin Family with which he had a round of argument.....At midnight and a quarter, Leng Ya leaped out of the walls, whereabouts unknown. Our men desired to follow him, but was struck unconscious by a mysterious person.

“Struck and passed out? With their level of perception, they didn’t even notice the approach of another person?” The woman behind the veil finally opened her mouth, her voice was like the sound of nature. When heard through one’s ears, it was like a cool breeze brush over the water surface, causing the center to ripple.

“Yes.” The young woman bent down lower and answered.

“Rumor has it that this Ye Wuchen has the ability to conceal his breath. Nobody can detect the presence of his energy. The only one who could protect Leng Ya, is him. That person, could it have been him?”

“I, your subordinate also thought this way.”

“Apparently, he was already aware that there’s someone monitoring his every move, but he concealed nothing; unafraid of what people may have learned about him. His origins, have you find out about it?” The woman behind the veil unhurriedly asked.

“Not yet. Only that he came from the northern side of Tian Long Nation. He originally formed a companionship with Long Zhenyang in the town of Tian Lie before he returned. They became very close with each other.” The young woman answered.

“My father would like me to closely observe this person’s whereabouts. If you don’t have anything else, you may take your leave. Remember to report to me his whereabouts at all times.”

“Yes..... I also found out that someone has tried to contact the number one mercenary, Tao BaiBai of the Thousand Murders Pavilion to take Ye Wuchen’s life. After investigating, we learned that the person behind it is the Emperor, Long Yin.”

“Oh?” The woman behind the veil sounded astonished and immediately said, “It is not dtrange if he did. When will be the approximate time of arrival of Tao BaiBai?”

“At the latest would be five days.”

“No one can narrowly or luckily escape the hands of Tao BaiBai. If he is not killed by Tao BaiBai, then that means Tao BaiBai will be the one who dies, else he

will forever be fleeing from the unrelenting Tao BaiBai. Let's see if he can escape this calamity. If he can, then he be worth meeting him head on."

"However, rumor has it that he can paint a worm that can lure a bird to peck on it, and a flower that blooms after it has been painted. His <<Dream Remembering the Past>> caused thousands of people to drop their tears. Are these true?" The woman's voice slowly changed, as she worriedly asked.

"Yes. The rumors were not exaggerated." The young woman answered seriously.

"He's such a strange man, if I wasn't required to stay here, I would like to witness them all"

"....."

.....

For Ye Wuchen, no matter what kind of painting, he merely stretches a hand to grab it, easy as a pie. Teaching other people to paint is similar, as he had many methods to teach one with completely zero knowledge in painting and turn them into an expert within a short period of time. For someone like Ye Shuiyao who already had the innate skill and artistic attainment, it would be extremely easy.

But.....

"Teach me to play a flute." Ye Shuiyao took out a long, white, jade flute. The tune he played that one time had stirred up so many tears. Every time, before she went to sleep, the tune would play in her mind, reminding her of the lonely and painful face Ye Wuchen had while played the tune.

His face always wore a smiling expression but his expression this time could be classified as extremely wonderful. His gaze fixed onto her pretty and flirtatious pink lips, and caused Ye Shuiyao to feel a sense of doubt. After quite a while, Ye Wuchen mumbled, "Sister, flute playing is a very profound knowledge. Your brother isn't very good at teaching it, let's just paint."

"You're not willing?" Ye Shuiyao asked.

"No..... My teacher had said before, skills like playing a flute is suitable to teach my own wife, but to my own sister....."